

# OPEN ENGLISH BIBLE



## TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface and Frequently Asked Questions .....	5
Matthew .....	11
Mark .....	69
Luke .....	107
John .....	167
Acts .....	213
Romans .....	275
1 Corinthians .....	301
2 Corinthians .....	325
Galatians .....	341
Ephesians .....	351
Philippians .....	361
Colossians .....	367
1 Thessalonians .....	373
2 Thessalonians .....	379
1 Timothy .....	383
2 Timothy .....	391
Titus .....	397
Philemon .....	401
Hebrews .....	403

James .....	423
1 Peter .....	431
2 Peter .....	439
1 John .....	445
2 John .....	453
3 John .....	455
Jude .....	457
Revelation .....	459

## PREFACE AND FREQUENTLY ASKED QUESTIONS

### *What is this?*

This is a preview release of the Gospel According to Mark for the new English translation of the Bible, the “Open English Bible”.

### *Why another translation?*

The English language market is currently very well covered by translations for all seasons, everything from the Message, through the CEV, NRSV, AV, and so on through the acronym soup. The OEB aims at the levels of accuracy and natural language achieved by these bibles, but the purpose of the OEB is not to gift the world with a more accurate or ‘better’ translation per se. The existing commercial English translations are, for the large part, of a high standard of accuracy and are the result of much work by knowledgeable and well intended translators.

However, with the honourable exception of the World English Bible (WEB) - and of course the Authorised Version - all of these bibles are subject to copyright, and owned by a particular organisation or publisher. Without wishing to criticise these organisations, their translations naturally have limitations on what end users can do with them.

The OEB will have no restrictions on what its readers and users can do with it (for both good and bad). They may quote it, publish it in part or full, on their blogs, in their churches, remix it, reword it, correct its egregious translation mistakes or indeed add their own.

### *Isn't this dangerous?*

This generation have a greater ability to confirm the accuracy of their bible translations than any previous generation in history. The underlying Greek and Hebrew, lexicons, learned discussions and

## Preface and Frequently Asked Questions

flamewars are all just a click away - as are a dozen other translations. Attempting to use copyright law to create authority is an exercise doomed to failure, as are all attempts to enforce truths by the power of the state.

### *Why not just use the World English Bible?*

The World English Bible (WEB) is an impressive achievement, and of great importance. However its language, based as it is on the ASV, remains bound to the Tyndale tradition. As a free counterpart to the NRSV and ESV it is invaluable; however there is still a need for a free bible as a counterpart to the NEB/REB and TNIV/NIV translations. As well, the World English Bible is based upon the Byzantine Majority Text, and the OEB is based on the heavily Alexandrian focused text of Wescott & Hort.

### *What English language texts is the OEB based on?*

The New Testament of the OEB is being formed on the base of the "Twentieth Century New Testament", in particular the revised edition published in 1904. There is currently no decision on how to tackle the Old Testament.

### *Why the Twentieth Century New Testament?*

The TCNT was one of the earliest 20th century attempts at a translation in clear modern language aimed at the ordinary reader and based on a modern textual base (ie Westcott and Hort). Predating the mid-20th century translations such as the New English Bible and even Moffatt's groundbreaking attempt, it is out of copyright worldwide. The TCNT also has a particular resonance with the open source and free content communities of today - it was created by a loose collaboration of volunteers rather than a top-down hierarchy. A worthwhile article on the making of the TCNT can be found on

## Preface and Frequently Asked Questions

Google Books. Given the requirements of (a) modern language and (b) public domain status the TCNT was the best contender.

### *How will the Twentieth Century New Testament be edited?*

The language of the 20CNT will be edited:

- to reflect modern English usage (including the use of ‘they’ as a third person single pronoun) at a reading level corresponding roughly to the NEB/REB or NRSV
- to reflect modern scholarship, including on the translation of terms such as ‘the Jews’ in John and terms referring to sexual practices (see TNIV and Dr Ann Nyland’s version)

This editing will be moderate, aiming for a scholarly defensible mainstream translation usable within a religious community rather than a translation focused on a readership completely unfamiliar with the Bible or Christianity (as an example, the OEB will be comfortable with the words ‘Christ’ and ‘Messiah’ and will not replace them with ‘Anointed One’ or similar). A freely licensed translation for the audiences of the Better Life Bible or the CEV is a project for another day.

### *How do I know the OEB is accurate and unbiased?*

Although all translators have opinions on the truth and meaning of the ancient documents which form the Bible, the intent of this revision of the TCNT is not to push any particular theological line but to provide a freely usable translation of an Alexandrian text-type based critical text in modern English. The GitHub account for the OEB contains the original text of the Twentieth Century New Testament in USFM, (which can be checked against the pdf of the published edition on Archive.org); it also contains a list of all of the changes made to that text. As can be seen from the article on the making of the TCNT mentioned above, the TCNT itself was the

## Preface and Frequently Asked Questions

product of a wide range of translators of differing backgrounds and was not itself intended to push a particular theological point of view.

### *What is the underlying textual basis for the OEB?*

The TCNT was based on the Westcott & Hort critical text and the OEB will not change that - it will remain based on W&H and will not be conformed to the Majority Text or NA27. Since the NA27 is subject to a claim of copyright, W&H remains the best available (ie public domain) text.

### *What licence is the OEB under?*

The OEB will be available under a CC Attribution licence, allowing the maximum reuse. There will be a request that altered versions be distributed under a different name.

### *What variations will be available?*

The translation will be available in US and Commonwealth/UK spelling variations.

### *What formats will the OEB be available in?*

The OEB will be generated in as many formats as possible, including PDF, HTML etc and a version will be available for purchase from Lulu or similar print-on-demand provider.

### *Who is involved in this?*

At the moment, this is a single person project. I am a lawyer with strong technical skills, but without formal training in either translation or in Biblical languages. Accordingly, the OEB is not an exercise in translation so much as editing. I will make all changes transparently, and will endeavour to ensure that no new wording is added



that is not attested to in at least one modern, scholarly, mainstream translation.

*Where can I find more information?*

<http://openenglishbible.org>



## MATTHEW

## THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO MATTHEW

A genealogy of Jesus Christ, a descendant of David and Abraham. Abraham was the father of Isaac, Isaac of Jacob, Jacob of Judah and his brothers, Judah of Perez and Zerah, whose mother was Tamar, Perez of Hezron, Hezron of Ram, Ram of Amminadab, Amminadab of Nashon, Nashon of Salmon, Salmon of Boaz, whose mother was Rahab, Boaz of Obed, whose mother was Ruth, Obed of Jesse, Jesse of David the King. David was the father of Solomon, whose mother was Uriah's widow, Solomon of Rehoboam, Rehoboam of Abijah, Abijah of Asa, Asa of Jehoshaphat, Jehoshaphat of Jehoram, Jehoram of Uzziah, Uzziah of Jotham, Jotham of Ahaz, Ahaz of Hezekiah, Hezekiah of Manasseh, Manasseh of Ammon, Ammon of Josiah, Josiah of Jeconiah and his brothers, at the time of the Exile to Babylon. After the Exile to Babylon — Jeconiah was the father of Shealtiel, Shealtiel of Zerubbabel, Zerubbabel of Abiud, Abiud of Eliakim, Eliakim of Azor, Azor of Zadok, Zadok of Achim, Achim of Eliud, Eliud of Eleazar, Eleazar of Matthan, Matthan of Jacob, Jacob of Joseph, the husband of Mary, who was the mother of Jesus, who is called 'Christ'. So the whole number of generations from Abraham to David is fourteen; from David to the Exile to Babylon fourteen; and from the Exile to Babylon to the Christ fourteen.

THE BIRTH OF JESUS CHRIST TOOK PLACE AS FOLLOWS: 18

His mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, but, before the marriage took place, she found herself to be with child by the power of the Holy Spirit. Her husband, Joseph, was a religious man and, being unwilling to expose her to contempt, resolved to put an end to their betrothal privately. He had been dwelling upon this, when an angel of the Lord appeared to him in a dream. 20

"Joseph, son of David," the angel said, "do not be afraid to take Mary for your wife, for her child has been conceived by the power of the

## Matthew 2

- 21 Holy Spirit. She shall give birth to a son; and you shall give him the name Jesus, for it is he who shall save his people from their sins.”
- 22 All this happened in fulfillment of these words of the Lord in the Prophet, where he says —
- 23 ‘Behold! the virgin shall be with child and shall give birth to a son, and they will give him the name Immanuel’
- 24 — a word which means ‘God is with us.’ When Joseph awoke from
- 25 his sleep, he did as the angel of the Lord had directed him. He made Mary his wife, but did not live with her as her husband until after the birth of her son; and to this son he gave the name Jesus.
- 2 AFTER THE BIRTH OF JESUS AT BETHLEHEM IN Judea, in the reign of King Herod, some Astrologers from the East arrived in Jerusalem,
- 2 asking: “Where is the new-born King of the Jews? for we saw his star
- 3 in the east, and have come to do homage to him.” When King Herod heard of this, he was much troubled, and so, too, was all Jerusalem.
- 4 He called together all the Chief Priests and Teachers of the Law in the nation, and questioned them as to where the Christ was to be born.
- 5 “At Bethlehem in Judea,” was their answer; “for it is said in the Prophet —
- 6 ‘And you, Bethlehem in Judah’s land,  
are in no way least among the chief cities of Judah;  
for out of you will come a Chieftain —  
one who will shepherd my people Israel.’”
- 7 Then Herod secretly sent for the Astrologers, and ascertained
- 8 from them the date of the appearance of the star; and, sending them to Bethlehem, he said: “Go and make careful inquiries about the child, and, as soon as you have found him, bring me word, that
- 9 I, too, may go and do homage to him.” The Astrologers heard what the King had to say, and then continued their journey. The star which they had seen in the east led them on, until it reached, and
- 10 stood over, the place where the child was. At the sight of the star
- 11 they were filled with joy. Entering the house, they saw the child with his mother, Mary, and fell at his feet and did homage to him.

Then they unpacked their treasures, and offered to the child presents of gold, frankincense, and myrrh. But afterwards, having been warned in a dream not to go back to Herod, they returned to their own country by another road. 12

After they had left, an angel of the Lord appeared to Joseph in a dream, and said: 13

“Awake, take the child and his mother, and seek refuge in Egypt; and stay there until I bid you return, for Herod is about to search for the child, to put him to death.” Joseph awoke, and taking the child and his mother by night, went into Egypt, and there he stayed until Herod’s death; in fulfillment of these words of the Lord in the Prophet, where he says — 14 15

‘Out of Egypt I called my Son.’

When Herod found that he had been trifled with by the Astrologers, he was very angry. He sent and put to death all the boys in Bethlehem and the whole of that neighborhood, who were two years old or under, guided by the date which he had ascertained from the Astrologers. Then were fulfilled these words spoken in the Prophet Jeremiah, where he says — 16 17

‘A voice was heard in Ramah,  
weeping and much lamentation;  
Rachel, weeping for her children,  
refused all comfort because they were not.’ 18

But, on the death of Herod, an angel of the Lord appeared in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, and said: “Awake, take the child and his mother, and go into the Land of Israel, for those who sought to take the child’s life are dead.” He awoke, and taking the child and his mother, went into the Land of Israel. But, hearing that Archelaus had succeeded his father Herod as King of Judea, he was afraid to go back there; and having been warned in a dream, he went into the part of the country called Galilee. There he settled in the town of Nazareth, in fulfillment of these words in the Prophets — ‘He will be called a Nazarene.’ 19 20 21 22 23

## Matthew 3

3 ABOUT THAT TIME JOHN THE BAPTIST FIRST APPEARED, proclaim-  
2 ing in the Wilderness of Judea: "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven  
3 is at hand." This is he who was spoken of in the Prophet Isaiah,  
where he says —

‘The voice of one crying aloud in the Wilderness:

“Make ready the way of the Lord,  
make his paths straight.”’

4 John wore clothing made of camels’ hair, with a belt of leather  
5 round his waist, and his food was locusts and wild honey. At that  
time Jerusalem, and all Judea, as well as the whole district of the Jor-  
6 dan, went out to him and were baptized by him in the river Jordan,  
confessing their sins.

7 When, however, John saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees  
coming to receive his baptism, he said to them:

“You brood of vipers! Who has prompted you to seek refuge from  
8 the coming judgment? Let your life, then, prove your repentance;  
9 and do not think that you can say among yourselves ‘Abraham is our  
ancestor,’ for I tell you that out of these very stones God is able to  
10 raise descendants for Abraham! Already the axe is lying at the root  
of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear good fruit will be  
11 cut down and thrown into the fire. I, indeed, baptize you with water  
to teach repentance; but he who is coming after me is more powerful  
than I, and I am not fit even to carry his sandals. He will baptize you  
12 with the Holy Spirit and with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand,  
and he will clear his threshing-floor, and store his grain in the barn,  
but the chaff he will burn with inextinguishable fire.”

13 Then Jesus came from Galilee to the Jordan, to John, to be baptized  
14 by him. But John tried to prevent him.

“It is I,” he said, “who need to be baptized by you; why then do you  
come to me?”

15 “Let it be so for the present,” Jesus answered, “since it is fitting  
for us thus to satisfy every claim of religion.” Upon this, John con-  
sented.

16 After the baptism of Jesus, and just as he came up from the water,  
the heavens opened, and he saw the Spirit of God descending, like

a dove, and alighting upon him, and from the heavens there came a voice which said: "This is my son, the Beloved, in whom I delight." 17

THEN JESUS WAS LED UP INTO THE WILDERNESS by the Spirit to be tempted by the Devil. And, after he had fasted for forty days and forty nights, he became hungry. The Tempter came to him, and said: 4 2 3

"If you are God's Son, tell these stones to become loaves of bread."

But Jesus answered: "Scripture says — 4

'It is not on bread alone that a person is to live, but on every word that comes from the mouth of God.'"

Then the Devil took him to the Holy City, and, placing him on the parapet of the temple, said to him: "If you are God's Son, throw yourself down, for Scripture says — 5 6

'He will give his angels commands about you, and on their hands they will upbear you, lest ever you should strike your foot against a stone.'"

"Scripture also says," answered Jesus, 7

"You shall not tempt the Lord your God."

The third time, the Devil took Jesus to a very high mountain, and, showing him all the kingdoms of the world and their splendor, said to him: 8

"All these I will give you, if you will fall at my feet and do homage to me." Then Jesus said to him: "Begone, Satan! for Scripture says — 9 10

'You shall do homage to the Lord your God, and worship him only.'" Then the Devil left him alone, and angels came and ministered to him. 11

WHEN JESUS HEARD THAT JOHN HAD BEEN COMMITTED to prison, he retired to Galilee. Afterwards, leaving Nazareth, he went and settled at Capernaum, which is by the side of the Sea, within the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali; in fulfillment of these words in the Prophet Isaiah — 12 13 14

"The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, 15

## Matthew 5

- the land of the Road by the Sea, and beyond the Jordan,  
with Galilee of the Gentiles —
- 16 The people who were dwelling in darkness  
have seen a great Light,  
and, for those who were dwelling in the shadow-land of  
Death,  
a Light has risen!’
- 17 AT THAT TIME JESUS BEGAN TO PROCLAIM —  
“Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand.”
- 18 As Jesus was walking along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw  
two brothers — Simon, also known as Peter, and his brother Andrew  
— casting a net into the Sea; for they were fishermen.
- 19 “Come and follow me,” Jesus said, “and I will set you to fish for  
20 people.” The two men left their nets at once and followed him. Going  
further on, he saw two other men who were also brothers, James,  
Zebediah’s son, and his brother John, in their boat with their father,  
22 mending their nets. Jesus called them, and they at once left their  
boat and their father, and followed him.
- 23 Jesus went all through Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, pro-  
claiming the Good News of the Kingdom, and curing every kind of  
24 disease and every kind of sickness among the people; and his fame  
spread all through Syria. They brought to him all who were ill with  
any form of disease, or who were suffering pain — any who were  
either possessed by demons, or were lunatic, or paralyzed; and he  
25 cured them. He was followed by large crowds from Galilee, the dis-  
trict of the Ten Towns, Jerusalem, Judea, and from beyond the Jor-  
dan.
- 5 On seeing the crowds of People, Jesus went up the hill; and, when  
2 he had taken his seat, his disciples came up to him; and he began to  
teach them as follows:
- 3 “Blessed are the poor in spirit,  
for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.
- 4 Blessed are the mourners,  
for they shall be comforted.



Blessed are the gentle,	5
for they shall inherit the earth.	
Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness,	6
for they shall be satisfied.	
Blessed are the merciful,	7
for they shall find mercy.	
Blessed are the pure in heart,	8
for they shall see God.	
Blessed are the peacemakers,	9
for they shall be called Sons of God.	
Blessed are those who have been persecuted in the cause of	10
righteousness,	
for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.	
Blessed are you when people taunt you, and persecute you,	11
and say everything evil about you — untruly, and on my ac-	
count. Be glad and rejoice, because your reward in Heaven	12
will be great; for so they persecuted the Prophets who lived	
before you.	
It is you who are the Salt of the earth; but, if the salt should lose	13
its strength, what will you use to restore its saltiness? It is no longer	
good for anything, but is thrown away, and trampled underfoot. It	14
is you who are the Light of the world. A town that stands on a hill	
cannot be hidden. People do not light a lamp and put it under the	15
corn-measure, but on the lamp-stand, where it gives light to every	
one in the house. Let your light so shine before the eyes of others,	16
that, seeing your good actions, they may praise your Father who is	
in Heaven.	
Do not think that I have come to do away with the Law or the	17
Prophets; I have not come to do away with them, but to complete	
them. For I tell you, until the heavens and the earth disappear, not	18
even the smallest letter, nor one stroke of a letter, shall disappear	
from the Law until all is done. Whoever, therefore, breaks one of	19
these commandments, even the least of them, and teaches others to	
do so, will be the least-esteemed in the Kingdom of Heaven; but	
whoever keeps them, and teaches others to do so, will be esteemed	

## Matthew 5

- 20 great in the Kingdom of Heaven. Indeed I tell you that, unless your religion is above that of the Teachers of the Law, and Pharisees, you will never enter the Kingdom of Heaven.
- 21 You have heard that to our ancestors it was said — ‘You shall not commit murder,’ and ‘Whoever commits murder shall be liable to answer for it to the Court.’ I, however, say to you that any one who cherishes anger against his brother shall be liable to answer for it to the Court; and whoever pours contempt upon his brother shall be liable to answer for it to the High Council, while whoever calls down curses upon him shall be liable to answer for it in fiery Gehenna.
- 23 Therefore, when presenting your gift at the altar, if even there you remember that your brother has some grievance against you, leave your gift there, before the altar, go and be reconciled to your brother, first, then come and present your gift. Be ready to make friends with your opponent, even when you meet him on your way to the court; for fear that he should hand you over to the judge, and the judge to his officer, and you should be thrown into prison. I tell you, you will not come out until you have paid the last penny.
- 27 You have heard that it was said — ‘You shall not commit adultery.’ I, however, say to you that any one who looks at a woman with an impure intention has already committed adultery with her in his heart. If your right eye is a snare to you, take it out and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it thrown into Gehenna. And, if your right hand is a snare to you, cut it off and throw it away. It would be best for you to lose one part of your body, and not to have the whole of it go down to Gehenna.
- 31 It was also said — ‘Let any one who divorces his wife serve her with a notice of separation.’ I, however, say to you that any one who divorces his wife, except on the ground of her unchastity, leads to her committing adultery; while any one who marries her after her divorce is guilty of adultery. Again, you have heard that to our ancestors it was said — ‘You shall not break an oath, but you shall keep your oaths as a debt due to the Lord.’ I, however, say to you that you must not swear at all, either by Heaven, since that is God’s throne, or

by the earth, since that is his footstool, or by Jerusalem, since that is the city of the Great King. Nor should you swear by your head, since you cannot make a single hair either white or black. Let your words be simply 'Yes' or 'No'; anything beyond this comes from what is wrong.

You have heard that it was said — 'An eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth.' I, however, say to you that you must not resist wrong; but, if any one strikes you on the right cheek, turn the other to him also; and, when any one wants to go to law with you, to take your coat, let him have your cloak as well; and, if any one compels you to go one mile, go two miles with him. Give to him who asks of you; and, from him who wants to borrow from you, do not turn away.

You have heard that it was said — 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' I, however, say to you — Love your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you, that you may become Sons of your Father who is in Heaven; for he causes his sun to rise upon bad and good alike, and sends rain upon the righteous and upon the unrighteous. For, if you love only those who love you, what reward will you have? Even the tax-gatherers do this! And, if you show courtesy to your brothers only, what are you doing more than others? Even the Gentiles do this! You, then, must become perfect — as your heavenly Father is perfect.

Take care not to perform your religious duties in public in order to be seen by others; if you do, your Father who is in Heaven has no reward for you. Therefore, when you do acts of charity, do not have a trumpet blown in front of you, as hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the streets, that they may be praised by others. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when you do acts of charity, do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing, so that your charity may be secret; and your Father, who sees what is in secret, will recompense you.

And, when you pray, you are not to behave as hypocrites do. They like to pray standing in the Synagogues and at the corners of the streets, that they may be seen by others. There, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of you prays, let him go into his own room,

## Matthew 6

shut the door, and pray to his Father who dwells in secret; and his  
7 Father, who sees what is secret, will recompense him. When pray-  
ing, do not repeat the same words over and over again, as is done by  
the Gentiles, who think that by using many words they will obtain  
8 a hearing. Do not imitate them; for God, your Father, knows what  
9 you need before you ask him. You, therefore, should pray thus —

‘Our Father, who art in Heaven,  
may your name be held holy,  
10 your Kingdom come, your will be done —  
on earth, as in Heaven.

11 Give us to-day  
the bread that we shall need;  
12 and forgive us our wrong-doings,  
as we have forgiven those who have wronged us;  
13 and take us not into temptation,  
14 but deliver us from Evil.’ For, if you forgive others their  
15 offences, your heavenly Father will forgive you also; but,  
if you do not forgive others their offences, not even your  
Father will forgive your offences.

16 And, when you fast, do not put on gloomy looks, as hypocrites  
do who disfigure their faces that they may be seen by people to be  
17 fasting. That, I tell you, is their reward! But, when one of your fasts,  
18 let him anoint his head and wash his face, that he may not be seen  
by people to be fasting, but by his Father who dwells in secret; and  
his Father, who sees what is secret, will recompense him.

19 Do not store up treasures for yourselves on earth, where moth  
20 and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But store  
up treasures for yourselves in Heaven, where neither moth nor rust  
21 destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal. For where your  
22 treasure is, there will your heart be also. The lamp of the body is the  
23 eye. If your eye is unclouded, your whole body will be lit up; but,  
if your eye is diseased, your whole body will be darkened. And, if  
24 the inner light is darkness, how intense must that darkness be! No  
one can serve two masters, for either he will hate one and love the

other, or else he will attach himself to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money.

That is why I say to you, Do not be anxious about your life here — 25  
 what you can get to eat or drink; nor yet about your body — what  
 you can get to wear. Is not life more than food, and the body than its  
 clothing? Look at the wild birds — they neither sow, nor reap, nor 26  
 gather into barns; and yet your heavenly Father feeds them! Are not  
 you more precious than they? But which of you, by being anxious, 27  
 can prolong his life a single moment? And why be anxious about 28  
 clothing? Study the wild lilies, and how they grow. They neither  
 toil nor spin; yet I tell you that even Solomon in all his splendor was 29  
 not robed like one of these. If God so clothes even the grass of the 30  
 field, which is living to-day and to-morrow will be thrown into the  
 oven, will not he much more clothe you, O you of little faith? Do not 31  
 then ask anxiously 'What can we get to eat?' or 'What can we get  
 to drink?' or 'What can we get to wear?' All these are the things for 32  
 which the nations are seeking, and your heavenly Father knows that  
 you need them all. But first seek his Kingdom and the righteousness 33  
 that he requires, and then all these things shall be added for you.  
 Therefore do not be anxious about to-morrow, for to-morrow will 34  
 bring its own anxieties. Every day has trouble enough of its own.

Do not judge, that you may not be judged. For, just as you judge 27  
 others, you will yourselves be judged, and the measure that you  
 mete will be meted out to you. Why do you look at the straw in your 3  
 brother's eye, while you pay no attention at all to the beam in yours?  
 How will you say to your brother 'Let me take out the straw from 4  
 your eye,' when all the time there is a beam in your own? Hypocrite! 5  
 Take out the beam from your own eye first, and then you will see  
 clearly how to take out the straw from your brother's.

Do not give what is sacred to dogs; nor yet throw your pearls be- 6  
 fore pigs, lest they should trample them under their feet, and then  
 turn and attack you. Ask, and your prayer shall be granted; search, 7  
 and you shall find; knock, and the door shall be opened to you. For 8  
 he that asks receives, he that searches finds, and to him that knocks  
 the door shall be opened. Who among you, when his son asks him 9

## Matthew 7

10 for a loaf, will give him a stone, or when he asks for a fish, will give  
11 him a snake? If you, then, wicked though you are, know how to give  
good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father who  
is in Heaven give what is good to those that ask him!

12 Do to others whatever you would wish them to do to you; for that  
13 is the teaching of both the Law and the Prophets. Go in by the small  
gate. Broad and spacious is the road that leads to destruction, and  
14 those that go in by it are many; for small is the gate, and narrow the  
road, that leads to Life, and those that find it are few.

15 Beware of false Teachers — people who come to you in the guise  
16 of sheep, but at heart they are ravenous wolves. By the fruit of their  
lives you will know them. Do people gather grapes from thorn  
17 bushes, or figs from thistles? So, too, every sound tree bears good  
18 fruit, while a worthless tree bears bad fruit. A sound tree cannot  
19 produce bad fruit, nor can a worthless tree bear good fruit. Every  
tree that fails to bear good fruit is cut down and thrown into the  
20 fire. Hence it is by the fruit of their lives that you will know such  
21 people. Not every one who says to me 'Master! Master!' will enter  
the Kingdom of Heaven, but only he who does the will of my  
22 Father who is in Heaven. On 'That Day' many will say to me  
'Master, Master, was not it in your name that we taught, and in  
your name that we drove out demons, and in your name that we  
23 did many miracles?' And then I shall say to them plainly 'I never  
knew you. Go from my presence, you who live in sin.'

24 Everyone, therefore, that listens to this teaching of mine and acts  
upon it may be compared to a prudent person, who built his house  
25 upon the rock. The rain poured down, the rivers rose, the winds  
blew and beat upon that house, but it did not fall, for its foundations  
26 were upon the rock. Every one that listens to this teaching of mine  
and does not act upon it may be compared to a foolish person, who  
27 built his house on the sand. The rain poured down, the rivers rose,  
the winds blew and struck against that house, and it fell; and great  
was its downfall."

By the time that Jesus had finished speaking, the crowd was filled 28  
with amazement at his teaching. For he taught them like one who 29  
had authority, and not like their Teachers of the Law.

WHEN JESUS HAD COME DOWN FROM THE HILL, great crowds fol- 8  
lowed him. He saw a leper who came up, and bowed to the ground 2  
before him, and said: "Master, if only you are willing, you are able to  
make me clean." Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched him, saying 3  
as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." Instantly he was made  
clean from his leprosy; and then Jesus said to him: "Be careful not 4  
to say a word to any one, but go and show yourself to the Priest, and  
offer the gift directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." After Je- 5  
sus had entered Capernaum, a Captain in the Roman army came up  
to him, entreating his help. "Sir," he said, "my manservant is lying 6  
ill at my house with a stroke of paralysis, and is suffering terribly."  
"I will come and cure him," answered Jesus. "Sir," the Captain went 8  
on, "I am unworthy to receive you under my roof; but only speak,  
and my manservant will be cured. For I myself am a man under the 9  
orders of others, with soldiers under me; and, if I say to one of them  
'Go,' he goes, and to another 'Come,' he comes, and to my slave 'Do  
this,' he does it." Jesus was surprised to hear this, and said to those 10  
who were following him: "Never I tell you, in any Israelite have I met  
with such faith as this! Yes, and many will come in from East and 11  
West and take their places beside Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the  
Kingdom of Heaven; while the heirs to the Kingdom will be 'ban- 12  
ished into the darkness' outside; there, there will be weeping and  
grinding of teeth." Then Jesus said to the Captain: "Go now, and it 13  
shall be according to your faith." And the man was cured that very  
hour.

When Jesus went into Peter's house, he saw Peter's mother-in- 14  
law prostrated with fever. On his taking her hand, the fever left her, 15  
and she rose and began to wait upon him. In the evening the peo- 16  
ple brought to Jesus many who were possessed by demons; and he  
drove out the spirits with a word, and cured all who were ill, in 17

## Matthew 9

fulfillment of these words in the Prophet Isaiah — ‘He took our infirmities on himself, and bore the burden of our diseases.’

19 Seeing a crowd round him, Jesus gave orders to go across. A Teacher of the Law came up to him, and said: “Teacher, I will  
20 follow you wherever you go.” “Foxes have holes,” answered Jesus, “and wild birds their roosting-places, but the Son of Man has  
21 nowhere to lay his head.” “Master,” said another, who was a disciple, “let me first go and bury my father.” But Jesus answered:  
22 “Follow me, and leave the dead to bury their dead.” Then he got  
23 into the boat, followed by his disciples. Suddenly so great a storm came on upon the Sea, that the waves broke right over the boat.  
24 But Jesus was asleep; and the disciples came and roused him.  
25 “Master,” they cried, “save us; we are lost!” “Why are you so timid?” he said. “O you of little faith!” Then Jesus rose and  
26 rebuked the winds and the sea, and a great calm followed. The men were amazed, and exclaimed: “What kind of man is this, that  
27 even the winds and the sea obey him!”

28 On getting to the other side — the country of the Gadarenes — Jesus met two men who were possessed by demons, coming out of the tombs. They were so violent that no one was able to pass that  
29 way. Suddenly they shrieked out: “What do you want with us, Son of God? Have you come here to torment us before our time?” A long  
30 way off, there was a drove of many pigs, feeding; and the foul spirits began begging Jesus: “If you drive us out, send us into the drove of  
31 pigs.” “Go,” he said. The spirits came out, and entered the pigs; and the whole drove rushed down the steep slope into the Sea, and died  
32 in the water. At this the men who tended them ran away and went to the town, carrying the news of all that had occurred, and of what  
33 had happened to the possessed men. At the news the whole town went out to meet Jesus, and, when they saw him, they entreated him  
34 to go away from their neighborhood.

9 Afterwards Jesus got into a boat, and, crossing over, came to his  
2 own city. There some people brought to him a paralyzed man on a bed. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to the man: “Courage,  
3 Child! Your sins are forgiven.” Then some of the teachers of the



Law said to themselves: "This man is blaspheming!" Knowing 4  
 their thoughts, Jesus exclaimed: "Why do you cherish such  
 wicked thoughts? Which, I ask, is the easier? — to say 'Your sins 5  
 are forgiven'? or to say 'Get up, and walk about'? But, that you 6  
 may know that the Son of Man has power on earth to forgive sins"  
 — then he said to the paralyzed man — "Get up, take up your bed,  
 and return to your home." The man got up and went to his home. 7  
 When the crowd saw this, they were awe-struck, and praised God 8  
 for giving such power to human beings.

As Jesus went along, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting in the 9  
 tax-office, and said to him: "Follow me." Matthew got up and fol-  
 lowed him.

And, later on, when he was at table in the house, a number of 10  
 tax-gatherers and outcasts came in and took their places at table  
 with Jesus and his disciples. When the Pharisees saw this, they 11  
 said to his disciples: "Why does your Teacher eat in the company  
 of tax-gatherers and outcasts?" On hearing this, Jesus said: "It is 12  
 not those who are in health that need a doctor, but those who are  
 ill. Go and learn what this means — 'I desire mercy, and not 13  
 sacrifice'; for I did not come to call the religious, but the outcast."  
 Then John's disciples came to Jesus, and asked: "Why do we and 14  
 the Pharisees fast while your disciples do not?" Jesus answered: 15  
 "Can the bridegroom's friends mourn as long as the bridegroom is  
 with them? But the days will come, when the bridegroom will be  
 parted from them, and they will fast then. Nobody ever puts a 16  
 piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment; for such a patch tears  
 away from the garment, and a worse rent is made. Nor do people 17  
 put new wine into old wine-skins; for, if they do, the skins burst,  
 and the wine runs out, and the skins are lost; but they put new  
 wine into fresh skins, and so both are preserved."

While Jesus was saying this, a President of a Synagogue came up 18  
 and bowed to the ground before him. "My daughter," he said, "Has  
 just died; but come and place your hand on her, and she will be  
 restored to life." So Jesus rose and followed him, and his disciples 19  
 went also. But meanwhile a woman, who had been suffering from 20

hemorrhage for twelve years, came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. "If I only touch his cloak," she said to herself, "I shall get well." Turning and seeing her, Jesus said: "Courage, Daughter! your faith has delivered you." And the woman was delivered from her malady from that very hour. When Jesus reached the President's house, seeing the flute-players, and a number of people all in confusion, he said: "Go away, the little girl is not dead; she is asleep." They began to laugh at him; but, when the people had been sent out, Jesus went in, and took the little girl's hand, and she rose. The report of this spread through all that part of the country.

As Jesus was passing on from there, he was followed by two blind men, who kept calling out: "Take pity on us, Son of David!" When he had gone indoors, the blind men came up to him; and Jesus asked them: "Do you believe that I am able to do this?" "Yes, Master!" they answered. Upon that he touched their eyes, and said: "It shall be according to your faith." Then their eyes were opened. Jesus sternly cautioned them. "See that no one knows of it," he said. But the men went out, and spread the news about him through all that part of the country. Just as they were going out, some people brought up to Jesus a dumb man who was possessed by a demon; and, as soon as the demon had been driven out, the dumb man spoke. The people were astonished at this, and exclaimed: "Nothing like this has ever been seen in Israel!" But the Pharisees said: "He drives out the demons by the help of the chief of the demons."

Jesus went round all the towns and the villages, teaching in their Synagogues, proclaiming the Good News of the Kingdom, and curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness. But, when he saw the crowds, his heart was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and harassed, 'like sheep without a shepherd'; and he said to his disciples: "The harvest is abundant, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray to the Owner of the harvest to send laborers to gather in his harvest."

10 Calling his twelve Disciples to him, Jesus gave them authority over foul spirits, so that they could drive them out, as well as the power of curing every kind of disease and every kind of sickness.

The names of the twelve Apostles are these: First Simon, also known 2  
 as Peter, and his brother Andrew; James the son of Zebediah, and  
 his brother John; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew 3  
 the tax-gather; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; Simon 4  
 the Zealot, and Judas Iscariot — the Apostle who betrayed him.

These twelve Jesus sent out as his Messengers, after giving them 5  
 these instructions — “Do not go to the Gentiles, nor enter any  
 Samaritan town, but make your way rather to the lost sheep of 6  
 Israel. On your way proclaim that the Kingdom of Heaven is at 7  
 hand. Cure the sick, raise the dead, make the lepers clean, drive 8  
 out demons. You have received free of cost, give free of cost. Do not 9  
 provide yourselves with gold, or silver, or pence in your purses;  
 not even with a bag for the journey, or a change of clothes, or 10  
 sandals, or even a staff; for the worker is worth his food. Whatever 11  
 town or village you visit, find out who is worthy in that place, and  
 remain there till you leave. As you enter the house, greet it. Then, if 12  
 the house is worthy, let your blessing rest upon it, but, if it is  
 unworthy, let your blessing return upon yourselves. If no one 14  
 welcomes you, or listens to what you say, as you leave that house  
 or that town, shake off its dust from your feet. I tell you, the doom 15  
 of the land of Sodom and Gomorrah will be more bearable in the  
 ‘Day of Judgment’ than the doom of that town.

Remember, I am sending you out as my Messengers like sheep 16  
 among wolves. So be as wise as serpents, and as blameless as doves.  
 Be on your guard against others, for they will betray you to courts of 17  
 law, and scourge you in their Synagogues; and you will be brought 18  
 before governors and kings for my sake, that you may witness for  
 me before them and the nations. Whenever they betray you, do not 19  
 be anxious as to how you shall speak or what you shall say, for what  
 you shall say will be given you at the moment; for it will not be you 20  
 who speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks within you.  
 Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his child; and 21  
 children will turn against their parents, and cause them to be put to  
 death; and you will be hated by every one on account of my Name. 22  
 Yet the person that endures to the end shall be saved. But, when they 23

persecute you in one town, escape to the next; for, I tell you, you will not have come to the end of the towns of Israel before the Son of

24 Man comes. A scholar is not above his teacher, nor a servant above  
25 his master. It is enough for a scholar to be treated like his teacher,  
and a servant like his master. If the head of the house has been called  
26 Baal-zebul, how much more the members of his household! Do not,  
therefore, be afraid of them. There is nothing concealed which will  
not be revealed, nor anything hidden which will not become known.  
27 What I tell you in the dark, say again in the light; and what is whis-  
28 pered in your ear, proclaim upon the housetops. Do not be afraid  
of those who kill the body, but are unable to kill the soul; rather be  
afraid of him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Gehenna.  
29 Are not two sparrows sold for a half-penny? Yet not one of them will  
30 fall to the ground without your Father's knowledge. While as for  
31 you, the very hairs of your head are numbered. Do not, therefore, be  
32 afraid; you are of more value than many sparrows. Every one, there-  
fore, who shall publicly acknowledge me, I, too, will acknowledge  
33 before my Father who is in Heaven; but, if any one publicly disowns  
me, I, too, will disown him before my Father who is in Heaven.

34 Do not imagine that I have come to bring peace upon the earth.  
35 I have come to bring, not peace, but the sword. For I have come to  
set — 'a man against his father, and a daughter against her mother,  
36 and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. A person's ene-  
37 mies will be the members of his own household.' Anyone who loves  
father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who  
38 loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. The per-  
son who does not take his cross and follow in my steps is not worthy  
39 of me. He who has found his life will lose it, while he who, for my  
sake, has lost his life shall find it.

40 He who welcomes you is welcoming me; and he who welcomes  
41 me is welcoming him who sent me as his Messenger. He who wel-  
comes a Prophet, because he is a Prophet, shall receive a Prophet's  
reward; and he who welcomes a good person, because he is a good  
42 person, shall receive a good person's reward. And, if any one gives

but a cup of cold water to one of these lowly ones because he is a disciple, I tell you that he shall assuredly not lose his reward."

After Jesus had finished giving directions to his twelve Disciples, 11  
he left that place in order to teach and preach in their towns.

Now John had heard in prison what the Christ was doing, and he 2  
sent a message by his disciples, and asked — "Are you 'The Coming 3  
One,' or are we to look for someone else?" The answer of Jesus to 4  
the question was — "Go and report to John what you hear and see 5  
— the blind recover their sight and the lame walk, the lepers are 6  
made clean and the deaf hear, the dead, too, are raised to life, and  
the good news is told to the poor. Blessed is the person who finds 6  
no hindrance in me."

While John's disciples were going back, Jesus began to say to the 7  
crowds with reference to John: "What did you go out into the 8  
Wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did  
you go out to see? A man richly dressed? Why, those who wear 9  
rich things are to be found in the courts of kings! What, then, did  
you go for? To see a Prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a 10  
Prophet. This is the man of whom Scripture says — 'Behold, I am 11  
myself sending my Messenger before your face, and he shall  
prepare your way before you.' I tell you, no one born of a woman 12  
has yet appeared who is greater than John the Baptist; and yet the  
lowliest in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he. From the 13  
time of John the Baptist to this very hour, the Kingdom of Heaven  
has been taken by force, and people using force have been seizing 14  
it. For the teaching of all the Prophets and of the Law continued till  
the time of John; and — if you are ready to accept it — John is 15  
himself the Elijah who was destined to come. Let him who has ears  
hear. But to what shall I compare the present generation? It is like 16  
little children sitting in the market-places and calling out to their  
playmates — 'We have played the flute for you, but you have not 17  
danced; We have wailed, but you have not mourned.' For, when 18  
John came, neither eating nor drinking, people said 'He has a  
demon in him'; and now that the Son of Man has come, eating and 19  
drinking, they are saying 'Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a

friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts!’ And yet Wisdom is vindicated by her actions.”

20 Then Jesus began to reproach the towns in which most of his mir-  
21 acles had been done, because they had not repented: “Alas for you,  
Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida! For, if the miracles which were  
22 done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have re-  
pented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Yet, I tell you, the doom of  
Tyre and Sidon will be more bearable in the ‘Day of Judgment’ than  
23 yours. And you, Capernaum! Will you ‘exalt yourself to Heaven’?  
‘You shall go down to the Place of Death.’ For, if the miracles which  
have been done in you had been done in Sodom, it would have  
24 been standing to this day. Yet, I tell you, the doom of Sodom will be  
25 more bearable in the ‘Day of Judgment’ than yours.” At that same  
time Jesus uttered the words: “I thank you, Father, Lord of Heaven  
and earth, that, though you have hidden these things from the wise  
26 and learned, you have revealed them to the child-like! Yes, Father,  
27 I thank you that this has seemed good to you. Everything has been  
committed to me by my Father; nor does any one fully know the Son,  
except the Father, or fully know the Father, except the Son and those  
28 to whom the Son may choose to reveal him. Come to me, all you  
29 who toil and are burdened, and I will give you rest! Take my yoke  
upon you, and learn from me, for I am gentle and lowly-minded,  
30 and ‘you shall find rest for your souls’; for my yoke is easy, and my  
12 burden is light.”

About the same time Jesus walked through the corn-fields one Sab-  
bath. His disciples were hungry, and began to pick some ears of  
2 wheat and eat them. But, when the Pharisees saw this, they said:  
“Look! your disciples are doing what it is not allowable to do on  
3 a Sabbath!” “Have not you read,” replied Jesus, “what David did,  
4 when he and his companions were hungry — how he went into the  
House of God, and how they ate the consecrated bread, through it  
was not allowable for him or his companions to eat it, but only for  
5 the priests? And have not you read in the law that, on the Sabbath,  
the priest in the Temple break the Sabbath and yet are not guilty?

Here, however, I tell you, there is something greater than the Temple! Had you learned the meaning of the words — ‘I desire mercy, and not sacrifice,’ you would not have condemned those who are not guilty. For the Son of Man is lord of the Sabbath.”

Passing on, Jesus went into their Synagogue, and there he saw a man with a withered hand. Some people asked Jesus whether it was allowable to work a cure on the Sabbath — so that they might have a charge to bring against him. But Jesus said to them: “Which of you, if he had only one sheep, and that sheep fell into a pit on the Sabbath, would not lay hold of it and pull it out? How much more precious a person is than a sheep! Therefore it is allowable to do good on the Sabbath.” Then he said to the man. “Stretch out your hand.” The man stretched it out; and it had become as sound as the other. On coming out, the Pharisees plotted against Jesus, to put him to death.

Jesus, however, became aware of it, and went away from that place. A number of people followed him, and he cured them all; but he warned them not to make him known, in fulfillment of these words in the Prophet Isaiah — ‘Behold! the Servant of my Choice, My Beloved, in whom my heart delights! I will breathe my spirit upon him, and he shall announce a time of judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not contend, nor cry aloud, Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets; a bruised reed he will not break, and a smoldering wick he will not quench, Till he has brought the judgment to a victorious issue, and on his name shall the Gentiles rest their hopes.’”

Then some people brought to Jesus a possessed man, who was blind and dumb; and he cured him, so that the man who had been dumb both talked and saw. At this all the people were astounded. “Is it possible that this is the son of David?” they exclaimed. But the Pharisees heard of it and said: “He drives out demons only by the help of Baal-zebul the chief of the demons.” Jesus, however, was aware of what was passing in their minds, and said to them: “Any kingdom divided against itself becomes a desolation, and any town or household divided against itself will not last. So, if Satan drives Satan out, he must be divided against himself; and how, then, can

## Matthew 12

27 his kingdom last? And, if it is by Baal-zebub's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is it that your own sons drive them out?  
28 Therefore they shall themselves be your judges. But, if it is by the help of the Spirit of God that I drive out demons, then the Kingdom  
29 of God must already be upon you. How, again, can any one get into a strong man's house and carry off his goods, without first securing  
30 him? Not till then will he plunder his house. He who is not with me is against me, and he who does not help me to gather is scattering.  
31 Therefore, I tell you, people will be forgiven every sin and slander;  
32 but slander against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven. Whoever speaks against the Son of Man will be forgiven, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit will not be forgiven, either in the present age, or in the age to come.

33 You must assume either that both tree and fruit are good, or that both tree and fruit are worthless; since it is by its fruits that a tree  
34 is known. You brood of vipers! how can you, evil as you are, say  
35 anything good? For what fills the heart will rise to the lips. A good person, from his good stores, produces good things; while an evil  
36 person, from his evil stores, produces evil things. I tell you that for every careless thing that people say, they must answer on the 'Day  
37 of Judgment.' For it is by your words that you will be acquitted, and by your words that you will be condemned."

38 At this point, some Teachers of the Law and Pharisees interposed.  
39 "Teacher," they said, " we want to see some sign from you." "It is a wicked and unfaithful generation," answered Jesus, "that is asking for a sign, and no sign shall be given it except the sign of the Prophet  
40 Jonah. For, just as 'Jonah was inside the sea-monster three days and three nights,' so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights  
41 in the heart of the earth. At the Judgment, the men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation, and will condemn it, because they  
42 repented at Jonah's proclamation; and here is more than a Jonah! At the Judgment the Queen of the South will rise up with the present  
generation, and will condemn it, because she came from the very ends of the earth to listen to the wisdom of Solomon; and here is  
43 more than a Solomon! No sooner does a foul spirit leave a person,



than it passes through places where there is no water, in search of rest, and does not find it. Then it says 'I will go back to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccupied, and swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than the first. So, too, will it be with this wicked generation."

While he was still speaking to the crowds, his mother and brothers were standing outside, asking to speak to him. Someone told him this, and Jesus replied: "Who is my mother? and who are my brothers?" Then, stretching out his hands towards his disciples, he said: "Here are my mother and my brothers! For any one who does the will of my Father who is in Heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

That same day, when Jesus had left the house and was sitting by the Sea, such great crowds gathered round him, that he got into a boat, and sat in it, while all the people stood upon the beach. Then he told them many truths in parables. "The sower," he began, "went out to sow; and, as he was sowing, some seed fell along the path, and the birds came and ate it up. Some fell on rocky places, where it had not much soil, and, having no depth of soil, sprang up at once. As soon as the sun had risen, it was scorched, and, having no root, withered away. Some, again, fell into the brambles; but the brambles shot up and choked it. Some, however, fell on good soil, and yielded a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold. Let him who has ears hear."

Afterwards his disciples came to him, and said: "Why do you speak to them in parables?" "To you," answered Jesus, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the Kingdom of Heaven has been imparted, but not to those. For, to all who have, more will be given, and they shall have abundance; but, from all who have nothing, even what they have will be taken away. That is why I speak to them in parables, because, though they have eyes, they do not see, and though they have ears, they do not hear or understand. In them is being fulfilled that prophecy of Isaiah which says — 'You will hear

## Matthew 13

with your ears without ever understanding, And, though you have  
15 eyes, you will see without ever perceiving, for the mind of this nation has grown dense, and their ears are dull of hearing, Their eyes also have they closed; Lest some day they should perceive with their eyes, and with their ears they should hear, and in their mind they  
16 should understand, and should turn — and I should heal them.' But  
17 blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear; for I tell you that many Prophets and good people have longed for the sight of the things which you are seeing, yet never saw them, and to hear the things which you are hearing, yet never heard them.

18 Listen, then, yourselves to the parable of the Sower. When any one hears the Message of the Kingdom without understanding it, the Evil One comes and snatches away what has been sown in his mind. This is the person meant by the seed which was sown along  
20 the path. By the seed which was sown on rocky places is meant the person who hears the Message, and at once accepts it joyfully; but, as he has no root, he stands for only a short time; and, when trouble or persecution arises on account of the Message, he falls away at once.  
22 By the seed which was sown among the brambles is meant the person who hears the Message, but the cares of life and the glamour of wealth completely choke the Message, so that it gives no return. But  
23 by the seed which was sown on the good ground is meant the person who hears the Message and understands it, and really yields a return, sometimes one hundred, sometimes sixty, sometimes thirty fold."

24 Another parable which Jesus told them was this — "The Kingdom of Heaven is compared to a person who sowed good seed in his field.  
25 But, while every one was asleep, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and then went away. So, when the blades of corn  
26 shot up, and came into ear, the tares made their appearance also. On this the owner's servants came to him, and said 'Was not it good seed that you sowed in your field? Where, then, do the tares in it  
28 come from?' 'An enemy has done this,' was his answer. 'Do you wish us, then,' they asked, 'to go and gather them together?' 'No,' said he,  
29 'for fear that, while you are gathering the tares, you should root up

the wheat as well. Let both grow side by side till harvest; and then I shall say to the reapers, Gather the tares together first, and tie them in bundles for burning; but bring all the wheat into my barn.”

Another parable which he told them was this — “The Kingdom of Heaven is like a mustard-seed, which a person took and sowed in his field. This seed is smaller than all other seeds, but, when it has grown up, it is larger than the herbs and becomes a tree, so that ‘the wild birds come and roost in its branches.’”

This was another parable which Jesus related — “The Kingdom of Heaven is like some yeast which a woman took and covered up in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen.” Of all this Jesus spoke to the crowd in parables; indeed to them he used never to speak at all except in parables, in fulfillment of these words in the Prophet — ‘I will speak to them in parables; I will utter things kept secret since the foundation of the world.’

Then Jesus left the crowd, and went into the house. Presently his disciples came to him, and said: “Explain to us the parable of the tares in the field.” He answered: “The sower of the good seed is the Son of Man. The field is the world. By the good seed is meant the People of the Kingdom. The tares are the wicked, and the enemy who sowed them is the Devil. The harvest-time is the close of the age, and the reapers are angels. And, just as the tares are gathered and burnt, so it will be at the close of the age. The Son of Man will send his angels, and they will gather from his kingdom all that hinders and those who live in sin, and ‘will throw them into the fiery furnace,’ where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine, like the sun, in the Kingdom of their Father. Let him who has ears hear.

The Kingdom of Heaven is like a treasure hidden in a field, which a person found and hid again, and then, in his delight, went and sold everything that he had, and bought that field.

Again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a merchant in search of choice pearls. Finding one of great value, he went and sold everything that he had, and bought it. Or again, the Kingdom of Heaven is like a net which was cast into the sea, and caught fish of all kinds.

48 When it was full, they hauled it up on the beach, and sat down and  
sorted the good fish into baskets, but threw the worthless ones away.  
49 So will it be at the close of the age. The angels will go out and sep-  
50 arate the wicked from the righteous, and 'will throw them into the  
fiery furnace,' where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.

51 Have you understood all this?" Jesus asked. "Yes," they answered.  
52 Then he added: "So every Teacher of the Law, who has received in-  
struction about the Kingdom of Heaven, is like a householder who  
produces from his stores things both new and old."

53 When Jesus had finished these parables, he withdrew from that  
54 place. Going to his own part of the country, he taught the people in  
their Synagogue in such a manner that they were deeply impressed.  
55 "Where did he get this wisdom?" they said, "and the miracles? Is  
not he the carpenter's son? Is not his mother called Mary, and his  
56 brothers James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters,  
too — are not they all living among us? Where, then did he get all  
57 this?" These things proved a hindrance to their believing in him;  
whereupon Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honour, except in  
58 his own country and in his own house." He did not work many mir-  
acles there, because of their want of faith.

14 At that time Prince Herod heard of the fame of Jesus, and said  
to his attendants: " This must be John the Baptist; he must be risen  
from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active  
3 in him." For Herod had arrested John, put him in chains, and shut  
him up in prison, to please Herodias, the wife of Herod's brother  
4 Philip. For John had said to him 'You have no right to be living with  
5 her.' Yet, though Herod wanted to put him to death, he was afraid  
6 of the people, because they looked on John as a Prophet. But, when  
Herod's birthday came, the daughter of Herodias danced before his  
7 guests, and so pleased Herod, that he promised with an oath to give  
8 her whatever she asked. Prompted by her mother, the girl said 'Give  
9 me here, on a dish, the head of John the Baptist.' The king was dis-  
tressed at this; yet, on account of his oath and of the guests at his  
10 table, he ordered it to be given her. He sent and beheaded John in  
11 the prison; and his head was brought on a dish and given to the girl,

and she took it to her mother. Then John's disciples came, and took 12  
the body away, and buried it; and went and told Jesus.

When Jesus heard of it, he retired privately in a boat to a lonely 13  
spot. The people, however, heard of his going, and followed him in  
crowds from the towns on foot. On getting out of the boat, Jesus 14  
saw a great crowd, and his heart was moved at the sight of them;  
and he cured all the sick among them. In the evening the disciples 15  
came up to him, and said: "This is a lonely spot, and the day is now  
far advanced; send the crowds away, that they may go to the vil-  
lages, and buy themselves food." But Jesus said: "They need not go 16  
away, it is for you to give them something to eat." "We have nothing 17  
here," they said, "except five loaves and two fishes." "Bring them 18  
here to me," was his reply. Jesus ordered the people to take their 19  
seats on the grass; and, taking the five loaves and the two fishes,  
he looked up to Heaven, and said the blessing, and, after he had  
broken the loaves, gave them to his disciples; and they gave them  
to the crowds. Every one had sufficient to eat, and they picked up 20  
enough of the broken pieces that were left to fill twelve baskets. The 21  
men who ate were about five thousand in number, without count-  
ing women and children. Immediately afterwards Jesus made the 22  
disciples get into a boat and cross over in advance of him, while he  
dismissed the crowds. After dismissing the crowds, he went up the 23  
hill by himself to pray; and, when evening fell, he was there alone.  
The boat was by this time some miles from shore, laboring in the 24  
waves, for the wind was against her. Three hours after midnight, 25  
however, Jesus came towards the disciples, walking on the water.  
But, when they saw him walking on the water, they were terrified. 26  
"It is a ghost," they exclaimed, and cried out for fear. But Jesus at 27  
once spoke to them. "Courage!" he said, "It is I; do not be afraid!"  
"Master," Peter exclaimed, "if it is you, tell me to come to you on the 28  
water." Jesus said: "Come." So Peter got down from the boat, and 29  
walked on the water, and went towards Jesus; but, when he felt the 30  
wind, he was frightened, and, beginning to sink, cried out: "Master!  
Save me!" Instantly Jesus stretched out his hand, and caught hold 31  
of him. "O you of little faith!" he said, "Why did you falter?" When 32

33 they had got into the boat, the wind dropped. But the men in the boat threw themselves on their faces before him, and said: "You are indeed God's Son."

34 When they had crossed over, they landed at Gennesaret. But the people of that place, recognizing Jesus, sent out to the whole country round, and brought to him all who were ill, begging him merely to let them touch the tassel of his cloak; and all who touched were made perfectly well.

15 Then some Pharisees and Teachers of the Law came to Jesus, and said: "How is it that your disciples break the traditions of our ancestors? For they do not wash their hands when they eat food." His reply was: "How is it that you on your side break God's commandments out of respect for your own traditions? For God said — 'Honor your father and mother,' and 'Let him who reviles his father or mother suffer death,' but you say 'Whenever any one says to his father or mother "Whatever of mine might have been of service to you is 'Given to God,'" he is in no way bound to honor his father.' In this way you have nullified the words of God on account of your traditions. Hypocrites! It was well said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you — 'This is a people that honor me with their lips, While their hearts are far removed from me; but vainly do they worship me, For they teach but human precepts.'" Then Jesus called the people to him, and said: "Listen, and mark my words. It is not what enters a person's mouth that 'defiles' him, but what comes out from his mouth — that does defile him!" On this his disciples came up to him, and said: "Do you know that the Pharisees were shocked on hearing what you said?" "Every plant," Jesus replied, "that my heavenly Father has not planted will be rooted up. Let them be; they are but blind guides; and, if one blind person guides another, both of them will fall into a ditch." Upon this, Peter said to Jesus: "Explain this saying to us." "What, do even you understand nothing yet?" Jesus exclaimed. "Do not you see that whatever goes into the mouth passes into the stomach, and is afterwards expelled? But the things that come out from the mouth proceed from the heart, and it is these that defile a person; for out of the heart proceed evil thoughts —

murder, adultery, unchastity, theft, perjury, slander. These are the things that defile a person; but eating with unwashed hands does not defile a person." 20

On going away from that place, Jesus retired to the country round Tyre and Sidon. There, a Canaanite woman of that district came out and began calling to Jesus: "Take pity on me, Master, Son of David; my daughter is grievously possessed by a demon." But Jesus did not answer her a word; and his disciples came up and begged him to send her away. "She keeps calling out after us," they said. "I was not sent," replied Jesus, "to any one except the lost sheep of Israel." But the woman came, and, bowing to the ground before him, said: "Master, help me." "It is not fair," replied Jesus, "to take the children's food and throw it to dogs." "Yes, Master," she said, "for even dogs do feed on the scraps that fall from their owners' table." "Your faith is great," was his reply to the woman; "it shall be as you wish!" And her daughter was cured that very hour. 21 22 23 24 25 26 27 28

On leaving that place, Jesus went to the shore of the Sea of Galilee; and then went up the hill, and sat down., you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!' it would be done. Great crowds of people came to him, bringing with them those who were lame, crippled, blind, or dumb, and many others. They put them down at his feet, and he cured them; and the crowds were astonished, when they saw the dumb talking, the cripples made sound, the lame walking about, and the blind with their sight restored; and they praised the God of Israel. Afterwards Jesus called his disciples to him, and said: "My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; and I am unwilling to send them away hungry, for fear that they should break down on the way." "Where can we," his disciples asked, "in a lonely place find enough bread for such a crowd as this?" "How many loaves have you?" said Jesus. "Seven," they answered, "and a few small fish." Telling the crowd to sit down on the ground, Jesus took the seven loaves and the fish, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to the disciples; and 29 30 31 32 33 34 35 36

37 the disciples gave them to the crowds. Every one had sufficient to eat, and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces left.  
38 The men who ate were four thousand in number without counting  
39 women and children. Then, after dismissing the crowds, Jesus got into the boat, and went to the neighborhood of Magadan.

16 Here the Pharisees and Sadducees came up, and, to test Jesus,  
2 requested him to show them some sign from the heavens. But Jesus answered: "In the evening you say 'It will be fine weather, for the  
3 sky is as red as fire.' But in the morning you say 'To-day it will be stormy, for the sky is as red as fire and threatening.' You learn to  
4 read the sky; yet you are unable to read the signs of the times! A wicked and unfaithful generation is asking for a sign, but no sign shall be given it except the sign of Jonah." So he left them and went away.

5 Now the disciples had crossed to the opposite shore, and had forgotten to take any bread. Presently Jesus said to them: "Take care and be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees." But the disciples began talking among themselves about  
8 their having brought no bread. On noticing this, Jesus said: "Why are you talking among yourselves about your being short of bread,  
9 O you of little faith? Do not you yet see, nor remember the five loaves for the five thousand, and how many baskets you took away? Nor  
10 yet the seven loaves for the four thousand, and how many basketfuls you took away? How is it that you do not see that I was not speaking about bread? Be on your guard against the leaven of the Pharisees  
12 and Sadducees." Then they understood that he had told them to be on their guard, not against the leaven of bread, but against the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

13 On coming into the neighborhood of Caesarea Philippi, Jesus asked his disciples this question — "Who do people say that the  
14 Son of Man is?" "Some say John the Baptist," they answered, "Others, however, say that he is Elijah, while others again say  
15 Jeremiah, or one of the Prophets." "But you," he said, "who do you say that I am?" To this Simon Peter answered: "You are the Christ,  
16 the Son of the Living God." "Blessed are you, Simon, Son of  
17



Jonah," Jesus replied. "For no human being has revealed this to you, but my Father who is in Heaven. Yes, and I say to you, Your name is 'Peter — a Rock, and on this rock I will build my Church, and the Powers of the Place of Death shall not prevail over it. I will give you the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven. Whatever you forbid on earth will be held in Heaven to be forbidden, and whatever you allow on earth will be held in Heaven to be allowed." Then he charged his disciples not to tell any one that he was the Christ.

At that time Jesus Christ began to explain to his disciples that he must go to Jerusalem, and undergo much suffering at the hands of the Councillors, and Chief Priests, and Teachers of the Law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. But Peter took Jesus aside, and began to rebuke him. "Master," he said, "please God that shall never be your fate!" Jesus, however, turning to Peter, said: "Out of my way, Satan! You are a hindrance to me; for you look at things, not as God does, but as person does." Then Jesus said to his disciples: "If anyone wishes to walk in my steps, let him renounce self, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake, loses his life shall find it. What good will it do a person to gain the whole world, if he forfeits his life? or what will a person give that is of equal value with his life? For the Son of Man is to come in his Father's Glory, with his angels, and then he 'will give to everyone what his actions deserve.' I tell you, some of those who are standing here will not know death till they have seen the Son of Man coming into his Kingdom."

Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, and the brothers James and John, and led them up a high mountain alone. There his appearance was transformed before their eyes; his face shown like the sun, and his clothes became as white as the light. All at once Moses and Elijah appeared to them, talking with Jesus. "Master," exclaimed Peter, interposing, "it is good to be here; if you wish, I will make three tents here, one for you, one for Moses, and one for Elijah." While he was still speaking, a bright cloud enveloped them, and there was a voice from the cloud that said — "This is my Son, the Beloved, in whom I delight; him you must hear." The disciples, on hearing this,

## Matthew 17

7 fell on their faces, greatly afraid. But Jesus came and touched them,  
8 saying as he did so: "Rise up, and do not be afraid." When they  
9 raised their eyes, they saw no one but Jesus himself alone. As they  
were going down the mountain side, Jesus gave them this warning  
— "Do not speak of this vision to any one, until the Son of Man  
10 has risen from the dead." "How is it," his disciples asked, "that our  
11 Teachers of the Law say that Elijah has to come first?" "Elijah indeed  
12 does come," Jesus replied, "and will restore everything; and I tell  
you that Elijah has already come, and people have not recognized  
him, but have treated him just as they pleased. In the same way, too,  
the Son of Man is destined to undergo suffering at people's hands."  
13 Then the disciples understood that it was of John the Baptist that he  
had spoken to them.

14 When they came to the crowd, a man came up to Jesus, and, kneel-  
15 ing down before him, said: "Master, take pity on my son, for he is  
epileptic and suffers terribly; indeed, he often falls into the fire and  
16 into the water; I brought him to your disciples, but they could not  
17 cure him." "O faithless and perverse generation!" Jesus exclaimed,  
"how long must I be among you? how long must I have patience  
18 with you? Bring the boy here to me." Then Jesus rebuked the demon,  
and it came out of the boy; and he was cured from that very hour.  
19 Afterwards the disciples came up to Jesus, and asked him privately:  
20 "Why was it that we could not drive it out?" "Because you have so  
little faith," he answered; "for, I tell you, if your faith were only like a  
mustard-seed, you could say to this mountain 'Move from this place  
to that!' and it would be moved; and nothing would be impossible  
to you."

22 While Jesus and his disciples were together in Galilee, he said to  
them: "The Son of Man is destined to be betrayed into human hands,  
23 and they will put him to death, but on the third day he will rise."  
The disciples were greatly distressed.

24 After they had reached Capernaum, the collectors of the Tem-  
ple-rate came up to Peter, and said: "Does not your Master pay the  
25 Temple-rate?" "Yes," answered Peter. But, on going into the house,  
before he could speak, Jesus said: "What do you think, Simon? From

whom do earthly kings take taxes or tribute? From their sons, or from others?" "From others," answered Peter. "Well then," continued Jesus, "their sons go free. Still, that we may not shock them, go and throw a line into the Sea; take the first fish that rises, open its mouth, and you will find in it a piece of money. Take that, and give it to the collectors for both of us."

On the same occasion the disciples came to Jesus, and asked him: "Who is really the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven?" Jesus called a little child to him, and placed it in the middle of them, and then said: "I tell you, unless you change and become like little children, you will not enter the Kingdom of Heaven at all. Therefore, any one who will humble himself like this child — that person shall be the greatest in the Kingdom of Heaven. And any one who, for the sake of my Name, welcomes even one little child like this, is welcoming me. But, if any one puts a snare in the way of one of these lowly ones who believe in me, it would be best for him to be sunk in the depths of the sea with a great millstone hung round his neck. Alas for the world because of such snares! There cannot but be snares; yet alas for the person who is answerable for the snare!"

If your hand or your foot is a snare to you, cut it off, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the Life maimed or lame, than to have both hands, or both feet, and be thrown into the aeonian fire. If your eye is a snare to you, take it out, and throw it away. It would be better for you to enter the Life with only one eye, than to have both eyes and be thrown into the fiery Pit. Beware of despising one of these lowly ones, for in Heaven, I tell you, their angels always see the face of my Father who is in Heaven.

What think you? If a person owns a hundred sheep, and one of them strays, will he not leave the ninety-nine on the hills, and go and search for the one that is straying? And, if he succeeds in finding it, I tell you that he rejoices more over that one sheep than over the ninety-nine which did not stray. So, too, it is the will of my Father who is in Heaven that not one of these lowly ones should be lost.

If your Brother does wrong, go to him and convince him of his fault when you and he are alone. If he listens to you, you have won

## Matthew 18

16 your Brother. But, if he does not listen to you, take with you one or two others, so that 'on the evidence of two or three witnesses, every word may be put beyond dispute.' If he refuses to listen to them, speak to the Church; and, if he also refuses to listen to the Church, treat him as you would a Gentile or a tax-gatherer.

18 I tell you, all that you forbid on earth will be held in Heaven to be forbidden, and all that you allow on earth will be held in Heaven to be allowed. Again, I tell you that, if but two of you on earth agree as to what they shall pray for, whatever it be, it will be granted them by my Father who is in Heaven. For where two or three have come together in my Name, I am present with them."

21 Then Peter came up, and said to Jesus: "Master, how often am I to forgive my Brother when he wrongs me? As many as seven times?" But Jesus answered: "Not seven times, but 'seventy times seven.' Therefore the Kingdom of Heaven may be compared to a king who wished to settle accounts with his servants. When he had begun to do so, one of them was brought to him who owed him six million pounds; and, as he could not pay, his master ordered him to be sold towards the payment of the debt, together with his wife, and his children, and everything that he had. Thereupon the servant threw himself down on the ground before him and said 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you all.' The master was moved with compassion; and he let him go, and forgave him the debt. But, on going out, that same servant came upon one of his fellow-servants who owed him ten pounds. Seizing him by the throat, he said 'Pay what you owe me.' Thereupon his fellow-servant threw himself on the ground and begged for mercy. 'Have patience with me,' he said, 'and I will pay you.' But the other would not, but went and put him in prison till he should pay his debt. When his fellow-servants saw what had happened, they were greatly distressed, and went to their master and laid the whole matter before him. Upon that the master sent for the servant, and said to him 'You wicked servant! When you begged me for mercy, I forgave you the whole of that debt. Ought not you, also, to have shown mercy to your fellow-servant, just as I showed mercy to you?' Then his master, in anger, handed him over

to the jailers, until he should pay the whole of his debt. So, also, will 35  
my heavenly Father do to you, unless each one of you forgives his  
Brother from his heart."

At the conclusion of this teaching, Jesus withdrew from Galilee, 19  
and went into that district of Judea which is on the other side of  
the Jordan. Great crowds followed him, and he cured them there. 2  
Presently some Pharisees came up to him, and, to test him, said: 3  
"Has a man the right to divorce his wife for every cause?" "Have 4  
not you read," replied Jesus, "that at the beginning the Creator  
'made them male and female,' and said — 'For this reason a man 5  
shall leave his father and mother, and be united to his wife, and the  
man and his wife shall become one'? So that they are no longer 6  
two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked together people  
must not separate." "Why, then," they said, "did Moses direct that 7  
a man should 'serve his wife with a notice of separation and  
divorce her'?" "Moses, owing to the hardness of your hearts," 8  
answered Jesus, "permitted you to divorce your wives, but that  
was not so at the beginning. But I tell you that any one who 9  
divorces his wife, except on the ground of her unchastity, and  
marries another woman, is guilty of adultery." "If that," said the 10  
disciples, "is the position of a man with regard to his wife, it is  
better not to marry." "It is not every one," replied Jesus, "who can 11  
accept this teaching, but only those who have been enabled to do  
so. Some men, it is true, have from birth been disabled for 12  
marriage, while others have been disabled by their fellow men,  
and others again have disabled themselves for the sake of the  
Kingdom of Heaven. Let him accept it who can."

Then some little children were brought to Jesus, for him to place 13  
his hands on them, and pray; but the disciples found fault with those  
who had brought them. Jesus, however, said: "Let the little children 14  
come to me, and do not hinder them, for it is to the childlike that the  
Kingdom of Heaven belongs." So he placed his hands on them, and 15  
then went on his way.

16 A man came up to Jesus, and said: "Teacher, what good thing  
17 must I do to obtain eternal life?" "Why ask me about goodness?" answered Jesus. "There is but One who is good. If you want to enter the  
18 Life, keep the commandments." "What commandments?" asked the man. "These," answered Jesus: — "'You shall not kill. You shall not commit adultery. You shall not steal. You shall not say what is false about others. Honor your father and your mother.' And 'You shall love thy neighbor as you love yourself.'" "I have observed all these,"  
21 said the young man. "What is still wanting in me?" "If you wish to be perfect," answered Jesus, "go and sell your property, and give to the poor, and you shall have wealth in Heaven; then come and follow me." On hearing these words, the young man went away distressed,  
23 for he had great possessions. At this, Jesus said to his disciples: "I tell you that a rich man will find it hard to enter the Kingdom of Heaven! I say again, it is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven!" On hearing this, the disciples exclaimed in great astonishment: "Who then can possibly be saved?" But Jesus looked at them, and said: "With people this is impossible, but with God everything is possible." Then Peter turned and said to Jesus: "But we — we left everything, and followed you; what, then, shall we have?" "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that at the New Creation, 'when the Son of Man takes his seat on his throne of glory,' you who followed me shall be seated upon  
29 twelve thrones, as judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. Every one who has left houses, or brothers, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or land, on account of my Name, will receive many times as much, and will 'gain eternal life.' But many who are first now will  
20 then be last, and those who are last will be first. For the Kingdom of Heaven is like an employer who went out in the early morning to hire laborers for his vineyards. He agreed with the laborers to pay them two shillings a day, and sent them into his vineyard. On going out again, about nine o'clock, he saw some others standing in the market-place, doing nothing. 'You also may go into my vineyard,' he said, 'and I will pay you what is fair.' So they went. Going out again about mid-day and about three o'clock, he did as before.

When he went out about five, he found some others standing there, 6  
 and said to them 'Why have you been standing here all day long,  
 doing nothing?' 'Because no one has hired us,' they answered. 'You 7  
 also may go into my vineyard,' he said. In the evening the owner 8  
 of the vineyard said to his steward 'Call the laborers, and pay them  
 their wages, beginning with the last, and ending with the first. Now 9  
 when those who had been hired about five o'clock went up, they re-  
 ceived two shillings each. So, when the first went up, they thought 10  
 that they would receive more, but they also received two shillings  
 each; on which they began to grumble at their employer. 'These last,' 12  
 they said, 'have done only one hour's work, and yet you have put  
 them on the same footing with us, who have borne the brunt of the  
 day's work, and the heat.' 'My friend,' was his reply to one of them, 13  
 'I am not treating you unfairly. Did not you agree with me for two  
 shillings? Take what belongs to you, and go. I choose to give to this 14  
 last man the same as to you. Have not I the right to do as I choose 15  
 with what is mine? Are you envious because I am liberal?' So those 16  
 who are last will be first, and the first last."

When Jesus was on the point of going up to Jerusalem, he gather- 17  
 ed the twelve disciples round him by themselves, and said to them  
 as they were on their way: "Listen! We are going up to Jerusalem; 18  
 and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the Chief Priests and  
 Teachers of the Law, and they will condemn him to death, and give 19  
 him up to the Gentiles for them to mock, and to scourge, and to cru-  
 cify; and on the third day he will rise."

Then the mother of Zebediah's sons came to him with her sons, 20  
 bowing to the ground, and begging a favor. "What is it that you 21  
 want?" he asked. "I want you to say," she replied, "that in your King-  
 dom these two sons of mine may sit, one on your right, and the other  
 on your left." "You do not know what you are asking," was Jesus' 22  
 answer. "Can you drink the cup that I am to drink?" "Yes," they ex-  
 claimed, "we can." "You shall indeed drink my cup," he said, "but as 23  
 to a seat at my right and at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is  
 for those for whom it has been prepared by my Father." On hearing 24  
 of this, the ten others were very indignant about the two brothers.

25 Jesus, however, called the ten to him, and said: "The rulers of the  
Gentiles lord it over them as you know, and their high officials op-  
26 press them. Among you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become  
great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to take  
28 the first place among you, must be your slave; just as the Son of Man  
came, not to be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom  
for many."

29 As they were going out of Jericho, a great crowd followed him.  
30 Two blind men who were sitting by the road-side, hearing that Jesus  
was passing, called out: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!"  
31 The crowd told them to be quiet; but the men only called out the  
32 louder: "Take pity on us, Master, Son of David!" Then Jesus stopped  
and called them. "What do you want me to do for you?" he said.  
33 "Master," they replied, "we want our eyes to be opened." So Jesus,  
moved with compassion, touched their eyes, and immediately they  
recovered their sight, and followed him.

21 When they had almost reached Jerusalem, having come as far as  
2 Bethphage, on the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two disciples. "Go  
to the village facing you," he said, "and you will immediately find  
an ass tethered, with a foal by her side; untie her, and lead her here  
3 for me. And, if any one says anything to you, you are to say this  
4 — 'The Master wants them'; and he will send them at once." This  
5 happened in fulfillment of these words in the Prophet — 'Say to the  
daughter of Zion — "Behold, your King is coming to you, Gentle,  
and riding on an ass, and on the foal of a beast of burden.'"

6 So the disciples went and did as Jesus had directed them. They  
led the ass and the foal back, and, when they had put their cloaks  
8 on them, he seated himself upon them. The immense crowd of peo-  
ple spread their cloaks in the road, while some cut branches off the  
9 trees, and spread them on the road. The crowds that led the way,  
as well as those that followed behind, kept shouting: "God save the  
Son of David! Blessed is he who comes in the name of the Lord! God  
10 save him from on high!" When he had entered Jerusalem, the whole  
11 city was stirred, and asked — "Who is this?", to which the crowd  
replied — "This is the Prophet Jesus from Nazareth in Galilee."



Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and drove out all those who were buying and selling there. He overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of the pigeon-dealers, and said to them: "Scripture says 'My House shall be called a house of prayer'; but you are making it 'a den of robbers.'" While he was still in the Temple Courts, some blind and some lame people came up to him, and he cured them. But, when the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law saw the wonderful things that Jesus did, and the boys who were calling out in the Temple Courts "God save the Son of David!", they were indignant, and said to him: "Do you hear what these boys are saying?" "Yes," answered Jesus; "but did you never read the words — 'Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings you have called forth perfect praise'?"

Then he left them, and went out of the city to Bethany, and spent the night there.

The next morning, in returning to the city, Jesus became hungry; and, noticing a solitary fig tree by the road-side, he went up to it, but found nothing on it but leaves. So he said to it: "Never again shall fruit be gathered off you." And suddenly the fruit tree withered up. When the disciples saw this, they exclaimed in astonishment: "How suddenly the fig tree withered up!" "I tell you," replied Jesus, "if you have faith, without ever a doubt, you will do what not only what has been done to the fig tree, but, even if you should say to this hill 'Be lifted up and hurled into the sea!' it would be done. And whatever you ask for in your prayers will, if you have faith, be granted you."

After Jesus had come into the Temple Courts, the Chief Priests and the Councillors of the Nation came up to him as he was teaching, and said: "What authority have you to do these things? Who gave you this authority?" "I, too," said Jesus in reply, "will ask you one question; if you will give me an answer to it, then I, also, will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It is about John's baptism. What was its origin? divine or human?" But they began arguing among themselves: "If we say 'divine,' he will say to us 'Why then did not you believe him?' But if we say 'human,' we are afraid of the people, for every one regards John as a Prophet." So the answer they

## Matthew 21

gave Jesus was — “We do not know.” “Then I,” he said, “refuse to tell you what authority I have to do these things. What do you think of this? There was a man who had two sons. He went to the elder and said ‘Go and work in the vineyard to-day my son.’ ‘Yes, sir,’ he answered; but he did not go. Then the father went to the second son, and said the same. ‘I will not,’ he answered; but afterwards he was sorry and went. Which of the two sons did as his father wished?” “The second,” they said. “I tell you,” added Jesus, “that tax-gatherers and prostitutes are going into the Kingdom of God before you. For when John came to you, walking in the path of righteousness, you did not believe him, but tax-gatherers and prostitutes did; and yet you, though you saw this, even then were not sorry, nor did you believe him.

Listen to another parable. A man, who was an employer, once planted a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a winepress in it, built a tower, and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. When the time for the vintage drew near, he sent his servants to the tenants, to receive his share of the produce. But the tenants seized his servants, beat one, killed another, and stoned a third. A second time the owner sent some servants, a larger number than before, and the tenants treated them in the same way. As a last resource he sent his son to them. ‘They will respect my son,’ he said. But the tenants, on seeing his son, said to each other ‘Here is the heir! Come, let us kill him, and get his inheritance.’ So they seized him, and threw him outside the vineyard, and killed him. Now, when the owner of the vineyard comes, what will he do to those tenants?” “Miserable wretches!” they exclaimed, “he will put them to a miserable death, and he will let out the vineyard to other tenants, who will pay him his share of the produce at the proper times.” Then Jesus added: “Have you never read in the Scriptures? — ‘The very stone which the builders despised — Has now itself become the corner-stone; This corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is marvelous in our eyes.’ That, I tell you, is why the Kingdom of God will be taken from

you, and given to a nation that does produce the fruit of the Kingdom. Yes, and he who falls on this stone will be dashed to pieces, while any one on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust.” 44

After listening to these parables, the Chief Priests and the Pharisees saw that it was about them that he was speaking; yet, although eager to arrest him, they were afraid of the crowds, who regarded him as a Prophet. 45 46

Once more Jesus spoke to them in parables. “The Kingdom of Heaven,” he said, “may be compared to a king who gave a banquet in honor of his son’s wedding. He sent his servants to call those who had been invited to the banquet, but they were unwilling to come. A second time he sent some servants, with orders to say to those who had been invited ‘I have prepared my breakfast, my cattle and fat beasts are killed and everything is ready; come to the banquet.’ They, however, took no notice, but went off, one to his farm, another to his business; while the rest, seizing his servants, ill-treated them and killed them. The king, in anger, sent his troops, put those murderers to death, and set their city on fire. Then he said to his servants ‘The banquet is prepared, but those who were invited were not worthy. So go to the cross-roads, and invite everyone you find to the banquet.’ The servants went out into the roads and collected all the people whom they found, whether bad or good; and the bridal-hall was filled with guests. But, when the king went in to see his guests, he noticed there a man who had not put on a wedding-robe. So he said to him ‘My friend, how is it that you came in here without a wedding-robe?’ The man was speechless. Then the king said to the attendants ‘Tie him hand and foot, and ‘put him out into the darkness’ outside, where there will be weeping and grinding of teeth.’ For many are called, but few chosen.” 222 3 4 5 6 7 8 9 10 11 12 13 14

Then the Pharisees went away and conferred together as to how they might lay a snare for Jesus in the course of conversation. They sent their disciples, with the Herodians, to say to him: “Teacher, we know that you are an honest person, and that you teach the way of God honestly, and are not afraid of any one; for you pay no regard to a man’s position. Tell us, then, what you think. Are we right in 15 16 17

## Matthew 22

18 paying taxes to the Emperor, or not?" Perceiving their malice, Jesus  
19 answered: "Why are you testing me, you hypocrites? Show me the  
coin with which the tax is paid." And, when they had brought him a  
20 florin, he asked: "Whose head and title are these?" "The Emperor's,"  
they answered: on which he said to them: "Then pay to the Emperor  
what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs to God."  
22 They wondered at his answer, and left him alone and went away.

23 That same day some Sadducees came up to Jesus, maintaining  
24 that there is no resurrection. Their question was this: — "Teacher,  
Moses said — 'should a man die without children, the man's brother  
shall become the husband of the widow, and raise a family for his  
25 brother.' Now we had living among us seven brothers; of whom the  
eldest married and died, and, as he had no family, left his wife for  
26 his brother. The same thing happened to the second and the third  
27 brothers, and indeed to all the seven. The woman herself died last  
28 of all. At the resurrection, then, whose wife will she be out of the  
29 seven, all of them having had her?" "Your mistake," replied Jesus,  
"is due to your ignorance of the Scriptures, and of the power of God.  
30 For at the resurrection there is no marrying or being married, but all  
31 who rise are as angels in Heaven. As to the resurrection of the dead,  
32 have you not read these words of God — 'I am the God of Abraham,  
and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'? He is not the God of  
33 dead people, but of living." The crowds, who had been listening to  
him, were greatly struck with his teaching.

34 When the Pharisees heard that Jesus had silenced the Sadducees,  
35 they collected together. Then one of them, a Student of the Law, to  
36 test him, asked this question — "Teacher, what is the great com-  
37 mandment in the Law?" His answer was: "'You shall love the Lord  
your God with all your Heart, and with all your soul, and with all  
38 your mind.' This is the great first commandment. The second, which  
is like it, is this — 'You shall love your neighbor as you love yourself.'  
40 On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets."  
41 Before the Pharisees separated, Jesus put this question to them —  
42 "What do you think about the Christ? Whose son is he?" "David's,"

they said. "How is it, then," Jesus replied, "that David, speaking under inspiration, calls him 'lord,' in the passage- 'The Lord said to my Lord: "Sit at my right hand, until I put your enemies beneath your feet'"? Since, then, David calls him 'lord,' how is he David's son?" No one could say a word in answer; nor did any one after that day venture to question him further.

Then Jesus speaking to the crowds and to his disciples, said: "The teachers of the Law and the Pharisees now occupy the chair of Moses. Therefore practice and lay to heart everything that they tell preach but do not practice. While they make up heavy loads and pile them on other people's shoulder's they decline, themselves, to lift a finger to move them. All their actions are done to attract attention. They widen their phylacteries, and increase the size of their tassels, and like to have the place of honor at dinner, and the best seats in the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect, and to be called 'Rabbi' for everybody. But do not allow yourselves to be called 'Rabbi,' for you have only one Teacher, and you yourself are all Brothers. And do not call any one on the earth your 'Father,' for you have only one Father, the heavenly Father. Nor must you allow yourselves to be called 'Leaders,' for you have only one Leader, the Christ. The person who would be the greatest among you must be your servant. Whoever shall exalt himself will be humbled, and whoever shall humble himself will be exalted. But alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You turn the key of the Kingdom of Heaven in people's faces. For you do not go in yourselves, nor yet allow those who try to go in to do so. Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You destroy widow's houses, even while pretending to make long prayers; therefore you shall receive greater condemnation. Alas for you, teachers of the law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You scour land and sea to make a single convert, and, when he is gained, you make him twice as deserving of Gehenna as you are yourselves. Alas for you, you blind guides! You say 'if any answer by the Temple, his oath counts for nothing; but, if any one swears by the gold of the Temple, his oath is binding him'! Fools

that you are and blind! Which is the more important? The gold? Or  
18 the Temple which has given sacredness to the gold? You say, too,  
‘If any one swears by the altar, his oath counts for nothing, but, if  
any one swears by the offering placed on it, his oath is binding on  
19 him’! Blind indeed! Which is the more important? The offering? or  
20 the altar which gives sacredness to the offering? Therefore a man,  
21 swearing by the altar, swears by it and by all that is on it, and a man,  
swearing by the Temple, swears by it and by him who dwells in it,  
22 while a man, swearing by Heaven, swears by the throne of God, and  
23 by him who sits upon it. Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Phar-  
isees, hypocrites that you are! You pay tithes on mint, fennel, and  
caraway seed, and have neglected the weightier matters of the Law  
— justice, mercy, and good faith. These last you ought to have put  
24 into practice, without neglecting the first. You blind guides, to strain  
25 out a gnat and to swallow a camel! Alas for you, Teachers of the Law  
and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are! You clean the outside of the  
cup and the dish, but inside they are filled with the results of greed  
26 and self-indulgence. You blind Pharisee! First clean the inside of the  
27 cup and the dish, so that the outside may become clean as well. Alas  
for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites that you are!  
You are like whitewashed tombs, which indeed look fair outside,  
while inside they are filled with dead people’s bones and all kinds  
28 of filth. It is the same with you. Outwardly, and to others, you have  
the look of religious people, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy  
29 and sin. Alas for you, Teachers of the Law and Pharisees, hypocrites  
that you are! You build the tombs of the Prophets, and decorate the  
30 monuments of religious men, and say ‘Had we been living in the  
days of our ancestors, we should have taken part in their murder  
31 of the Prophets! By doing this you are furnishing evidence against  
yourselves that you are true children of the people who murdered  
32 the Prophets. Fill up the measure of your ancestor’s guilt. You ser-  
pents and brood of vipers! How can you escape being sentenced to  
34 Gehenna? That is why I send you Prophets, wise people, and Teach-  
ers of the Law, some of whom you will crucify and kill, and some  
of whom you will scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute from

town to town; in order that upon your heads may fall every drop 35  
of innocent 'blood split on earth,' from the blood of innocent Abel  
down to that of Zechariah, Barachiah's son, whom you murdered  
between the Temple and the altar. All this, I tell you, will come home 36  
to the present generation. Jerusalem! Jerusalem! She who slays the 37  
Prophets and stones the messengers sent to her — Oh, how often  
have I wished to gather your children round me, as a hen gathers  
her brood under her wings, and you would not come! Verily, your 38  
house is left to you desolate! For nevermore, I tell you, shall you see 39  
me, until you say — 'Blessed is He who comes in the Name of the  
Lord!'"

Leaving the Temple Courts, Jesus was walking away, when his 24  
disciples came up to draw his attention to the Temple buildings.  
"Do you see all these things?" was his answer. "I tell you, not a sin- 2  
gle stone will be left here upon another, which will not be throne  
down," so, while Jesus was sitting on the Mount of Olives, his dis- 3  
ciples came up to him privately and said: "Tell us when this will  
be, and what will be the sign of your Coming, and of the close of  
the age." Jesus replied to them as follows: "See that no one leads 4  
you astray; for, many will take my name, and come saying 'I am the 5  
Christ,' and will lead many astray. You will hear of wars and rumors 6  
of wars; take care not to be alarmed, for such things must occur; but  
the end is not yet here. For 'nation will rise against nation and king- 7  
dom against kingdom,' and there will be famines and earthquakes  
in various places. All this, however, will be but the beginning of the 8  
birth pangs! When that time comes, they will give you up to per- 9  
secution, and will put you to death, and you will be hated by all  
nations on account of my Name. And then many will fall away, and 10  
will betray one another, and hate one another. Many false Prophets, 11  
also, will appear and lead many astray; and, owing to the increase 12  
of wickedness, the love of most will grow cold. Yet the person that 13  
endures to the end shall be saved. This Good News of the Kingdom 14  
shall be proclaimed throughout the world as a witness to all nations;  
and then will come the end. As soon, then, as you see 'the Foul Des- 15  
ecration,' mentioned by the Prophet Daniel, standing in the Holy

## Matthew 24

16 Place,” (the reader must consider what this means) “then those of  
17 you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains; and a man  
18 on the housetop must not go down to get the things that are in his  
19 house; nor must one who is on his farm turn back to get his cloak.  
20 Alas for the women that are with child, and for those that are nurs-  
21 ing infants in those days! Pray, too, that your flight may not take  
22 place in winter, nor on a Sabbath; for that will be ‘a time of great  
23 distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of  
24 the world down to the present time’ — no, nor ever will again. Had  
25 not those days been limited, not a single soul would escape; but for  
26 the sake of ‘God’s People’ a limit will be put to them. At that time, if  
27 any one should say to you ‘Look! here is the Christ!’ or ‘Here he is!’,  
28 do not believe it; for false Christs and false Prophets will arise, and  
29 will display great signs and marvels, so that, were it possible, even  
30 God’s People would be led astray. Remember, I have told you be-  
31 forehand. Therefore, if people say to you ‘He is in the Wilderness!’,  
32 do not go out there; or ‘He is in an inner room!’, do not believe it;  
33 for, just as lightning will start from the east and flash across to the  
34 west, so will it be with the Coming of the Son of Man. Wherever a  
35 dead body lies, there will the vultures flock.’ Immediately after the  
36 distress of those days, ‘the sun will be darkened, the moon will not  
give her light, the stars will fall from the heavens,’ and ‘the forces of  
the heavens will be convulsed.’ Then will appear the sign of the Son  
of Man in the heavens; and all the peoples of the earth will mourn,  
when they see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of the heavens,’  
with power and great glory; and he will send his angels, with a great  
trumpet, and they will gather his People round him from the four  
winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

Learn the lesson taught by the fig tree. As soon as its branches  
are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer  
is near. And so may you, as soon as you see all these things, know  
that he is at your doors. I tell you, even the present generation will  
not pass away, till all these things have taken place. The heavens and  
the earth will pass away, but my words shall never pass away. But  
about that Day and Hour, no one knows — not even the angels of



Heaven, nor yet the Son — but only the Father himself. For, just as 37  
 in the days of Noah, so will it be at the Coming of the Son of Man.  
 In those days before the flood they went on eating and drinking, 38  
 marrying and being married, up to the very day on which Noah  
 entered the ark, taking not notice till the flood came and swept them 39  
 one and all away; and so will it be at the Coming of the Son of Man.  
 At that time, of two men on a farm one will be taken and one left; 40  
 of two women grinding with the hand-mill one will be taken and 41  
 one left. Therefore watch; for you cannot be sure on what day your 42  
 Master is coming. But this you do know, that, had the owner of the 43  
 house known at what time of night the thief was coming, he would  
 have been on the watch, and would not have allowed his house to  
 be broken into. Therefore, do you also prepare, since it is just when 44  
 you are least expecting him that the Son of Man will come. Who, 45  
 then is that trustworthy, careful servant, who has been placed by  
 his master over his household, to give them their food at the proper  
 time? Happy will that servant be whom his master, when he comes 46  
 home, shall find doing this. I tell you that his master will put him in 47  
 charge of the whole of his property. But, should he be a bad servant, 48  
 and say to himself 'My master is a long time in coming,' and begin 49  
 to beat his fellow-servants, and eat and drink with drunkards, that 50  
 servant's master will come on a day when he does not expect him,  
 and at an hour of which he is unaware, and will flog him severely, 51  
 and assign him his place among the hypocrites, where there will be  
 weeping and grinding of teeth.

Then the Kingdom of Heaven will be like ten bridesmaids who 25  
 took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. Five of them 2  
 were foolish, and five were prudent. The foolish ones took their 3  
 lamps, but took no oil with them; while the prudent ones, besides 4  
 taking their lamps, took oil in their jars. As the bridegroom was late 5  
 in coming, they all became drowsy, and slept. But at midnight a 6  
 shout was raised — 'The Bridegroom is coming! Come out to meet  
 him!' Then all the bridesmaids awoke and trimmed their lamps, and 8  
 the foolish said to the prudent 'Give us some of your oil; our lamps  
 are going out.' But the prudent ones answered 'No, for fear that 9

there will not be enough for you and for us. Go instead to those who  
10 sell it, and buy for yourselves.' But while they were on their way to  
buy it, the bridegroom came; and the bridesmaids who were ready  
11 went in with him to the banquet, and the door was shut. Afterwards  
the other bridesmaids came. 'Sir, Sir,' they said, 'open the door to  
12 us!' But the bridegroom answered 'I tell you, I do not know you.'  
13 Therefore watch, since you know neither the Day nor the Hour.  
14 For it is as though a man, going on his travels, called his  
15 servants, and gave his property into their charge. He gave three  
thousand pounds to one, twelve hundred to another, and six  
16 hundred to a third, in proportion to the ability of each. Then he set  
out on his travels. The man who had received the three thousand  
17 pounds went at once and traded with it, and made another three  
thousand. So, too, the man who had received the twelve hundred  
18 pounds made another twelve hundred. But the man who had  
received the six hundred went and dug a hole in the ground, and  
19 hid his master's money. After a long time the master of those  
20 servants returned, and settled accounts with them. The man who  
had received the three thousand pounds came up and brought  
three thousand more. 'Sir,' he said, 'you entrusted me with three  
thousand pounds; look, I have made another three thousand!'  
21 'Well done, good, trustworthy servant!' said his master. 'You have  
been trustworthy with a small sum; now I will place a large one in  
22 your hands; come and share your master's joy!' Then the one who  
had received the twelve hundred pounds came up and said 'Sir,  
you entrusted me with twelve hundred pounds; look, I have made  
23 another twelve hundred!' 'Well done, good, trustworthy servant!'  
said his master. 'You have been trustworthy with a small sum; now  
I will place a large one in your hands; come and share your  
24 master's joy!' The man who had received the six hundred pounds  
came up, too, and said 'Sir, I knew that you were a hard man; you  
reap where you have not sown, and gather up where you have not  
25 winnowed; and, in my fear, I went and hid your money in the  
26 ground; look, here is what belongs to you!' 'You lazy, worthless  
servant!' was his master's reply. 'You knew that I reap where I have

not sown, and gather up where I have not winnowed? Then you 27  
 ought to have placed my money in the hands of bankers, and I, on  
 my return, should have received my money, with interest.  
 'Therefore,' he continued, 'take away from him the six hundred 28  
 pounds, and give it to the one who has the six thousand. For, to 29  
 him who has, more will be given, and he shall have abundance;  
 but, as for him who has nothing, even what he has will be taken  
 away from him. As for the useless servant, 'put him out into the 30  
 darkness' outside, where there will be weeping and grinding of  
 teeth.'

When the Son of Man has come in his glory and all the angels with 31  
 him, then he 'will take his seat on his throne of glory'; and all the 32  
 nations will be gathered before him, and he will separate the peo-  
 ple — just as a shepherd separates sheep from goats — placing the 33  
 sheep on his right hand, and the goats on his left. Then the King will 34  
 say to those on his right 'Come, you who are blessed by my Father,  
 enter upon possession of the Kingdom prepared for you ever since  
 the beginning of the world. For, when I was hungry, you gave me 35  
 food; when I was thirsty, you gave me drink; when I was a stranger,  
 you took me to your homes; when I was naked, you clothed me; 36  
 when I fell ill, you visited me; and when I was in prison, you came  
 to me.' Then the Righteous will answer 'Lord, when did we see you 37  
 hungry, and feed you? Or thirsty, and give you a drink? When did 38  
 we see you a stranger, and take you to our homes? Or naked, and  
 clothe you? When did we see you ill, or in prison, and come to you?' 39  
 And the King will reply 'I tell you, as often as you did it to one of 40  
 these my Brothers, however lowly, you did it to me.' Then he will say 41  
 to those on his left 'Go from my presence, accursed, into the 'aeon-  
 ian fire which has been prepared for the Devil and his angels.' For, 42  
 when I was hungry, you gave me no food; when I was thirsty, you  
 gave me no drink; when I was a stranger, you did not take me to your 43  
 homes; when I was naked, you did not clothe me; and, when I was  
 ill and in prison, you did not visit me.' Then they, in their turn, will 44  
 answer 'Lord, when did we see you hungry, or thirsty, or a stranger,  
 or naked, or ill, or in prison, and did not supply your wants?' And 45

## Matthew 26

then he will reply 'I tell you, as often as you failed to do it to one of these, however lowly, you failed to do it to me.' And these last will go away 'into aeonian punishment,' but the righteous 'into aeonian life.'"

26 When Jesus had finished all this teaching, he said to his disciples:  
2 "You know that in two days time the Festival of the Passover will be  
3 here; and that the Son of Man is to be given up to be crucified." Then the Chief Priests and the Councillors of the Nation met in the house  
4 of the High Priest, who was called Caiaphas, and plotted together  
5 to arrest Jesus by stealth and put him to death; but they said: "Not during the Festival, for fear of causing a riot."

6 After Jesus had reached Bethany, and while he was in the house  
7 of Simon the leper, a woman came up to him with an alabaster jar of very costly perfume, and poured the perfume upon his head as he  
8 was at table. The disciples were indignant at seeing this. "What is  
9 this waste for?" they exclaimed. "It could have been sold for a large  
10 sum, and the money given to poor people." "Why are you troubling the woman?" Jesus said, when he noticed it. "For this is a beautiful  
11 deed that she has done to me. You always have the poor with you,  
12 but you will not always have me. In pouring this perfume on my  
13 body, she has done it for my burying. I tell you, wherever, in the whole world, this Good News is proclaimed, what this woman has done will be told in memory of her."

14 It was then that one of the Twelve, named Judas Iscariot, made  
15 his way to the Chief Priests, and said "What are you willing to give me, if I betray Jesus to you?" The Priests 'weighed him out thirty  
16 pieces of silver' as payment. So from that time Judas looked for an opportunity to betray Jesus.

17 On the first day of the Festival of the Unleavened Bread, the disciples came up to Jesus, and said: "Where do you wish us to make  
18 preparations for you to eat the Passover?" "Go into the city to a certain man," he answered, "and say to him 'The Teacher says — My time is near. I will keep the Passover with my disciples at your  
19 house.'" The disciples did as Jesus directed them, and prepared the

Passover. In the evening Jesus took his place with the twelve disciples, and, while they were eating, he said: "I tell you that one of you will betray me." In great grief they began to say to him, one by one: "Can it be I, Master?" "The one who dipped his bread beside me in the dish," replied Jesus, "is the one who will betray me. True, the Son of Man must go, as Scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'" Judas, who was betraying him, turned to him and said: "Can it be I, Rabbi?" "It is," answered Jesus.

While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing, broke it and, as he gave it to his disciples, said: "Take it and eat it; this is my body." Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving, gave it to them, with the words: "Drink from it, all of you; for this is my Covenant blood, which is poured out for many for the forgiveness of sins. I tell you that I shall never, after this, drink of this juice of the grape, until that day when I shall drink it new with you in the Kingdom of my Father."

They then sang a hymn, and went out to the Mount of Olives. Then Jesus said to them: "Even you will all fall away from me to-night. Scripture says — 'I will strike down the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock will be scattered.' But, after I have risen, I shall go before you into Galilee." "If every one else falls away from you," Peter answered, "I shall never fall away!" "I tell you," replied Jesus, "that this very night, before the cock crows, you will disown me three times!" "Even if I must die with you," Peter exclaimed, "I shall never disown you!" All the disciples spoke in the same way.

Then Jesus came with them to a garden called Gethsemane, and he said to his disciples: "Sit down here while I go and pray yonder." Taking with him Peter and the two sons of Zebediah, he began to show signs of sadness and deep distress of mind. "I am sad at heart," he said, "sad even to death; wait here and watch with me." Going on a little further, he threw himself on his face in prayer. "My Father," he said, "if it is possible, let me be spared this cup; only, not as I will, but as you will." Then he came to his disciples, and found them asleep. "What!" he said to Peter, "could none of you

- 41 watch with me for one hour? Watch and pray, that you may not fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but human nature is weak.”
- 42 Again, a second time, he went away, and prayed. “My Father,” he said, “if I cannot be spared this cup, but must drink it, your will be
- 43 done!” And coming back again he found them asleep, for their eyes
- 44 were heavy. So he left them, and went away again, and prayed a
- 45 third time, again saying the same words. Then he came to the disciples, and said: “Sleep on now, and rest yourselves. Hark! my time is close at hand, and the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of
- 46 wicked people. Up, and let us be going. Look! my betrayer is close at
- 47 hand.” And, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one of the Twelve, came in sight; and with him was a great crowd of people, with swords and clubs, sent from the Chief Priests and Councillors
- 48 of the Nation. Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with them. “The man whom I kiss,” he had said, “will be the one; arrest him.”
- 49 So he went up to Jesus at once, and exclaimed: “Welcome, Rabbi!”
- 50 and kissed him; on which Jesus said to him: “Friend, do what you have come for.” Thereupon the men went up, seized Jesus, and ar-
- 51 rested him. Suddenly one of those who were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and striking the High Priest’s
- 52 servant, cut off his ear. “Sheathe your sword,” Jesus said, “for all
- 53 who draw the sword will be put to the sword. Do you think that I cannot ask my Father for help, when he would at once send to my
- 54 aid more than twelve legions of angels? But in that case how would
- 55 the Scriptures be fulfilled, which say that this must be?” Jesus at the same time said to the crowds: “Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I have sat teaching day after
- 56 day in the Temple Courts, and yet you did not arrest me.” The whole of this occurred in fulfillment of the Prophetic Scriptures. Then the disciples all forsook him and fled.
- 57 Those who had arrested Jesus took him to Caiaphas, the High Priest, where the Teachers of the Law and the Councillors had
- 58 assembled. Peter followed him at a distance as far as the courtyard of the offices, to see the end. Meanwhile the Chief Priests and the
- 59 whole of the High Council were trying to get such false evidence

against Jesus, as would warrant putting him to death, but they did 60  
 not find any, although many came forward with false evidence.  
 Later on, however, two men came forward and said: "This man 61  
 said 'I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in  
 three days.'" Then the High Priest stood up, and said to Jesus: 62  
 "Have you no answer? What is this evidence which these men are  
 giving against you?" But Jesus remained silent. On this the High 63  
 Priest said to him: "I adjure you, by the Living God, to tell us  
 whether you are the Christ, the Son of God." "It is true," Jesus 64  
 answered; "Moreover I tell you all that hereafter you shall 'see the  
 Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the Almighty, and coming  
 on the clouds of the heavens.'" Then the High Priest tore his robes. 65  
 "This is blasphemy!" he exclaimed. "Why do we want any more  
 witnesses? You have just heard his blasphemy! What is your 66  
 decision?" They answered: "He deserves death." Then they spat in 67  
 his face, and struck him, while others dealt blows at him, saying as  
 they did so: "Now play the Prophet for us, you Christ! Who was it 68  
 that struck you?" Peter, meanwhile, was sitting outside in the 69  
 courtyard; and a maidservant came up to him, and exclaimed:  
 "Why, you were with Jesus the Galilean!" But Peter denied it 70  
 before them all. "I do not know what you mean," he replied. When 71  
 he had gone out into the gateway, another maid saw him, and said  
 to those who were there: "This man was with Jesus of Nazareth!"  
 Again he denied it with an oath: "I do not know the man!" But 72  
 soon afterwards those who were standing by came up and said to  
 Peter: "You also are certainly one of them; why, your very way of  
 speaking proves it!" Then Peter began to swear, with most solemn 74  
 imprecations: "I do not know the man." At that moment a cock  
 crowed; and Peter remembered the words which Jesus had said — 75  
 'Before a cock has crowed, you will disown me three times'; and he  
 went outside, and wept bitterly.

At daybreak all the Chief Priests and the Councillors of the Na- 27  
 tion consulted together against Jesus, to bring about his death. They 2  
 put him in chains and led him away, and gave him up to the Roman  
 Governor, Pilate. Then Judas, who betrayed him, seeing that Jesus 3

was condemned, repented of what he had done, and returned the  
4 thirty pieces of silver to the Chief Priests and Councillors. "I did  
wrong in betraying a good man to his death," he said. "What has  
that to do with us?" they replied. "You must see to that yourself."  
5 Judas flung down the pieces of silver in the Temple, and left; and  
6 went away and hanged himself. The Chief Priests took the pieces of  
silver, but they said: "We must not put them into the Temple trea-  
7 sury, because they are blood-money." So, after consultation, they  
bought with them the 'Potter's Field' for a burial-ground for for-  
8 eigners; and that is why that field is called the 'Field of Blood' to this  
9 very day. Then it was that these words spoken by the Prophet Jere-  
miah were fulfilled — "They took the thirty pieces of silver, the price  
of him who was valued, whom some of the people of Israel valued,  
10 and gave them for the Potter's field, as the Lord commanded me.'  
11 Meanwhile Jesus was brought before the Roman Governor. "Are  
you the King of the Jews?" asked the Governor. "It is true," an-  
12 swered Jesus. While charges were being brought against him by the  
13 Chief Priests and Councillors, Jesus made no reply. Then Pilate said  
to him: "Do not you hear how many accusations they are making  
14 against you?" Yet Jesus made no reply — not even a single word; at  
15 which the Governor was greatly astonished. Now, at the Feast, the  
Governor was accustomed to grant the people the release of any one  
16 prisoner whom they might choose. At that time they had a notorious  
17 prisoner called Barabbas. So, when the people had collected, Pilate  
said to them: "Which do you wish me to release for you? Barab-  
18 bas? Or Jesus who is called 'Christ'?" For he knew that it was out  
19 of jealousy that they had given Jesus up to him. While he was still  
on the Bench, his wife sent this message to him — "Do not have  
anything to do with that good man, for I have been very unhappy  
20 to-day in a dream on account of him." But the Chief Priests and the  
Councillors persuaded the crowds to ask for Barabbas, and to kill  
21 Jesus. The Governor, however, said to them: "Which of these two do  
22 you wish me to release for you?" "Barabbas," they answered. "What  
then," Pilate asked, "shall I do with Jesus who is called 'Christ'?" "Let  
23 him be crucified," they all replied. "Why, what harm has he done?"



he asked. But they kept shouting furiously: "Let him be crucified!" When Pilate saw that his efforts were unavailing, but that, on the contrary, a riot was beginning, he took some water, and washed his hands in the sight of the crowd, saying as he did so: "I am not answerable for this bloodshed; you must see to it yourselves." And all the people answered: "His blood be on our heads and on our children's!" The Pilate released Barabbas to them; but Jesus he scourged, and gave him up to be crucified.

After that, the Governor's soldiers took Jesus with them into the Government House, and gathered the whole garrison round him. They stripped him, and put on him a red military cloak, and having twisted some thorns into a crown, put it on his head, and a rod in his right hand, and then, going down on their knees before him, they mocked him. "Long life to you, King of the Jews!" they said. They spat at him and, taking the rod, kept striking him on the head; and, when they had left off mocking him, they took off the military cloak, and put his own clothes on him, and led him away to be crucified.

As they were on their way out, they came upon a man from Cyrene of the name of Simon; and they compelled him to go with them to carry the cross. On reaching a place named Golgotha (a place named from its likeness to a skull), they gave him some wine to drink which had been mixed with gall; but after tasting it, Jesus refused to drink it. When they had crucified him, they divided his clothes among them by casting lots. Then they sat down, and kept watch over him there. Above his head they fixed the accusation against him written out — 'THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.' At the same time two robbers were crucified with him, one on the right, the other on the left. The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads as they said: "You who 'destroy the Temple and build one in three days,' save yourself! If you are God's Son, come down from the cross!" In the same way the Chief Priests, with the Teachers of the Law and Councillors, said in mockery: "He saved others, but he cannot save himself! He is the 'King of Israel'! Let him come down from the cross now, and we will believe in him. He has trusted in God; if God wants him, let him deliver him

## Matthew 27

44 now; for he said 'I am God's Son.'" Even the robbers, who were  
45 crucified with him, reviled him in the same way. After mid-day a  
darkness came over all the country, lasting till three in the  
46 afternoon. About three Jesus called out loudly: "Eloi, Eloi, lema  
sabacthani" — that is to say, 'O my God, my God, why have you  
47 forsaken me?' Some of those standing by heard this, and said: "The  
48 man is calling for Elijah!" One of them immediately ran and took a  
sponge, and, filling it with common wine, put it on the end of a  
49 rod, and offered it to him to drink. But the rest said: "Wait and let  
us see if Elijah is coming to save him." However another man took  
a spear, and pierced his side; and water and blood flowed from it.  
50 But Jesus, uttering another loud cry, gave up his spirit. Suddenly  
the Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom, the earth  
52 shook, the rocks were torn asunder, the tombs opened, and the  
53 bodies of many of God's People who had fallen asleep rose, and  
they, leaving their tombs, went, after the resurrection of Jesus, into  
54 the Holy City, and appeared to many people. The Roman Captain,  
and the men with him who were watching Jesus, on seeing the  
earthquake and all that was happening, became greatly frightened  
55 and exclaimed: "This must indeed have been God's Son!" There  
were many women there, watching from a distance, who had  
accompanied Jesus from Galilee and had been attending on him.  
56 Among them were Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James  
and Joseph, and the mother of Zebediah's sons.

57 When evening had fallen, there came a rich man belonging to  
Ramah, named Joseph, who had himself become a disciple of Je-  
58 sus. He went to see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus; upon  
59 which Pilate ordered it to be given him. So Joseph took the body,  
60 and wrapped it in a clean linen sheet, and laid it in his newly-made  
tomb which he had cut in the rock; and, before he left, he rolled a  
61 great stone against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and  
the other Mary remained behind, sitting in front of the grave.

62 The next day — that is, the day following the Preparation-Day —  
the Chief Priests and Pharisees came in a body to Pilate, and said:  
63 "Sir, we remember that, during his lifetime, that impostor said 'I

shall rise after three days.' So order the tomb to be made secure till 64  
 the third day. Otherwise his disciples may come and steal him, and  
 then say to the people 'He has risen from the dead,' when the latest  
 imposture will be worse than the first." "You may have a guard," 65  
 was Pilate's reply; "go and make the tomb as secure as you can." So 66  
 they went made the tomb secure, by sealing the stone, in presence  
 of the guard.

After the Sabbath, as the first day of the week began to dawn, 28  
 Mary of Magdala and the other Mary had gone to look at the grave,  
 when suddenly a great earthquake occurred. For an angel of the 2  
 Lord descended from Heaven, and came and rolled away the stone,  
 and seated himself upon it. His appearance was as dazzling as light- 3  
 ning, and his clothing was as white as snow; and, in their terror of 4  
 him, the men on guard trembled violently and became like dead  
 men. But the angel, addressing the women, said; "You need not be 5  
 afraid. I now that it is Jesus, who was crucified, for whom you are  
 looking. He is not here; for he has risen, as he said he would. Come, 6  
 and see the place where he was lying; and then go quickly and say to 7  
 him disciples 'He has risen from the dead, and is going before you  
 into Galilee; there you will see him.' Remember, I have told you." 8  
 On this they left the tomb quickly, in awe and great joy, and ran to 8  
 tell the news to the disciples. Suddenly Jesus met them. "Welcome!" 9  
 he said. The women went up to him, and clasped his feet, bowing to  
 the ground before him. Then Jesus said to them: "Do not be afraid; 10  
 go and tell my brothers to set out for Galilee, and they shall see me  
 there." While they were still on their way, some of the guard came 11  
 into the city, and reported to the Chief Priests everything that had  
 happened. So they and the Councillors met and, after holding a con- 12  
 sultation, gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, and told them 13  
 to say that his disciples came in the night, and stole him while they  
 were asleep; "And should this matter come before the Governor," 14  
 they added, "we will satisfy him, and see that you have nothing  
 to fear." So the soldiers took the money, and did as they were in- 15  
 structed. And this story has been current among the Jews from that  
 day to this.

16 The eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain where Jesus  
17 told them to meet him; and, when they saw him, they bowed to the  
18 ground before him; although some felt doubtful. Then Jesus came  
up, and spoke to them thus:

“All authority in heaven and on the earth has been given to me.  
19 Therefore go and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them  
20 into the Faith of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, and teach-  
ing them to lay to heart all the commands that I have given you;  
and, remember, I myself am with you every day until the close of  
the age.”

MARK

THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO MARK

*The Preparation*

The beginning of the Good News about Jesus Christ.

It is said in the Prophet Isaiah — ‘Behold! I send my Messenger 2  
before your face; he shall prepare your way. The voice of one crying 3  
aloud in the Wilderness: “Make ready the way of the Lord, make  
his paths straight.”’ And in fulfillment of this, John the Baptizer ap- 4  
peared in the Wilderness, proclaiming a baptism upon repentance,  
for the forgiveness of sins. The whole of Judea, as well as all the in- 5  
habitants of Jerusalem, went out to him; and they were baptized by  
him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

John was clad in clothing of camels’ hair, with a belt of leather 6  
round his waist, and lived on locusts and wild honey; and he pro- 7  
claimed — “There is coming after me one more powerful than I, and  
I am not fit even to stoop down and unfasten his sandals. I have bap- 8  
tized you with water, but he will baptize you with the Holy Spirit.”

Now about that time Jesus came from Nazareth in Galilee, and 9  
was baptized by John in the Jordan. Just as he was coming up out of 10  
the water, he saw the heavens rent apart, and the Spirit, like a dove,  
descending upon him, and from the heavens came a voice — “You 11  
are my Son, the Beloved; in you I delight.”

Immediately afterwards the Spirit drove Jesus out into the Wilder- 12  
ness; and he was there in the Wilderness forty days, tempted by Sa- 13  
tan, and among the wild beasts, while the angels ministered to him.

*The Work in Galilee*

After John had been committed to prison, Jesus went to Galilee, 14  
proclaiming the Good News of God — “The time has come, and the 15  
Kingdom of God is at hand; repent, and believe the Good News.”

16 As Jesus was going along the shore of the Sea of Galilee, he saw  
17 Simon and his brother Andrew casting a net in the Sea, for they were  
18 fishermen. "Come and follow me," Jesus said, "and I will set you to  
19 fish for people." They left their nets at once, and followed him.

19 Going on a little further, he saw James, Zebediah's son, and his  
20 brother John, who also were in their boat mending the nets. Jesus  
at once called them, and they left their father Zebediah in the boat  
with the crew, and went after him.

21 They walked into Capernaum. On the next Sabbath Jesus went  
22 into the Synagogue and began to teach. The people were amazed  
at his teaching, for he taught them like one who had authority, and  
23 not like the Teachers of the Law. Now there was in their Synagogue  
at the time a man under the power of a foul spirit, who called out:  
24 "What do you want with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to  
25 destroy us? I know who you are — the Holy One of God!" But Je-  
26 sus rebuked the spirit: "Be silent! Come out from him." The foul  
spirit threw the man into a fit, and with a loud cry came out from  
27 him. They were all so amazed that they kept asking: "What is this?  
Strange teaching indeed! He gives his commands with authority  
28 even to the foul spirits, and they obey him!" And the fame of Jesus  
spread at once in all directions, through the whole neighborhood of  
Galilee.

29 As soon as they had come out from the Synagogue, they went,  
30 with James and John, into the house of Simon and Andrew. Now  
Simon's mother-in-law was lying ill with fever, and they at once told  
31 Jesus about her. Jesus went up to her and, grasping her hand, raised  
her up; the fever left her, and she began to wait upon them.

32 In the evening, after sunset, the people brought to Jesus all who  
33 were ill or possessed by demons; and the whole city was gathered  
34 round the door. Jesus cured many who were ill with various dis-  
eases, and drove out many demons, and would not permit them to  
speak, because they knew him to be the Christ.

35 In the morning, long before daylight, Jesus rose and went out,  
36 and, going to a lonely spot, there began to pray. But Simon and his  
37 companions hastened after him; and, when they found him, they

exclaimed: "Every one is looking for you!" But Jesus said to them: 38  
 "Let us go somewhere else, into the country towns near, that I may  
 make my proclamation in them also; for that was why I came."  
 And he went about making his proclamation in their Synagogues 39  
 all through Galilee, and driving out the demons.

One day a leper came to Jesus and, falling on his knees, begged 40  
 him for help. "If only you are willing," he said, "you are able to  
 make me clean." Moved with compassion, Jesus stretched out his 41  
 hand and touched him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become  
 clean." Instantly the leprosy left the man, and he became clean; and 42  
 then Jesus, after sternly warning him, immediately sent him away,  
 and said to him: "Be careful not to say anything to any one; but go 44  
 and show yourself to the Priest, and make the offerings for your  
 cleansing directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." The man, 45  
 however, went away, and began to speak about it publicly, and to  
 spread the story so widely, that Jesus could no longer go openly  
 into a town, but stayed outside in lonely places; and people came to  
 him from every direction.

Some days later, when Jesus came back to Capernaum, the news 2  
 spread that he was in a house there; and so many people collected 2  
 together, that after a while there was no room for them even round  
 the door; and he began to tell them his Message. Some people came 3  
 bringing to him a paralyzed man, who was being carried by four  
 bearers. Being, however, unable to get him near to Jesus, owing to 4  
 the crowd, they removed the roofing below which Jesus was; and,  
 when they had made an opening, they let down the mat on which  
 the paralyzed man was lying. When Jesus saw their faith, he said to 5  
 the man: "Child, your sins are forgiven."

But some of the Teachers of the Law who were sitting there were 6  
 debating in their minds: "Why does this man speak like this? He 7  
 is blaspheming! Who can forgive sins except God?" Jesus, at once 8  
 intuitively aware that they were debating with themselves in this  
 way, said to them: "Why are you debating in your minds about this?  
 Which is easier? — to say to the paralyzed man, 'Your sins are for- 9  
 given'? or to say 'Get up, and take up your mat, and walk about'?

10 But that you may know that the Son of Man has power to forgive  
11 sins on earth" — here he said to the paralyzed man — "To you I say,  
12 Get up, take up your mat, and return to your home." The man got  
up, and immediately took up his mat, and went out before them all;  
at which they were amazed, and, as they praised God, they said:  
"We have never seen anything like this!"

13 Jesus went out again to the Sea; and all the people came to him,  
14 and he taught them. As he went along, he saw Levi, the son of Al-  
phaeus, sitting in the tax-office, and said to him: "Follow me." Levi  
got up and followed him.

15 Later on he was in his house at table, and a number of tax-gath-  
erers and outcasts took their places at table with Jesus and his dis-  
16 ciples; for many of them were following him. When the Teachers of  
the Law belonging to the party of the Pharisees saw that he was eat-  
ing in the company of such people, they said to his disciples: "He  
17 is eating in the company of tax- gatherers and outcasts!" Hearing  
this, Jesus said: "It is not those who are in health that need a doctor,  
but those who are ill. I did not come to call the religious, but the  
outcast."

18 Now John's disciples and the Pharisees were keeping a fast, and  
people came and asked Jesus: "Why is it that John's disciples and the  
19 disciples of the Pharisees fast, while yours do not?" Jesus answered:  
"Can the bridegroom's friends fast, while the bridegroom is with  
them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot  
20 fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom will be parted  
from them, and they will fast then — when that day comes.

21 "No one ever sews a piece of unshrunk cloth on an old garment;  
if they do, the patch tears away from it — the new from the old —  
22 and a worse rent is made. And no one ever puts new wine into old  
wine-skins; if they do, the wine will burst the skins, and both the  
wine and the skins are lost. But new wine is put into fresh skins."

23 One Sabbath, as Jesus was walking through the cornfields, his dis-  
24 ciples began to pick the ears of wheat as they went along. "Look!"  
the Pharisees said to him, "why are they doing what is not allowed  
25 on the Sabbath?" "Have you never read," answered Jesus, "what



David did when he was in want and hungry, he and his companions — How he went into the House of God, in the time of Abiathar the High Priest, and ate ‘the consecrated bread,’ which only the priests are allowed to eat, and gave some to his comrades as well?” 26

Then Jesus added: “The Sabbath was made for people, and not people for the Sabbath; so the Son of Man is lord even of the Sabbath.” 27 28

On another occasion Jesus went in to a Synagogue, where there was a man whose hand was withered. And they watched Jesus closely, to see if he would cure the man on the Sabbath, so that they might have a charge to bring against him. “Stand out in the middle,” Jesus said to the man with the withered hand; and to the people he said: “Is it allowable to do good on the Sabbath — or harm? to save a life, or destroy it?” As they remained silent, Jesus looked round at them in anger, grieving at the hardness of their hearts, and said to the man: “Stretch out your hand.” The man stretched it out; and his hand had become sound. Immediately on leaving the Synagogue, the Pharisees and the Herodians united in laying a plot against Jesus, to put him to death. 3 2 3 4 5 6

THEN JESUS WENT AWAY WITH HIS DISCIPLES TO the Sea, followed by a great number of people from Galilee. A great number, hearing of all that he was doing, came to him from Judea, from Jerusalem, from Edom, from beyond the Jordan, and from the country round Tyre and Sidon. So Jesus told his disciples to keep a small boat close by, for fear the crowd should crush him. For he had cured many of them, and so people kept crowding upon him, that all who were afflicted might touch him. The foul spirits, too, whenever they caught sight of him, flung themselves down before him, and screamed out: “You are the Son of God”! But he repeatedly warned them not to make him known. 7 8 9 10 11 12

Jesus made his way up the hill, and called those whom he wished; and they went to him. He appointed twelve — whom he also named ‘Apostles’ — that they might be with him, and that he might send them out as his Messengers, to preach, and with power to drive 13 14 15

16 out demons. So he appointed the Twelve — Peter (which was the  
17 name that Jesus gave to Simon), James, the son of Zebediah, and his  
brother John (to whom he gave the name of Boanerges, which means  
18 the Thunderers), Andrew, Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas,  
19 James the son of Alphaeus, Thaddaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas  
Iscariot, the man that betrayed him.

20 Jesus went into a house; and again a crowd collected, so that they  
21 were not able even to eat their food. When his relations heard of it,  
they went to take charge of him, for they said that he was out of his  
mind.

22 The Teachers of the Law, who had come down from Jerusalem,  
said: "He has Baal-zebub in him, and he drives the demons out by  
23 the help of Baal-zebub, their chief." So Jesus called them to him,  
and answered them in parables: "How can Satan drive out Satan?  
24 When a kingdom is divided against itself, it cannot last; and when  
25 a household is divided against itself, it will not be able to last. So,  
if Satan is in revolt against himself and is divided, he cannot last —  
his end has come!

27 "No man who has got into a strong man's house can carry off his  
goods, without first securing him; and not till then will he plunder  
28 his house. I tell you that people will be forgiven everything — their  
29 sins, and all the slanders that they utter; but whoever slanders the  
Holy Spirit remains unforgiven to the end; he has to answer for an  
30 enduring sin." This was said in reply to the charge that he had a  
31 foul spirit in him. His mother and his brothers came, and stood out-  
32 side, and sent to ask him to come to them. There was a crowd sitting  
round Jesus, and some of them said to him: "Look, your mother and  
33 your brothers are outside, asking for you." "Who is my mother? and  
34 my brothers?" was his reply. Then he looked around on the people  
sitting in a circle round him, and said: "Here are my mother and my  
35 brothers! Whoever does the will of God is my brother and sister and  
mother."

JESUS AGAIN BEGAN TO TEACH BY THE SEA; and, as an immense 4  
crowd was gathering round him, he got into a boat, and sat in it on  
the Sea, while all the people were on the shore at the water's edge.

Then he taught them many truths in parables; and in the course 2  
of his teaching he said to them:

"Listen! The sower went out to sow; and presently, as he was sow- 3  
ing, some of the seed fell along the path; and the birds came, and ate  
it up. Some fell on rocky ground, where it had not much soil, and, 5  
having no depth of soil, sprang up at once; but, when the sun rose, 6  
it was scorched, and, having no root, withered away. Some of the 7  
seed fell among brambles; but the brambles shot up and completely  
choked it, and it yielded no return. Some fell into good soil, and, 8  
shooting up and growing, yielded a return, amounting to thirty,  
sixty, and even a hundred fold." And Jesus said: "Let any one who 9  
has ears to hear with hear."

Afterwards, when he was alone, his followers and the Twelve 10  
asked him about his parables; and he said: "To you the hidden 11  
truth of the Kingdom of God has been imparted; but to those who  
are outside it all teaching takes the form of parables, that —  
'Though they have eyes, they may see without perceiving; and 12  
though they have ears, they may hear without understanding;  
otherwise some day they might turn and be forgiven.'

"You do not know the meaning of this parable!" he went on; 13  
"Then how will you understand all the other parables? The sower 14  
sows the Message. The People meant by the seed that falls along 15  
the path are these — where the Message is sown, but, as soon as  
they have heard it, Satan immediately comes and carries away the  
Message that has been sown in them. So, too, those meant by the 16  
seed sown on the rocky places are the people who, when they have  
heard the Message, at once accept it joyfully; but, as they have no 17  
root, they stand only for a short time; and so, when trouble or  
persecution arises on account of the Message, they fall away at  
once. Those meant by the seed sown among the brambles are 18  
different; they are the people who hear the Message, but the cares 19  
of life, and the glamour of wealth, and cravings for many other

things come in and completely choke the Message, so that it gives  
20 no return. But the people meant by the seed sown on the good  
ground are those who hear the Message, and welcome it, and yield  
a return, thirty, sixty, and even a hundred fold."

21 Jesus said to them: "Is a lamp brought to be put under the  
corn-measure or under the couch, instead of being put on the  
22 lampstand? Nothing is hidden unless it is some day to come to  
light, nor was anything ever kept hidden but that it should some  
23 day come into the light of day. Let all who have ears to hear with  
hear.

24 Take care what you listen to," said Jesus. "The measure you mete  
25 will be meted out to you, and more will be added for you. For, to  
those who have, more will be given; while, from those who have  
nothing, even what they have will be taken away."

26 Jesus also said: "This is what the Kingdom of God is like — like  
27 a man who has scattered seed on the ground, and then sleeps by  
night and rises by day, while the seed is shooting up and growing  
28 — he knows not how. The ground bears the crop of itself — first the  
29 blade, then the ear, and then the full grain in the ear; but, as soon as  
the crop is ready, immediately he 'puts in the sickle because harvest  
has come'."

30 Jesus also said: "To what can we liken the Kingdom of God? By  
what can we illustrate it? Perhaps by the growth of a mustard-seed.  
This seed, when sown in the ground, though it is smaller than all  
32 other seeds, yet, when sown, shoots up, and becomes larger than  
any other herb, and puts out great branches, so that even 'the wild  
birds can roost in its shelter.'"

33 With many such parables Jesus used to speak to the people of his  
34 Message, as far as they were able to receive it; and to them he never  
used to speak except in parables; but in private to his own disciples  
he explained everything.

35 IN THE EVENING OF THE SAME DAY, Jesus said to them: "Let us go  
36 across." So, leaving the crowd behind, they took him with them,  
37 just as he was, in the boat; and there were other boats with him. A

violent squall came on, and the waves kept dashing into the boat, so that the boat was actually filling. Jesus was in the stern asleep upon the cushion; and the disciples roused him and cried: "Teacher! is it nothing to you that we are lost?" Jesus rose and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea: "Hush! Be still!" Then the wind dropped, and a great calm followed. "Why are you so timid?" he exclaimed. "Have you no faith yet?" But they were struck with great awe, and said to one another: "Who can this be that even the wind and the sea obey him?"

They came to the other side of the Sea — the country of the Gerasenes; and, as soon as Jesus had got out of the boat, he met a man coming out of the tombs, who was under the power of a foul spirit, and who made his home in the tombs. No one had ever been able to secure him, even with a chain; for, though he had many times been left secured with fetters and chains, he had snapped the chains and broken the fetters to pieces, and no one could master him. Night and day alike, he was continually shrieking in the tombs and among the hills, and cutting himself with stones. Catching sight of Jesus from a distance, he ran and bowed to the ground before him, shrieking out in a loud voice: "What do you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? For God's sake do not torment me!" For Jesus had said: "Come out from the man, you foul spirit." And he asked him: "What is your name?" "My name," he said, "is Legion, for there are many of us;" and he begged Jesus again and again not to send them away out of that country.

There was a large drove of pigs close by, feeding on the hillside; and the spirits begged Jesus: "Send us into the pigs, that we may take possession of them." Jesus gave them leave. They came out, and entered into the pigs; and the drove — about two thousand in number — rushed down the steep slope into the Sea and were drowned in the Sea.

On this the men who tended them ran away, and carried the news to the town, and to the country round; and the people went to see what had happened. When they came to Jesus, they found the possessed man sitting there, clothed and in his right mind — the very

man who had had the 'Legion' in him — and they were awe-struck.

16 Then those who had seen it related to them all that had happened  
17 to the possessed man, as well as about the pigs; upon which they  
began to beg Jesus to leave their neighborhood.

18 As Jesus was getting into the boat, the possessed man begged him  
19 to let him stay with him. But Jesus refused. "Go back to your home,  
to your own people," he said, "and tell them of all that the Lord has  
20 done for you, and how he took pity on you." So the man went, and  
began to proclaim in the district of the Ten Towns all that Jesus had  
done for him; and every one was amazed.

21 By the time Jesus had re-crossed in the boat to the opposite shore,  
a great number of people had gathered to meet him, and were stand-  
22 ing by the Sea. One of the Presidents of the Synagogue, whose name  
was Jairus, came and, as soon as he saw Jesus, threw himself at his  
23 feet with repeated entreaties. "My little daughter," he said, "is at the  
point of death; I beg you to come and place your hands on her, that  
24 her life may be spared." So Jesus went with him. A great number of  
People followed Jesus, and kept pressing round him.

25 Meanwhile a woman who for twelve years had suffered from  
26 hemorrhage, and undergone much at the hands of many doctors,  
(spending all she had without obtaining any relief, but, on the  
27 contrary, growing worse), heard about Jesus, came behind in the  
28 crowd, and touched his cloak. "If I can only touch his clothes," she  
29 said, "I shall get well!" At once the mischief was stopped, and she  
30 felt in herself that she was cured of her complaint. Jesus at once  
became aware of the power that had gone out from him, and,  
turning round in the crowd, he said: "Who touched my clothes?"  
31 "You see the people pressing round you," exclaimed his disciples,  
32 "and yet you say 'Who touched me?'" But Jesus looked about to  
33 see who had done it. Then the woman, in fear and trembling,  
knowing what had happened to her, came and threw herself down  
34 before him, and told him the whole truth. "Daughter," he said,  
"your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you; be free  
from your complaint."

Before he had finished speaking, some people from the house 35  
of the President of the Synagogue came and said: "Your daugh- 36  
ter is dead! Why should you trouble the Teacher further?" But Je- 37  
sus, overhearing what they were saying, said to the President of the 38  
Synagogue: "Do not be afraid; only have faith." And he allowed no 39  
one to accompany him, except Peter, James, and John, the brother 40  
of James. Presently they reached the President's house, where Jesus 41  
saw a scene of confusion — people weeping and wailing incessantly. 42  
"Why this confusion and weeping?" he said on entering. "The little 43  
child is not dead; she is asleep." They began to laugh at him; but he 44  
sent them all out, and then, with the child's father and mother and 45  
his companions, went into the room where she was lying. Taking 46  
her hand, Jesus said to her: "Taleitha, koum!" — which means 'little 47  
girl, I am speaking to you — Rise!' The little girl stood up at once, 48  
and began to walk about; for she was twelve years old. And, as soon 49  
as they saw it, they were overwhelmed with amazement; but Jesus 50  
repeatedly cautioned them not to let any one know of it, and told 51  
them to give her something to eat.

On leaving that place, Jesus, followed by his disciples, went to his 6  
own part of the country. When the Sabbath came, he began to teach 2  
in the Synagogue; and the people, as they listened, were deeply im-  
pressed. "Where did he get this?" they said, "and what is this wis-  
dom that has been given him? and these miracles which he is doing?  
Is not he the carpenter, the son of Mary, and the brother of James, 3  
and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? And are not his sisters, too, living  
here among us?" This proved a hindrance to their believing in him;  
on which Jesus said: "A prophet is not without honour, except in his 4  
own country, and among his own relations, and in his own home."  
And he could not work any miracle there, beyond placing his hands 5  
upon a few infirm persons, and curing them; and he wondered at 6  
the want of faith shown by the people. Jesus went round the villages,  
one after another, teaching.

7 HE CALLED THE TWELVE TO HIM, and began to send them out as his  
8 Messengers, two and two, and gave them authority over foul spir-  
9 its. He instructed them to take nothing but a staff for the journey-  
10 -not even bread, or a bag, or pence in their purse; but they were to  
11 wear sandals, and not to put on a second coat. "Whenever you go  
12 to stay at a house," he said, "remain there till you leave that place;  
13 and if a place does not welcome you, or listen to you, as you go out  
14 of it shake off the dust that is on the soles of your feet, as a protest  
15 against them." So they set out, and proclaimed the need of repen-  
16 tance. They drove out many demons, and anointed with oil many  
17 who were infirm, and cured them.

14 Now King Herod heard of Jesus; for his name had become well  
known. People were saying — "John the Baptizer must have risen  
15 from the dead, and that is why these miraculous powers are active  
16 in him." Others again said — "He is Elijah," and others — "He is a  
17 Prophet, like one of the great Prophets." But when Herod heard of  
him, he said — "The man whom I beheaded — John — he must be  
risen!"

17 For Herod himself had sent and arrested John, and put him in  
18 prison, in chains, to please Herodias, the wife of his brother Philip,  
19 because Herod had married her. For John had said to Herod — "You  
20 have no right to be living with your brother's wife." So Herodias  
was incensed against John, and wanted to put him to death, but was  
21 unable to do so, because Herod stood in fear of John, knowing him to  
22 be an upright and holy man, and protected him. He had listened to  
23 John, but still remained much perplexed, and yet he found pleasure  
24 in listening to him.

21 A suitable opportunity, however, occurred when Herod, on his  
birthday, gave a dinner to his high officials, and his generals, and the  
22 foremost men in Galilee. When his daughter — that is, the daugh-  
23 ter of Herodias — came in and danced, she delighted Herod and  
those who were dining with him. "Ask me for whatever you like,"  
24 the King said to the girl, "and I will give it to you"; and he swore to  
her that he would give her whatever she asked him — up to half his  
kingdom. The girl went out, and said to her mother "What must I



ask for?" "The head of John the Baptizer," answered her mother. So 25  
she went in as quickly as possible to the King, and made her request.  
"I want you," she said, "to give me at once, on a dish, the head of  
John the Baptist." The King was much distressed; yet, on account of 26  
his oath and of the guests at his table, he did not like to refuse her.  
He immediately dispatched one of his bodyguard, with orders to 27  
bring John's head. The man went and beheaded John in the prison,  
and, bringing his head on a dish, gave it to the girl, and the girl gave 28  
it to her mother.

When John's disciples heard of it, they came and took his body 29  
away, and laid it in a tomb.

When the Apostles came back to Jesus, they told him all that they 30  
had done and all that they had taught. "Come by yourselves pri- 31  
vately to some lonely spot," he said, "and rest for a while" — for  
there were so many people coming and going that they had not time  
even to eat. So they set off privately in their boat for a lonely spot. 32  
Many people saw them going, and recognized them, and from all 33  
the towns they flocked together to the place on foot, and got there  
before them. On getting out of the boat, Jesus saw a great crowd, 34  
and his heart was moved at the sight of them, because they were 'like  
sheep without a shepherd'; and he began to teach them many things.  
When it grew late, his disciples came up to him, and said: "This is 35  
a lonely spot, and it is already late. Send the people away, so that 36  
they may go to the farms and villages around and buy themselves  
something to eat." But Jesus answered: "It is for you to give them 37  
something to eat." "Are we to go and buy twenty pounds' worth of  
bread," they asked, "to give them to eat?" "How many loaves have 38  
you?" he asked; "Go, and see." When they had found out, they told  
him: "Five, and two fishes." Jesus directed them to make all the peo- 39  
ple take their seats on the green grass, in parties; and they sat down 40  
in groups — in hundreds, and in fifties. Taking the five loaves and 41  
the two fishes, Jesus looked up to Heaven, and said the blessing; he  
broke the loaves into pieces, and gave them to his disciples for them  
to serve out to the people, and he divided the two fishes also among 42  
them all. Every one had sufficient to eat; and they picked up enough

44 broken pieces to fill twelve baskets, as well as some of the fish. The  
people who ate the bread were five thousand in number.

45 Immediately afterwards Jesus made his disciples get into the boat,  
and cross over in advance, in the direction of Bethsaida, while he  
46 himself was dismissing the crowd. After he had taken leave of the  
47 people, he went away up the hill to pray. When evening fell, the boat  
48 was out in the middle of the Sea, and Jesus on the shore alone. Seeing  
them laboring at the oars — for the wind was against them — about  
three hours after midnight Jesus came towards them, walking on  
49 the water, intending to join them. But, when they saw him walking  
50 on the water, they thought it was a ghost, and cried out; for all of  
them saw him, and were terrified. But Jesus at once spoke to them.  
51 “Courage!” he said, “it is I; do not be afraid!” Then he got into the  
boat with them, and the wind dropped. The disciples were utterly  
52 amazed, for they had not understood about the loaves, their minds  
53 being slow to learn. When they had crossed over, they landed at  
54 Gennesaret, and moored the boat. But they had no sooner left her  
55 than the people, recognizing Jesus, hurried over the whole coun-  
try-side, and began to carry about upon mats those who were ill,  
56 wherever they heard he was. So wherever he went — to villages, or  
towns, or farms — they would lay their sick in the market-places,  
begging him to let them touch only the tassel of his cloak; and all  
who touched were made well.

7 ONE DAY THE PHARISEES and some of the Teachers of the Law  
2 who had come from Jerusalem gathered round Jesus. They had  
noticed that some of his disciples ate their food with their hands  
3 ‘defiled,’ by which they meant unwashed. (For the Pharisees, and  
indeed all strict Jews, will not eat without first scrupulously  
washing their hands, holding in this to the traditions of their  
4 ancestors. When they come from market, they will not eat without  
first sprinkling themselves; and there are many other customs  
which they have inherited and hold to, such as the ceremonial  
5 washing of cups, and jugs, and copper pans). So the Pharisees and  
the Teachers of the Law asked Jesus this question — “How is it

that your disciples do not follow the traditions of our ancestors, but eat their food with defiled hands?" His answer was: "It was well said by Isaiah when he prophesied about you hypocrites in the words — 'This is a people that honor me with their lips, while their hearts are far removed from me; but vainly do they worship me, For they teach but human precepts.' You neglect God's commandments and hold to human traditions. Wisely do you set aside God's commandments," he exclaimed, "to keep your own traditions! For while Moses said 'Honor your father and your mother,' and 'Let anyone who abuses their father or mother suffer death,' you say 'If a person says to their father or mother "Whatever of mine might have been of service to you is Korban"' (which means 'Given to God') — why, then you do not allow them to do anything further for their father or mother! In this way you nullify the words of God by your traditions, which you hand down; and you do many similar things."

Then Jesus called the people to him again, and said: "Listen to me, all of you, and mark my words. There is nothing external to a person, which by going into them can 'defile' them; but the things that come out from a person are the things that defile them."

When Jesus went indoors, away from the crowd, his disciples began questioning him about this saying. "What, do even you understand so little?" exclaimed Jesus. "Do not you see that there is nothing external to a person, which by going into a person, can 'defile' them, because it does not pass into his heart, but into his stomach, and is afterwards got rid of? — in saying this Jesus pronounced all food 'clean.' "It is what comes out from a person," he added, "that defiles them, for it is from within, out of the hearts of people, that there come evil thoughts — unchastity, theft, murder, adultery, greed, wickedness, deceit, indelicacy, envy, slander, haughtiness, folly; all these wicked things come from within, and do defile a person."

On leaving that place, Jesus went to the district of Tyre and Sidon. He went into a house, and did not wish anyone to know it, but could not escape notice. For a woman, whose little daughter had a foul

spirit in her, heard of him immediately, and came and threw herself  
26 at his feet — the woman was a foreigner, a native of Syrian Phoenicia  
27 — and she begged him to drive the demon out of her daughter. “Let  
the children be satisfied first,” answered Jesus. “For it is not fair to  
28 take the children’s food, and throw it to dogs.” “Yes, Master,” she  
replied; “even the dogs under the table do feed on the children’s  
29 crumbs.” “For saying that,” he answered, “you may go. The demon  
30 has gone out of your daughter.” The woman went home, and found  
the child lying on her bed, and the demon gone.

31 On returning from the district of Tyre, Jesus went, by way of  
Sidon, to the Sea of Galilee, across the district of the Ten Towns.  
32 Some people brought to him a man who was deaf and almost  
33 dumb, and they begged Jesus to place his hand on him. Jesus took  
him aside from the crowd quietly, put his fingers into the man’s  
34 ears, and touched his tongue with saliva. Then, looking up to  
Heaven, he sighed, and said to the man: “Ephphatha!” which  
35 means ‘Be opened.’ The man’s ears were opened, the string of his  
36 tongue was freed, and he began to talk plainly. Jesus insisted upon  
their not telling any one; but the more he insisted, the more  
37 perseveringly they made it known, and a profound impression  
was made upon the people. “He has done everything well!” they  
exclaimed. “He makes even the deaf hear and the dumb speak!”

8 ABOUT THAT TIME, when there was again a great crowd of people  
who had nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples to him, and said:  
2 “My heart is moved at the sight of all these people, for they have  
3 already been with me three days and they have nothing to eat; and  
if I send them away to their homes hungry, they will break down  
4 on the way; and some of them have come a long distance.” “Where  
will it be possible,” his disciples answered, “to get sufficient bread  
5 for these people in this lonely place?” “How many loaves have you?”  
6 he asked. “Seven,” they answered. Jesus told the crowd to sit down  
upon the ground. Then he took the seven loaves, and, after say-  
ing the thanksgiving, broke them, and gave them to his disciples  
7 to serve out; and they served them out to the crowd. They had also

a few small fish; and, after he had said the blessing, he told the disciples to serve out these as well. The people had sufficient to eat, 8  
and they picked up seven baskets full of the broken pieces that were 9  
left. There were about four thousand people. Then Jesus dismissed 10  
them. Immediately afterwards, getting into the boat with his disciples, Jesus went to the district of Dalmanutha.

Here the Pharisees came out, and began to argue with Jesus, asking him for some sign from the heavens, to test him. Sighing deeply, 11  
Jesus said: "Why does this generation ask for a sign? I tell you, no 12  
sign shall be given it." So he left them to themselves, and, getting 13  
into the boat again, went away to the opposite shore.

Now the disciples had forgotten to take any bread with them, one 14  
loaf being all that they had in the boat. So Jesus gave them this warning. "Take care," he said, "beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and 15  
the leaven of Herod." They began talking to one another about their 16  
being short of bread; and, noticing this, Jesus said to them: "Why 17  
are you talking about your being short of bread? Do not you yet see or understand? Are your minds still so slow or comprehension? 18  
"Though you have eyes, do you not see? and though you have ears, 19  
do you not hear? Do not you remember, when I broke up the five 20  
loaves for the five thousand, how many baskets of broken pieces you picked up?" "Twelve," they said. "And when the seven for the four 21  
thousand, how many basketfuls of broken pieces did you pick up?" "Seven," they said. "Do not you understand now?" he repeated. 22

They came to Bethsaida. There some people brought a blind man 23  
to Jesus, and begged him to touch him. Taking the blind man's hand, 24  
Jesus led him to the outskirts of the village, and, when he had put saliva on the man's eyes, he placed his hands on him, and asked him: "Do you see anything?" The man looked up, and said: "I see 25  
the people, for, as they walk about, they look to me like trees." Then 26  
Jesus again placed his hands on the man's eyes; and the man saw clearly, his sight was restored, and he saw everything with perfect distinctness. Jesus sent him to his home, and said: "Do not go even 26  
into the village."

27 AFTERWARDS JESUS and his disciples went into the villages round  
Caesarea Philippi; and on the way he asked his disciples this ques-  
28 tion — “Who do people say that I am?” “John the Baptist,” they an-  
swered, “but others say Elijah, while others say one of the Prophets.”  
29 “But you,” he asked, “who do you say that I am?” To this Peter  
30 replied: “You are the Christ.” On which Jesus charged them not to  
31 say this about him to anyone. Then he began to teach them that the  
Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and that he must be re-  
jected by the Councillors, and the Chief Priests, and the Teachers of  
32 the Law, and be put to death, and rise again after three days. This  
statement he made openly. But Peter took Jesus aside, and began to  
33 rebuke him. Jesus, however, turning round and seeing his disciples,  
rebuked Peter. “Out of my sight, Satan!” he exclaimed. “For you look  
at things, not as God does, but as people do.”

34 Calling the people and his disciples to him, Jesus said: “If anyone  
wishes to walk in my steps, let them renounce self, take up their  
35 cross, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save their life will lose  
it, and whoever, for my sake and for the sake of the Good News, will  
36 lose their life shall save it. What good is it to a person to gain the  
37 whole world and forfeit their life? For what could a person give that  
38 is of equal value with their life? Whoever is ashamed of me and of  
my teaching, in this unfaithful and wicked generation, of them will  
the Son of Man be ashamed, when he comes in his Father’s Glory  
with the holy angels.”

9 “I tell you,” he added, “that some of those who are standing here  
will not know death till they have seen the Kingdom of God come  
in power.”

2 Six days later, Jesus took with him Peter, James, and John, and led  
them up a high mountain alone by themselves. There his appear-  
3 ance was transformed before their eyes, and his clothes became of  
a more dazzling white than any bleacher in the world could make  
4 them. And Elijah appeared to them, in company with Moses; and  
5 they were talking with Jesus. “Rabbi,” said Peter, interposing, “it  
is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for you, one for  
6 Moses, and one for Elijah.” For he did not know what to say, because

they were much afraid. Then a cloud came down and enveloped 7  
 them; and from the cloud there came a voice — "This is my Son,  
 the Beloved; him you must hear." And suddenly, on looking round, 8  
 they saw that there was now no one with them but Jesus alone.

As they were going down the mountain-side, Jesus cautioned 9  
 them not to relate what they had seen to any one, till after the Son  
 of Man should have risen again from the dead. They seized upon 10  
 these words and discussed with one another what this 'rising from  
 the dead' meant. "How is it," they asked Jesus, "that our Teachers 11  
 of the Law say that Elijah has to come first?" "Elijah does indeed 12  
 come first," answered Jesus, "and re-establish everything; and  
 does not Scripture speak, with regard to the Son of Man, of his 13  
 undergoing much suffering and being utterly despised? But I tell  
 you that Elijah has come, and people have treated him just as they  
 pleased, as Scripture says of him."

When they came to the other disciples, they saw a great crowd 14  
 round them, and some Teachers of the Law arguing with them. But, 15  
 as soon as they saw Jesus, all the people, in great astonishment, ran  
 up and greeted him. "What are you arguing about with them?" Je- 16  
 sus asked. "Teacher," answered a man in the crowd, "I brought my 17  
 son to see you, as he has a dumb spirit in him; and, wherever it 18  
 seizes him, it dashes him down; he foams at the mouth and grinds  
 his teeth, and he is pining away. I asked your disciples to drive the  
 spirit out, but they failed." "O faithless generation!" exclaimed Je- 19  
 sus. "How long must I be with you? how long must I have patience  
 with you? Bring the boy to me." They brought him to Jesus; but no 20  
 sooner did the boy see him than the spirit threw him into convul-  
 sions; and he fell on the ground, and rolled about, foaming at the  
 mouth. "How long has he been like this?" Jesus asked the boy's fa- 21  
 ther. "From his childhood," he answered; "and it has often thrown 22  
 him into fire and into water to put an end to his life; but, if you can  
 possibly do anything, take pity on us, and help us!" Why say 'possi- 23  
 bly'?" Jesus replied. "Everything is possible for one who has faith."  
 The boy's father immediately cried out: "I have faith; help my want 24  
 of faith!" But, when Jesus saw that a crowd was quickly collecting, 25

he rebuked the foul spirit: "Deaf and dumb spirit, it is I who command you. Come out from him and never enter him again." With a loud cry the spirit threw the boy into repeated convulsions, and then came out from him. The boy looked like a corpse, so that most of them said that he was dead. But Jesus took his hand, and lifted him; and he stood up.

When Jesus had gone indoors, his disciples asked him privately: "Why could not we drive it out?" "A spirit of this kind," he said, "can be driven out only by prayer."

LEAVING THAT PLACE, Jesus and his disciples went on their way through Galilee; but he did not wish any one to know it, for he was instructing his disciples, and telling them — "The Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of his fellow men, and they will put him to death, but, when he has been put to death, he will rise again after three days." But the disciples did not understand his meaning and were afraid to question him.

They came to Capernaum. When Jesus had gone into the house, he asked them: "What were you discussing on the way?" But they were silent; for on the way they had been arguing with one another which was the greatest. Sitting down, Jesus called the Twelve and said: "If any one wishes to be first, he must be last of all, and servant of all." Then Jesus took a little child, and placed it in the middle of them. Folding it in his arms, he said to them: "Any one who, for the sake of my Name, welcomes even a little child like this is welcoming me, and any one who welcomes me is welcoming not me, but him who sent me as his Messenger."

"Teacher," said John, "we saw a man driving out demons by using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he did not follow us." "None of you must prevent the man," answered Jesus, "for no one will use my name in working a miracle, and yet find it easy to speak evil of me. He who is not against us is for us. If any one gives you a cup of water because you belong to Christ, I tell you, he shall assuredly not lose his reward."



'And, if any one puts a snare in the way of one of these lowly ones 42  
who believe in me, it would be far better for him if he had been  
thrown into the sea with a great millstone round his neck. If your 43  
hand proves a snare to you, cut it off. It would be better for you to  
enter the Life maimed, than to have both your hands and go into  
Gehenna, into the inextinguishable fire. If your foot proves a snare 45  
to you, cut it off. It would be better for you to enter the Life lame,  
than to have both your feet and be thrown into Gehenna. If your eye 47  
proves a snare to you, tear it out. It would be better for you to enter  
the Kingdom of God with only one eye, than to have both eyes and  
be thrown into Gehenna, where 'their worm does not die, and the 48  
fire is not put out.'

'For it is by fire that every one will be salted. 49

'Salt is good, but, if the salt should lose its saltiness, what will you 50  
use to season it?

'You must have salt in yourselves, and live at peace with one an-  
other.'

### *The Journey to Jerusalem*

On leaving that place, Jesus went into the district of Judea on 10  
the other side of the Jordan. Crowds gathered about him again; and  
again, as usual, he began teaching them. Presently some Pharisees 2  
came up and, to test him, asked: "Has a husband the right to di-  
vorce his wife?" "What direction did Moses give you?" replied Je- 3  
sus. "Moses," they said, "permitted a man to 'draw up in writing 4  
a notice of separation and divorce his wife.'" "It was owing to the 5  
hardness of your hearts," said Jesus, "that Moses gave you this di-  
rection; but, at the beginning of the Creation, God 'made them male 6  
and female.' 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother, 7  
and the man and his wife shall become one;' so that they are no 8  
longer two, but one. What God himself, then, has yoked together no 9  
one must separate."

When they were indoors, the disciples asked him again about this, 10  
and he said: "Any one who divorces his wife and marries another 11

12 woman is guilty of adultery against his wife; and, if the woman divorces her husband and marries another man, she is guilty of adultery."

13 Some of the people were bringing little children to Jesus, for him to touch them; but the disciples found fault with those who had brought them. When, however, Jesus saw this, he was indignant. 14 "Let the little children come to me," he said, "do not hinder them; 15 for it is to the childlike that the Kingdom of God belongs. I tell you, unless a person receives the Kingdom of God like a child, they will 16 not enter it at all." Then he folded the children in his arms, and, placing his hands on them, gave them his blessing.

17 As Jesus was resuming his journey, a man came running up to him, and threw himself on his knees before him. "Good Teacher," 18 he asked, "what must I do to gain eternal life?" "Why do you call 19 me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is good but God. You know the commandments — 'Do not kill. Do not commit adultery. Do not steal. Do not say what is false about others. Do not cheat. Honor your 20 father and your mother.'" "Teacher," he replied, "I have observed all 21 these from my childhood." Jesus looked at the man, and his heart went out to him, and he said: "There is still one thing wanting in you; go and sell all that you have, and give to the poor, and you 22 shall have wealth in Heaven; then come and follow me." But the man's face clouded at these words, and he went away distressed, for he had great possessions.

23 Then Jesus looked round, and said to his disciples: "How hard it 24 will be for people of wealth to enter the Kingdom of God!" The disciples were amazed at his words. But Jesus said again: "My children, 25 how hard a thing it is to enter the Kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to get through a needle's eye, than for a rich person to enter 26 the Kingdom of God." "Then who can be saved?" they exclaimed 27 in the greatest astonishment. Jesus looked at them, and answered: "With people it is impossible, but not with God; for everything is possible with God."

28 "But we," began Peter, "we left everything and have followed 29 you." "I tell you," said Jesus, "there is no one who has left house,

or brothers, or sisters, or mother, or father, or children, or land, on my account and on account of the Good News, who will not receive a hundred times as much, even now in the present — houses, and brothers, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and land — though not without persecutions, and, in the age that is coming, eternal life. But many who are first now will then be last, and the last will be first.”

ONE DAY, when they were on their way, going up to Jerusalem, Jesus was walking in front of the Apostles, who were filled with misgivings; while those who were following behind were alarmed. Gathering the Twelve round him once more, Jesus began to tell them what was about to happen to him. “Listen!” he said. “We are going up to Jerusalem; and there the Son of Man will be betrayed to the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law, and they will condemn him to death, and they will give him up to the Gentiles, who will mock him, spit upon him, and scourge him, and put him to death; and after three days he will rise again.”

James and John, the two sons of Zebediah, went to Jesus, and said: “Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever we ask.” “What do you want me to do for you?” he asked. “Grant us this,” they answered, “to sit, one on your right, and the other on your left, when you come in glory.” “You do not know what you are asking,” Jesus said to them. “Can you drink the cup that I am to drink? or receive the baptism that I am to receive?” “Yes,” they answered, “we can.” “You shall indeed drink the cup that I am to drink,” Jesus said, “and receive the baptism that I am to receive, but as to a seat at my right or at my left — that is not mine to give, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared.”

On hearing of this, the ten others were at first very indignant about James and John. But Jesus called the ten to him, and said: “Those who are regarded as ruling among the Gentiles lord it over them, as you know, and their great men oppress them. But among you it is not so. No, whoever wants to become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wants to take the first place among

- 45 you must be the servant of all; for even the Son of Man came, not be served, but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many.”
- 46 They came to Jericho. When Jesus was going out of the town with his disciples and a large crowd, Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus, a
- 47 blind beggar, was sitting by the road-side. Hearing that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to call out: “Jesus, Son of David, take pity on
- 48 me.” Many of the people kept telling him to be quiet; but the man continued to call out all the louder: “Son of David, take pity on me.”
- 49 Then Jesus stopped. “Call him,” he said. So they called the blind
- 50 man. “Courage!” they exclaimed. “Get up; he is calling you.” The
- 51 man threw off his cloak, sprang up, and came to Jesus. “What do you want me to do for you?” said Jesus, addressing him. “Rabboni,” the
- 52 blind man answered, “I want to recover my sight.” “You may go,” Jesus said; “your faith has delivered you.” Immediately he recovered his sight, and began to follow Jesus along the road.

*The Last Days*

- 11 When they had almost reached Jerusalem, as far as Bethphage and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, Jesus sent on two of his
- 2 disciples. “Go to the village facing you,” he said; “and, as soon as you get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has ever ridden;
- 3 untie it, and bring it. And, if any one says to you ‘Why are you doing that?’, say ‘The Master wants it, and will be sure to send it back here
- 4 at once.’” The two disciples went, and, finding a foal tethered outside a door in the street, they untied it. Some of the by-standers said
- 5 to them: “What are you doing, untying the foal?” And the two disciples answered as Jesus had told them; and they allowed them to go.
- 7 Then they brought the foal to Jesus, and, when they had laid their
- 8 cloaks on it, he seated himself upon it. Many of the people spread their cloaks on the road, while some strewed boughs which they
- 9 had cut from the fields; and those who led the way, as well as those who followed, kept shouting: “‘God save him! Blessed is He who
- 10 comes in the name of the Lord!’ Blessed is the coming Kingdom of our father David! ‘God save him from on high!’”

Jesus entered Jerusalem, and went into the Temple Courts; and, 11  
after looking round at everything, as it was already late, he went out  
to Bethany with the Twelve.

The next day, after they had left Bethany, Jesus became hungry; 12  
and, noticing a fig-tree at a distance in leaf, he went to it to see if by 13  
any chance he could find something on it; but, on coming up to it,  
he found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs. So, 14  
addressing the tree, he exclaimed: "May no one ever again eat of  
your fruit!" And his disciples heard what he said.

They came to Jerusalem. Jesus went into the Temple Courts, and 15  
began to drive out those who were buying and selling there. He  
overturned the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of the pi- 16  
geon-dealers, and would not allow any one to carry anything across 17  
the Temple Courts. Then he began to teach. "Does not Scripture say," 18  
he asked, "'My House shall be called a House of Prayer for all the  
nations'? But you have made it a den of robbers.'" Now the Chief 18  
Priests and the Teachers of the Law heard this and began to look  
for some way of putting Jesus to death; for they were afraid of him,  
since all the people were greatly impressed by his teaching. As soon 19  
as evening fell, Jesus and his disciples went out of the city.

As they passed by early in the morning, they noticed that the 20  
fig-tree was withered up from the very roots. Then Peter remem- 21  
bered what had occurred. "Look, Rabbi," he exclaimed, "the fig-tree  
which you doomed is withered up!" "Have faith in God!" replied 22  
Jesus. "I tell you that if any one should say to this hill 'Be lifted up 23  
and hurled into the sea!', without ever a doubt in his mind, but in  
the faith that what he says will be done, he would find that it would  
be. And therefore I say to you 'Have faith that whatever you ask for 24  
in prayer is already granted you, and you will find that it will be.'

'And, whenever you stand up to pray, forgive any grievance that 25  
you have against any one, that your Father who is in Heaven also  
may forgive you your offenses."

THEY CAME TO JERUSALEM AGAIN. WHILE JESUS was walking 27  
about in the Temple Courts, the Chief Priests, the Teachers of the

28 Law, and the Councillors came up to him. "What authority have  
you to do these things?" they said. "Who gave you the authority to  
29 do them?" "I will put one question to you," said Jesus. "Answer me  
30 that, and then I will tell you what authority I have to act as I do. It  
is about John's baptism. Was it of divine or human origin? Answer  
31 me that." They began arguing together; "If we say 'divine,' he will  
32 say 'Why then did not you believe him?' Yet can we say 'human?'"  
— They were afraid of the people, for everyone regarded John as  
33 undoubtedly a Prophet. So their answer to Jesus was — "We do  
not know." "Then I," replied Jesus, "refuse to tell you what  
authority I have to do these things."

12 Jesus began to speak to them in parables: "A man once planted  
a vineyard, put a fence round it, dug a wine-press, built a tower,  
2 and then let it out to tenants and went abroad. At the proper time  
he sent a servant to the tenants, to receive from them a share of the  
3 produce of the vintage; but they seized him, and beat him, and sent  
4 him away empty-handed. A second time the owner sent a servant to  
5 them; this man, too, the tenants struck on the head, and insulted. He  
sent another, but him they killed; and so with many others—some  
6 they beat and some they killed. He had still one son, who was very  
dear to him; and him he sent to them last of all. 'They will respect  
7 my son,' he said. But those tenants said to one another 'Here is the  
8 heir! Come, let us kill him, and his inheritance will be ours.' So they  
seized him, and killed him, and threw his body outside the vine-  
9 yard. What will the owner of the vineyard do? He will come and  
put the tenants to death, and he will let the vineyard to others.

10 'Have you never read this passage of Scripture? — 'The very stone  
which the builders despised has now itself become the corner-stone;  
11 this corner-stone has come from the Lord, and is marvelous in our  
eyes.'"

12 After this his enemies were eager to arrest him, but they were  
afraid of the crowd; for they saw that it was at them that he had  
aimed the parable. So they let him alone, and went away.

AFTERWARDS THEY SENT TO JESUS SOME OF THE Pharisees and of 13  
the Herodians, to set a trap for him in the course of conversation.  
These men came to him and said: "Teacher, we know that you are 14  
an honest man, and are not afraid of any one, for you pay no  
regard to a person's position, but teach the Way of God honestly;  
are we right in paying taxes to the Emperor, or not? Should we pay, 15  
or should we not pay?" Knowing their hypocrisy, Jesus said to  
them: "Why are you testing me? Bring me a florin to look at." And, 16  
when they had brought it, he asked: "Whose head and title are  
these?" "The Emperor's," they said; and Jesus replied: "Pay to the 17  
Emperor what belongs to the Emperor, and to God what belongs  
to God." And they wondered at him.

Next came some Sadducees — the men who maintain that there 18  
is no resurrection. Their question was this — "Teacher, in our 19  
Scriptures Moses decreed that, should a man's brother die, leaving  
a widow but no child, the man should take the widow as his wife,  
and raise up a family for his brother. There were once seven 20  
brothers; of whom the eldest took a wife, but died and left no  
family; and the second took her, and died without family; and so 21  
did the third. All the seven died and left no family. The woman  
herself died last of all. At the resurrection whose wife will she be, 22  
all seven brothers having had her as their wife?" "Is not the reason 23  
of your mistake," answered Jesus, "your ignorance of the 24  
Scriptures and of the power of God? When people rise from the 25  
dead, there is no marrying or being married; but they are as angels  
in Heaven.

"As to the dead, and the fact that they rise, have you never read 26  
in the Book of Moses, in the passage about the Bush, how God said  
to him — 'I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the  
God of Jacob'? He is not God of dead people, but of living. You are 27  
greatly mistaken."

Then came up one of the Teachers of the Law who had heard 28  
their discussions. Knowing that Jesus had answered them wisely,  
he asked him this question: "What is the first of all the command-  
ments?" "The first," answered Jesus, "is — 'Hear, O Israel; the Lord 29

30 our God is the one Lord; and you must love the Lord your God with  
31 all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind, and  
32 with all your strength.' The second is this — 'You must love your  
33 neighbor as you love yourself.' There is no commandment greater  
34 than these." "Wisely answered, Teacher!" exclaimed the Teacher of  
the Law. "It is true, as you say, that 'there is one God,' and that 'there  
35 is no other besides him'; and to 'love him with all one's heart, and  
with all one's understanding, and with all one's strength,' and to  
36 'love one's neighbor as one loves oneself' is far beyond all 'burnt-of-  
37 ferings and sacrifices.'" Seeing that he had answered with discern-  
ment, Jesus said to him: "You are not far from the Kingdom of God."  
After that no one ventured to question him further.

35 While Jesus was teaching in the Temple Courts, he asked: "How  
36 is it that the Teachers of the Law say that the Christ is to be David's  
37 son? David said himself, speaking under the inspiration of the Holy  
Spirit — 'The Lord said to my lord: "Sit at my right hand, until I put  
38 your enemies beneath your feet.'" David himself calls him 'lord,'  
how comes it, then, that he is to be his son?"

38 The mass of the people listened to Jesus with delight. In the course  
of his teaching, Jesus said: "See that you are on your guard against  
the Teachers of the Law, who delight to walk about in long robes,  
39 and to be greeted in the streets with respect, and to have the best  
40 seats in the Synagogues, and places of honor at dinner. They are the  
men that rob widows of their homes, and make a pretense of saying  
long prayers. Their sentence will be all the heavier."

41 Then Jesus sat down opposite the chests for the Temple offerings,  
and watched how the people put money into them. Many rich peo-  
42 ple were putting in large sums; but one poor widow came and put  
43 in two small coins, worth very little. On this, calling his disciples to  
him, Jesus said: "I tell you that this poor widow has put in more than  
44 all the others who were putting money into the chests; for every one  
else put in something from what he had to spare, while she, in her  
need, put in all she had — everything that she had to live on."



AS JESUS WAS WALKING OUT OF THE TEMPLE COURTS, one of his 13  
disciples said to him: "Teacher, look what fine stones and build-  
ings these are!" "Do you see these great buildings?" asked Jesus. 2  
"Not a single stone will be left here upon another, which shall not  
be thrown down."

When Jesus had sat down on the Mount of Olives, facing the Tem- 3  
ple, Peter, James, John and Andrew questioned him privately: "Tell 4  
us when this will be, and what will be the sign when all this is draw-  
ing to its close."

Then Jesus began: "See that no one leads you astray. Many will 5  
take my name, and come saying 'I am He', and will lead many astray.

"And, when you hear of wars and rumors of wars, do not be 7  
alarmed; such things must occur; but the end is not yet. For 'nation 8  
will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom'; there will  
be earthquakes in various places; there will be famines. This will  
be but the beginning of the birth-pangs.

"See to yourselves! They will betray you to courts of law; and you 9  
will be taken to Synagogues and beaten; and you will be brought up  
before governors and kings for my sake, that you may bear witness  
before them. But the Good News must first be proclaimed to every 10  
nation. Whenever they betray you and hand you over for trial, do not 11  
be anxious beforehand as to what you shall say, but say whatever is  
given you at the moment; for it will not be you who speak, but the  
Holy Spirit. Brother will betray brother to death, and the father his 12  
child; and children will turn against their parents, and cause them  
to be put to death; and you will be hated by every one on account 13  
of my Name. Yet the person that endures to the end shall be saved.

"As soon, however, as you see 'the Foul Desecration' standing 14  
where he ought not" (the reader must consider what this means)  
"then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the moun-  
tains; and a person on the house-top must not go down, or go in to 15  
get anything out of their house: nor must one who is on their farm 16  
turn back to get their cloak. And alas for the women that are with 17  
child, and for those that are nursing infants in those days! Pray, too, 18  
that this may not occur in winter. For those days will be a time of 19

- distress, the like of which has not occurred from the beginning of  
20 God's creation until now — and never will again. And, had not the  
Lord put a limit to those days, not a single soul would escape; but,  
for the sake of God's own chosen People, he did limit them.
- 21 "And at that time if any one should say to you 'Look, here is the  
22 Christ!' 'Look, there he is!', do not believe it; for false Christs and  
false Prophets will arise, and display signs and marvels, to lead  
23 astray, were it possible, even God's People. But see that you are on  
your guard! I have told you all this beforehand.
- 24 "In those days, after that time of distress, 'the sun will be dark-  
25 ened, the moon will not give her light, the stars will be falling from  
the heavens,' and 'the forces that are in the heavens will be con-  
26 vulsed.' Then will be seen the 'Son of Man coming in clouds' with  
27 great power and glory; and then he will send the angels, and gather  
his People from the four winds, from one end of the world to the  
other.
- 28 "Learn the lesson taught by the fig-tree. As soon as its branches  
are full of sap, and it is bursting into leaf, you know that summer is  
29 near. And so may you, as soon as you see these things happening,  
30 know that he is at your doors. I tell you that even the present gener-  
31 ation will not pass away, until all these things have taken place. The  
heavens and the earth will pass away, but my words will not pass  
away.
- 32 "But about 'That Day,' or 'The Hour,' no one knows — not even  
the angels in Heaven, nor yet the Son — but only the Father.
- 33 "See that you are on the watch; for you do not know when the  
34 time will be. It is like a man going on a journey, who leaves his home,  
puts his servants in charge — each having their special duty — and  
35 orders the porter to watch. Therefore watch, for you cannot be sure  
when the Master of the house is coming — whether in the evening,  
36 at midnight, at daybreak, or in the morning — otherwise he might  
37 come suddenly and find you asleep. And what I say to you I say to  
all — Watch!"

IT WAS NOW TWO DAYS BEFORE THE FESTIVAL OF the Passover 14  
and the Unleavened bread. The Chief Priests and the Teachers of  
the Law were looking for an opportunity to arrest Jesus by stealth,  
and to put him to death; for they said: "Not during the Festival, for 2  
fear of a riot."

When Jesus was still at Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, 3  
while he was at table, a woman came with an alabaster jar of choice  
spikenard perfume of great value. She broke the jar, and poured the  
perfume on his head. Some of those who were present said to one 4  
another indignantly: "Why has the perfume been wasted like this?  
This perfume could have been sold for more than thirty pounds, 5  
and the money given to the poor." "Let her alone," said Jesus, as 6  
they began to find fault with her, "why are you troubling her? This  
is a beautiful deed that she has done for me. You always have the 7  
poor with you, and whenever you wish you can do good to them;  
but you will not always have me. She has done what she could; she 8  
has perfumed my body beforehand for my burial. And I tell you, 9  
wherever, in the whole world, the Good News is proclaimed, what  
this woman has done will be told in memory of her."

After this, Judas Iscariot, one of the Twelve, went to the Chief 10  
Priests, to betray Jesus to them. They were glad to hear what he said, 11  
and promised to pay him. So he began looking for a good opportu-  
nity to betray Jesus.

ON THE FIRST DAY OF THE FESTIVAL OF THE UNLEAVENED bread, 12  
when it was customary to kill the Passover lambs, his disciples said  
to Jesus: "Where do you wish us to go and make preparations for  
your eating the Passover?" Jesus sent forward two of his disciples 13  
and said to them: "Go into the city, and there a man carrying a  
pitcher of water will meet you; follow him; and, wherever he goes 14  
in, say to the owner of the house 'The Teacher says — Where is my  
room where I am to eat the Passover with my disciples?' He will 15  
himself show you a large upstairs room, set out ready; and there  
make preparations for us." So the disciples set out and went into 16

the city, and found everything just as Jesus had told them; and they prepared the Passover.

18 In the evening he went there with the Twelve, and when they had taken their places and were eating, Jesus said: "I tell you that one of  
19 you is going to betray me — one who is eating with me." They were grieved at this, and began to say to him, one after another: "Can it  
20 be I?" "It is one of you Twelve," said Jesus, "the one who is dipping  
21 his bread beside me into the dish. True, the Son of Man must go, as Scripture says of him, yet alas for that man by whom the Son of Man is being betrayed! For that man 'it would be better never to have been born!'"

22 While they were eating, Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the blessing, broke it, and gave it to them, and said: "Take it; this is  
23 my body." Then he took a cup, and, after saying the thanksgiving,  
24 gave it to them, and they all drank from it. "This is my Covenant-blood," he said, "which is poured out on behalf of many.  
25 I tell you that I shall never again drink of the juice of the grape, until that day when I shall drink it new in the Kingdom of God."

26 They then sang a hymn, and went out up the Mount of Olives, presently Jesus said to them: "All of you will fall away; for Scripture says — 'I will strike down the Shepherd, and the sheep will be  
28 scattered.' Yet, after I have risen, I shall go before you into Galilee."  
29 "Even if every one else falls away," said Peter, "yet I shall not." "I tell you," answered Jesus, "that you yourself today — yes, this very night — before the cock crows twice, will disown me three times."  
31 But Peter vehemently protested: "Even if I must die with you, I shall never disown you!" And they all said the same.

32 PRESENTLY THEY CAME TO A GARDEN KNOWN AS Gethsemane, and Jesus said to his disciples "Sit down here while I pray." He took with him Peter, James, and John; and began to show signs of  
34 great dismay and deep distress of mind. "I am sad at heart," he said, "sad even to death; wait here, and watch." Going on a little further, he threw himself on the ground, and began to pray that, if  
36 it were possible, he might be spared that hour. "Abba, Father," he

said, "all things are possible to you; take away this cup from me; yet, not what I will, but what you will."

Then he came and found the three Apostles asleep. "Simon," he said to Peter, "are you asleep? Could not you watch for one hour? Watch and pray," he said to them all, "that you may not fall into temptation. True, the spirit is eager, but human nature is weak." Again he went away, and prayed in the same words; and coming back again he found them asleep, for their eyes were heavy; and they did not know what to say to him.

A third time he came, and said to them: "Sleep on now, and rest yourselves. Enough! My time has come. Hark! the Son of Man is being betrayed into the hands of wicked people. Up, and let us be going. Look! my betrayer is close at hand."

And just then, while he was still speaking, Judas, who was one of the Twelve, came up; and with him a crowd of people, with swords and clubs, sent by the Chief Priests, the Teachers of the Law, and the Councillors. Now the betrayer had arranged a signal with them. "The man whom I kiss," he had said, "will be the one; arrest him and take him away safely." As soon as Judas came, he went up to Jesus at once, and said: "Rabbi!" and kissed him. Then the men seized Jesus, and arrested him.

One of those who were standing by drew his sword, and struck at the High Priest's servant, and cut off his ear. But Jesus interposed, and said to the men: "Have you come out, as if after a robber, with swords and clubs, to take me? I have been among you day after day in the Temple Courts teaching, and yet you did not arrest me; but this is in fulfillment of the Scriptures." And all the Apostles forsook him, and fled. One young man did indeed follow him, wrapped only in a linen sheet. They tried to arrest him; but he left the sheet in their hands, and fled naked.

THEN THEY TOOK JESUS TO THE HIGH PRIEST; and all the Chief Priests, the Councillors, and the Teachers of the Law assembled. Peter, who had followed Jesus at a distance into the court-yard of

the High Priest, was sitting there among the police-officers, warming himself at the blaze of the fire.

55     Meanwhile the Chief Priest and the whole of the High Council  
were trying to get such evidence against Jesus as would warrant his  
56 being put to death, but they could not find any; for, though there  
were many who gave false evidence against him, yet their evidence  
57 did not agree. Presently some men stood up, and gave this false ev-  
58 idence against him — “We ourselves heard him say ‘I will destroy  
this Temple made with hands, and in three days build another made  
59 without hands.’” Yet not even on that point did their evidence agree.

60     Then the High Priest stood forward, and questioned Jesus. “Have  
you no answer to make?” he asked. “What is this evidence which  
61 these men are giving against you?” But Jesus remained silent, and  
made no answer.

A second time the High Priest questioned him. “Are you,” he asked,  
62 “the Christ, the Son of the Blessed One?” “I am,” replied Jesus, “and  
you shall all see the Son of Man sitting on the right hand of the  
63 Almighty; and ‘coming in the clouds of heaven’.” At this the High  
Priest tore his vestments. “Why do we want any more witnesses?”  
64 he exclaimed. “You heard his blasphemy? What is your verdict?”  
They all condemned him, declaring that he deserved death.

65     Some of those present began to spit at him, and to blindfold his  
eyes, and strike him, saying, as they did so, “Now play the Prophet!”  
and even the police-officers received him with blows.

66     While Peter was in the court-yard down below, one of the High  
67 Priest’s maidservants came up; and, seeing Peter warming himself,  
she looked closely at him, and exclaimed: “Why, you were with Je-  
68 sus, the Nazarene!” But Peter denied it. “I do not know or under-  
stand what you mean,” he replied. Then he went out into the porch;  
69 and there the maidservant, on seeing him, began to say again to the  
70 by-standers: “This is one of them!” But Peter again denied it.

Soon afterwards the bystanders again said to him: “You certainly  
71 are one of them; why you are a Galilean!” But he began to swear  
with the most solemn imprecations: “I do not know the man you  
72 are speaking about.” At that moment, for the second time, a cock

crowed; and Peter remembered the words that Jesus had said to him — ‘Before a cock has crowed twice, you will disown me three times’; and, as he thought of it, he began to weep.

AS SOON AS IT WAS DAYLIGHT, the Chief Priests, after holding a consultation with the Councillors and Teachers of the Law — that is to say, the whole High Council — put Jesus in chains, and took him away, and gave him up to Pilate. “Are you the King of the Jews?” asked Pilate. “It is true,” replied Jesus. Then the Chief Priests brought a number of charges against him; upon which Pilate questioned Jesus again. “Have you no reply to make?” he asked. “Listen, how many charges they are bringing against you.” But Jesus still made no reply whatever; at which Pilate was astonished.

Now, at the Feast, Pilate used to grant the people the release of any one prisoner whom they might ask for. A man called Barabbas was in prison, with the rioters who had committed murder during a riot. So, when the crowd went up and began to ask Pilate to follow his usual custom, he answered: “Do you want me to release the ‘King of the Jews’ for you?” For he was aware that it was out of jealousy that the Chief Priests had given Jesus up to him. But the Chief Priests incited the crowd to get Barabbas released instead. Pilate, however, spoke to them again: “What shall I do then with the man whom you call the ‘King of the Jews’?” Again they shouted: “Crucify him!” “Why, what harm has he done?” Pilate kept saying to them. But they shouted furiously: “Crucify him!” And Pilate, wishing to satisfy the crowd, released Barabbas to them, and, after scourging Jesus, gave him up to be crucified.

The soldiers then took Jesus away into the court-yard — that is the Government House — and they called the whole garrison together. They dressed him in a purple robe, and, having twisted a crown of thorns, put it on him, and then began to salute him. “Long life to you, King of the Jews!” they said. And they kept striking him on the head with a rod, spitting at him, and bowing to the ground before him — going down on their knees; and, when they had left

off mocking him, they took off the purple robe, and put his own clothes on him.

21 THEY LED JESUS OUT TO CRUCIFY HIM; and they compelled a passer-by, Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with them to carry his cross.

22 They brought Jesus to the place which was known as Golgotha  
23 — a name which means ‘Place of a Skull.’ There they offered him  
24 drugged wine; but Jesus refused it. Then they crucified him, and divided his clothes among them, casting lots for them, to settle what each should take.

25 It was nine in the morning when they crucified him. The words of the charge against him, written up over his head, read — ‘THE  
27 KING OF THE JEWS.’ And with him they crucified two robbers, one on the right, and the other on the left.

29 The passers-by railed at him, shaking their heads, as they said: “Ah! you who would destroy the Temple and build one in three  
30 days, come down from the cross and save yourself!” In the same way the Chief Priests, with the Teachers of the Law, said to one another in mockery: “He saved others, but he cannot save himself! Let the Christ, the ‘King of Israel,’ come down from the cross now, that we may see it and believe.” Even the men who had been crucified with Jesus insulted him.

33 At midday, a darkness came over the whole country, lasting till  
34 three in the afternoon. And, at three, Jesus called out loudly: ‘Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?’” which means ‘My God, my God, why have  
35 you forsaken me?’ Some of those standing round heard this, and  
36 said: “Listen! He is calling for Elijah!” And a man ran, and, soaking a sponge in common wine, put it on the end of a rod, and offered it to him to drink, saying as he did so: “Wait and let us see if Elijah is  
38 coming to take him down.” But Jesus, giving a loud cry, expired. The  
39 Temple curtain was torn in two from top to bottom. The Roman Officer, who was standing facing Jesus, on seeing the way in which he expired, exclaimed: “This man must indeed have been ‘God’s Son!’”



THERE WERE SOME WOMEN ALSO WATCHING FROM a distance, 40  
among them being Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother of James  
the Little and of Joseph, and Salome — all of whom used to 41  
accompany Jesus when he was in Galilee, and attend on him —  
besides many other women who had come up with him to  
Jerusalem.

The evening had already fallen, when, as it was the Preparation 42  
Day — the day before the Sabbath — Joseph from Ramah, a Coun- 43  
cillor of good position, who was himself living in expectation of the  
Kingdom of God, came and ventured to go in to see Pilate, and to 44  
ask for the body of Jesus. But Pilate was surprised to hear that he  
had already died. So he sent for the Officer, and asked if he were 45  
already dead; and, on learning from the Officer that it was so, he 46  
gave the corpse to Joseph. Joseph, having bought a linen sheet, took  
Jesus down, and wound the sheet round him, and laid him in a  
tomb which had been cut out of the rock; and then rolled a stone  
up against the entrance of the tomb. Mary of Magdala and Mary, 47  
the mother of Joseph, were watching to see where he was laid.

### *The Risen Life Announced*

When the Sabbath was over, Mary of Magdala, Mary the mother 16  
of James, and Salome bought some spices, so that they might go and  
anoint the body of Jesus. And very early on the first day of the week 2  
they went to the tomb, after sunrise. They were saying to one an- 3  
other: "Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance of the  
tomb?" But, on looking up, they saw that the stone had already been 4  
rolled back; it was a very large one. Going into the tomb, they saw a 5  
young man sitting on their right, in a white robe, and they were dis-  
mayed; But he said to them: "Do not be dismayed; you are looking 6  
for Jesus, the Nazarene, who has been crucified; he has risen, he is  
not here! Look! Here is the place where they laid him. But go, and 7  
say to his disciples and to Peter 'He is going before you into Galilee;  
there you will see him, as he told you.'" They went out, and fled 8

from the tomb, for they were trembling and bewildered; and they did not say a word to any one, for they were frightened;

*A late appendix*

*(Inserted in some manuscripts from an ancient source)*

9 after his rising again, early on the first day of the week, Jesus ap-  
10 peared first of all to Mary of Magdala, from whom he had driven out  
11 seven demons. She went and told the news to those who had been  
12 with him and who were now in sorrow and tears; yet even they,  
13 when they heard that he was alive and had been seen by her, did  
14 not believe it. Afterwards, altered in appearance, he made himself  
15 known to two of them, as they were walking, on their way into the  
16 country. They also went and told the rest, but they did not believe  
17 even them. Later on, he made himself known to the Eleven them-  
18 selves as they were at a meal, and reproached them with their want  
19 of faith and their stubbornness, because they did not believe those  
20 who had seen him after he had risen from the dead. Then he said  
to them: "Go into all the world, and proclaim the Good News to all  
creation. He who believes and is baptized shall be saved; but he who  
refuses to believe will be condemned. Moreover these signs shall at-  
tend those who believe. In my Name they shall drive out demons;  
they shall speak with 'tongues'; they shall take up serpents in their  
hands; and, if they drink any poison, it shall not hurt them; they will  
place their hands on sick people and they shall recover." So the Lord  
Jesus, after he had spoken to them, was taken up into Heaven, and  
sat at the right hand of God. But they set out, and made the procla-  
mation everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming  
the Message by the signs which attended it.

*Another appendix*

But all that had been enjoined on them they reported briefly to Peter and his companions. Afterwards Jesus himself sent them out, from east to west, the sacred and imperishable proclamation of eternal Salvation.

# LUKE

## THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO LUKE

[To his Excellency, Theophilus. Many attempts have been already made to draw up an account of those events which have reached their conclusion among us, just as they were reported to us by those 2 who from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and afterwards became bearers of the Message. And, therefore, I also, since I have 3 investigated all these events with great care from their very beginning, have resolved to write a connected history of them for you, in 4 order that you may be able to satisfy yourself of the accuracy of the story which you have heard from the lips of others.] In the reign of 5 Herod, King of Judea, there was a priest named Zechariah, who belonged to the Division called after Abijah. His wife, whose name was Elizabeth, was also a descendant of Aaron. They were both right- 6 eous people, who lived blameless lives, guiding their steps by all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord. But they had no 7 child, Elizabeth being barren; and both of them were advanced in years. One day, when Zechariah was officiating as priest before God, 8 during the turn of his Division, it fell to him by lot, in accordance 9 with the practice among the priests, to go into the Temple of the Lord and burn incense; and, as it was the Hour of Incense, the peo- 10 ple were all praying outside. And an angel of the Lord appeared to 11 him, standing on the right of the Altar of Incense. Zechariah was 12 startled at the sight and was awe-struck. But the angel said to him: 13 “ Do not be afraid, Zechariah; your prayer has been heard, and your wife Elizabeth shall bear you a son, whom you shall call by the name 14 John. He shall be to you a joy and a delight; and many shall rejoice 15 over his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord; he shall not drink any wine or strong drink, and he shall be filled with the 16 Holy Spirit from the very hour of his birth, and shall reconcile many 17 of the Israelites to the Lord their God. He shall go before him in the

spirit and with the power of Elijah, 'to reconcile fathers to their children' and the disobedient to the wisdom of the righteous, and so  
 18 make ready for the Lord a people prepared for him." "How can I be  
 sure of this?" Zechariah asked the angel. "For I am an old man and  
 19 my wife is advanced in years." "I am Gabriel," the angel answered,  
 "who stand in the presence of God, and I have been sent to speak to  
 20 you and to bring you this good news. And now you shall be silent  
 and unable to speak until the day when this takes place, because  
 you did not believe what I said, though my words will be fulfilled  
 21 in due course." Meanwhile the people were watching for Zechariah,  
 22 wondering at his remaining so long in the Temple. When he came  
 out, he was unable to speak to them, and they perceived that he had  
 seen a vision there. But Zechariah kept making signs to them, and  
 23 remained dumb. And, as soon as his term of service was finished, he  
 24 returned home. After this his wife, Elizabeth, expecting to become a  
 25 mother, lived in seclusion for five months. "This is what the Lord has  
 done for me," she said, "now that he has deigned to take away the  
 26 reproach under which I have been living." Six months later the angel  
 Gabriel was sent from God to a town in Galilee called Nazareth,  
 27 to a maiden there who was betrothed to a man named Joseph, a  
 28 descendant of David. Her name was Mary. Gabriel came into her  
 presence and said: "Hail, you who have been highly favored! The  
 29 Lord is with you." Mary was much disturbed at his words, and was  
 30 wondering to herself what such a greeting could mean, when the  
 angel spoke again: "Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found fa-  
 31 vor with God. And now, you shall be with child and give birth to a  
 32 son, and you shall give him the name Jesus. The child shall be great  
 and shall be called 'Son of the Most High,' and the Lord God will  
 33 give him the throne of his ancestor David, and he shall reign over  
 the descendants of Jacob for ever; And to his kingdom there shall  
 34 be no end." "How can this be?" Mary asked the angel. "For I have  
 35 no husband." "The Holy Spirit shall descend upon you," answered  
 the angel, "and the Power of the Most High shall overshadow you;  
 36 and therefore the child will be called 'holy,' and 'Son of God.' And  
 Elizabeth, your cousin, is herself also expecting a son in her old age;

and it is now the sixth month with her, though she is called barren; for no promise from God shall fail to be fulfilled." "I am the servant of the Lord," exclaimed Mary; "let it be with me as you have said." Then the angel left her. Soon after this Mary set out, and made her way quickly into the hill-country, to a town in Judah; and there she went into Zechariah's house and greeted Elizabeth. When Elizabeth heard Mary's greeting, the child moved within her, and Elizabeth herself was filled with the Holy Spirit, and cried aloud: "Blessed are you among women, and blessed is your unborn child! But how have I this honor, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? For, as soon as your greeting reached my ears, the child moved within me with delight! Happy indeed is she who believed that the promise which she received from the Lord would be fulfilled." And Mary said: "My soul exalts the Lord, my spirit delights in God my Savior; for he has remembered his servant in her lowliness; And from this hour all ages will count me happy! Great things has the Almighty done for me; And holy is his name. From age to age his mercy rests On those who reverence him. Mighty are the deeds of his arm; He scatters the proud with their own devices, he casts down princes from their thrones, and the lowly he uplifts, the hungry he loads with gifts, and the rich he sends empty away. He has stretched out his hand to his servant Israel, Ever mindful of his mercy (As he promised to our forefathers) For Abraham and his race for ever." Mary stayed with Elizabeth about three months, and then returned to her home. When Elizabeth's time came, she gave birth to a son; and her neighbors and relations, hearing of the great goodness of the Lord to her, came to share her joy. A week later they met to circumcise the child, and were about to call him 'Zechariah' after his father, when his mother interposed: "No, he is to be called John." "You have no relation of that name!" they exclaimed; and they made signs to the child's father, to find out what he wished the child to be called. Asking for a writing-tablet, he wrote the words — 'His name is John.' Every one was surprised; and immediately Zechariah recovered his voice and the use of his tongue, and began to bless God. All their neighbors were awe-struck at this; and throughout

the hill-country of Judea the whole story was much talked about; and all who heard it kept it in mind, asking one another — “What can this child be destined to become?” For the Power of the Lord was with him. Then his father Zechariah was filled with the Holy Spirit, and, speaking under inspiration, said: “Blessed is the Lord, the God of Israel, Who has visited his people and wrought their deliverance, and has raised up for us the Strength of our Salvation In the House of his servant David — As he promised by the lips of his Holy Prophets of old — Salvation from our enemies and from the hands of all that hate us, showing mercy to our forefathers, And mindful of his sacred Covenant. This was the oath which he swore to our forefather Abraham — That we should be rescued from the hands of our enemies, and should serve him without fear in holiness and righteousness, In his presence all our days. And thou, Child, shalt be called Prophet of the Most High, For thou shalt go before the Lord to make ready his way, to give his people the knowledge of salvation In the forgiveness of their sins, through the tender mercy of our God, Whereby the Dawn will break on us from Heaven, to give light to those who dwell in darkness and the shadow of death, And guide our feet into the way of peace.” The child grew and became strong in spirit; and he lived in the Wilds till the time came for his appearance before Israel.

About that time an edict was issued by the Emperor Augustus that a census should be taken of the whole Empire. (This was the first census taken while Quirinius was Governor of Syria). And every one went to his own town to be registered. Among others Joseph went up from the town of Nazareth in Galilee to Bethlehem, the town of David, in Judea — because he belonged to the family and house of David — To be registered with Mary, his betrothed wife, who was about to become a mother. While they were there her time came, and she gave birth to her first child, a son. And because there was no room for them in the inn, she swathed him round and laid him in a manger. In that same country-side were shepherds out in the open fields, watching their flocks that night, when an angel of the Lord suddenly stood by them, and the Glory of the Lord shone

around them; and they were seized with fear. "Have no fear," the angel said. "For I bring you good news of a great joy in store for all the nation. This day there has been born to you, in the town of David, a Savior, who is Christ and Lord. And this shall be the sign for you. You will find the infant swathed, and lying in a manger." Then suddenly there appeared with the angel a multitude of the heavenly Host, praising God, and singing — "Glory to God on high, And on earth peace among men in whom he finds pleasure." Now, when the angels had left them and gone back to Heaven, the shepherds said to one another: "Let us go at once to Bethlehem, and see this thing that has happened, of which the Lord has told us." So they went quickly, and found Mary and Joseph, and the infant lying in a manger; and, when they saw it, they told of all that had been said to them about this child. All who heard the shepherds were astonished at their story, while Mary treasured up all that they said, and dwelt upon it in her thoughts. And the shepherds went back, giving glory and praise to God for all that they had heard and seen, as it had been told them. Eight days after the birth of the child, when it was time to circumcise him, he received the name Jesus — the name given him by the angel before his conception. When the period of purification of mother and child, enjoined by the Law of Moses, came to an end, his parents took the child up to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord, in compliance with the Law of the Lord that 'every first-born male shall be dedicated to the Lord,' And also to offer the sacrifice enjoined in the Law of the Lord — 'a pair of turtle-doves or two young pigeons.' There was at that time in Jerusalem a man named Simeon, a righteous and devout man, who lived in constant expectation of the Consolation of Israel, and under the guidance of the Holy Spirit. It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he should not die until he had seen the Lord's Christ. Moved by the Spirit, Simeon came into the Temple Courts, and, when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him what was customary under the Law, Simeon himself took the child in his arms, and blessed God, and said: "Now, Lord, thou wilt let thy servant go, According to thy word, in peace, for my eyes have seen the Salvation Which

32 thou hast prepared in the sight of all nations — A Light to bring light  
33 to the Gentiles, And to be the Glory of thy people Israel.” While the  
child’s father and mother were wondering at what was said about  
34 him, Simeon gave them his blessing, and said to Mary, the child’s  
mother: “This child is appointed to be the cause of the fall and rise  
35 of many in Israel, and to be a sign much spoken against — Yes, the  
sword will pierce your own heart — and so the thoughts in many  
36 minds will be disclosed.” There was also a Prophetess named Han-  
nah, a daughter of Phanuel and of the tribe of Asher. She was far  
advanced in years, having lived with her husband for seven years  
37 after marriage, and then a widow, till she had reached the age of  
eighty-four. She never left the Temple Courts, but, fasting and pray-  
38 ing, worshiped God night and day. At that moment she came up,  
and began publicly to thank God and to speak about the child to all  
39 who were looking for the deliverance of Jerusalem. When the child’s  
parents had done everything enjoined by the Law of the Lord, they  
40 returned to Galilee to their own town of Nazareth. The child grew  
and became strong and wise, and the blessing of God was upon him.  
41 Every year the child’s parents used to go to Jerusalem at the Passover  
42 Festival. When Jesus was twelve years old, they went according to  
43 custom to Jerusalem, and had finished their visit; but, when they  
started to return, the boy Jesus remained behind in Jerusalem, with-  
44 out their knowing it. Thinking that he was with their fellow-travel-  
ers, they went one day’s journey before searching for him among  
45 their relations and acquaintances; and then, as they did not find  
46 him, they returned to Jerusalem, searching everywhere for him. It  
was not till the third day that they found him in the Temple Courts,  
sitting among the Teachers, now listening to them, now asking them  
47 questions. All who listened to him marveled at his intelligence and  
48 his answers. His parents were amazed when they saw him, and  
his mother said to him: “My child, why have you treated us like  
this? Your father and I have been searching for you in great dis-  
49 tress.” “What made you search for me?” he answered. “Did not you  
50 know that I must be in my Father’s House?” His parents did not  
51 understand what he meant. However he went down with them to



Nazareth, and submitted himself to their control; and his mother treasured all that was said in her heart. And Jesus grew in wisdom as he grew in years, and 'gained the blessing of God and men.' In the fifteenth year of the reign of the Emperor Tiberius, when Pontius Pilate was Governor of Judea, Herod Ruler of Galilee, his brother Philip Ruler of the territory comprising Ituraea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias Ruler of Abilene, and when Annas and Caiaphas were High Priests, a Command from God came to John, the son of Zechariah, while he was in the wilderness. And John went through the whole district of the Jordan, proclaiming baptism upon repentance, for the forgiveness of sins. This was in fulfillment of what is said in the writings of the Prophet Isaiah — 'The voice of one crying aloud in the wilderness: "Make ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight. Every chasm shall be filled, Every mountain and hill shall be leveled, The winding ways shall be straightened, The rough roads made smooth, and all mankind shall see the Salvation of God."' And John said to the crowds that went to be baptized by him: "You brood of vipers! who has prompted you to seek refuge from the coming judgment? Let your lives, then, prove your repentance; and do not begin to say among yourselves 'Abraham is our ancestor,' for I tell you that out of these very stones God is able to raise descendants for Abraham! Already, indeed, the axe is lying at the root of the trees. Therefore every tree that fails to bear good fruit will be cut down and thrown into the fire." "What are we to do then?" the people asked. "Let the man who has two coats," answered John, "share with him who has none; and the man who has food do the same." Even tax-gatherers came to be baptized, and said to John: "Teacher, what are we to do?" "Do not collect more than you have authority to demand," John answered. And when some soldiers on active service asked "And we — what are we to do?" he said: "Never use violence, or exact anything by false accusation; and be content with your pay." Then, while the people were in suspense, and were all debating with themselves whether John could be the Christ, John, addressing them all, said: "I, indeed, baptize you with water;

but there is coming one more powerful than I, and I am not fit even to unfasten his sandals. He will baptize you with the Holy Spirit  
 17 and with fire. His winnowing-fan is in his hand, that he may clear his threshing-floor, and store the grain in his barn, but the chaff he  
 18 will burn with inextinguishable fire." And so with many different  
 19 exhortations John told his Good News to the people. But Prince Herod, being rebuked by John respecting Herodias, the wife of Herod's brother, and for all the evil things that he had done,  
 20 crowned them all by shutting John up in prison. Now after the baptism of all the people, and when Jesus had been baptized and  
 22 was still praying, the heavens opened, and the Holy Spirit descended, in a visible form, like a dove, upon him, and from the heavens came a voice — "Thou art my Son, the Beloved; in thee I  
 23 delight." When beginning his work, Jesus was about thirty years old. He was regarded as the son of Joseph, whose ancestors were  
 24 — Eli, Mattith, Levi, Melchiah, Janna, Joseph, Mattithiah, Amos,  
 26 Nahum, Azaliah, Nogah, Mattith, Mattithiah, Shimei, Joseph,  
 28 Josheh, Johanan, Rhesa, Zerubbabel, Shealtiel, Neriah, Melchiah,  
 29 Addi, Cosam, Elmodam, Er, Joshua, Eliezer, Joram, Mattith, Levi,  
 30 Simeon, Judah, Joseph, Jonam, Eliakim, Meleah, Menan,  
 32 Mattithiah, Nathan, David, Jesse, Obed, Boaz, Salah, Nahshon,  
 34 Amminadab, Arni, Hezron, Perez, Judah, Jacob, Isaac, Abraham,  
 36 Terah, Nahor, Serug, Reu, Peleg, Eber, Shelah, Kenan, Arpachshad,  
 37 Shem, Noah, Lamech, Methuselah, Enoch, Jared, Mahalalel,  
 38 Kenan, Enosh, Seth and Adam the son of GOD.

On returning from the Jordan, full of the Holy Spirit, Jesus was led by the power of the Spirit through the Wilderness for forty days, tempted by the Devil. All that time he ate nothing; and, when it was  
 2 over, he became hungry. So the Devil said to him: "If you are God's  
 3 Son, tell this stone to become a loaf of bread." And Jesus answered him: "Scripture says — 'It is not on bread alone that man is to live.'"  
 5 And the Devil led Jesus up, and showing him in a single moment  
 6 all the kingdoms of the earth, said to him: "I will give you all this power, and the splendor of them; for it has been given into my hands  
 7 and I give it to whom I wish. If you, therefore, will do homage before

me, it shall all be yours." And Jesus answered him: "Scripture says 8  
— 'Thou shalt do homage to the Lord thy God, and worship him  
only.'" The Devil next led him into Jerusalem, and, placing him on 9  
the parapet of the Temple, said: "If you are God's Son throw yourself  
down from here, for Scripture says — 'He will give his angels com- 10  
mands about thee, to guard thee safely,' And 'On their hands they 11  
will uphold thee, Lest ever thou shouldst strike thy foot against a  
stone.'" But Jesus answered him: "It is said — 'Thou shalt not tempt 12  
the Lord thy God.'" When he had tried every kind of temptation, the 13  
Devil left Jesus, till another opportunity. Moved by the power of the 14  
Spirit, Jesus returned to Galilee. Reports about him spread through 15  
all that neighborhood; and he began to teach in their Synagogues, 16  
and was honored by every one. Coming to Nazareth, where he had 17  
been brought up, Jesus, as was his custom, went on the Sabbath into  
the Synagogue, and stood up to read the Scriptures. The book given 18  
him was that of the Prophet Isaiah; and Jesus opened the book and  
found the place where it says — 'The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, 19  
For he has consecrated me to bring Good News to the poor, He has  
sent me to proclaim release to captives and restoration of sight to the  
blind, To set the oppressed at liberty, to proclaim the accepted year 20  
of the Lord.' Then, closing the book and returning it to the atten-  
dant, he sat down. The eyes of all in the Synagogue were fixed upon 21  
him, and Jesus began: "This very day this passage has been fulfilled  
in your hearing." All who were present spoke well of him, and were 22  
astonished at the beautiful words that fell from his lips. "Is not he  
Joseph's son?" they asked. "Doubtless," said Jesus, "you will remind 23  
me of the saying — 'Doctor, cure yourself;' and you will say 'Do here  
in your own country all that we have heard that has been done at Ca-  
pernaum.' I tell you," he continued, "that no Prophet is acceptable 24  
in his own country. There were, doubtless, many widows in Israel in 25  
Elijah's days, when the heavens were closed for three years and six  
months, and a severe famine prevailed throughout the country; and 26  
yet it was not to one of them that Elijah was sent, but to a widow at  
Zarephath in Sidonia. And there were many lepers in Israel in the 27  
time of the Prophet Elisha, yet it was not one of them who was made

28 clean, but Naaman the Syrian." All the people in the Synagogue, as  
 29 they listened to this, became enraged. Starting up, they drove Jesus  
 30 out of the town, and led him to the brow of the hill on which their  
 31 town stood, intending to hurl him down. But he passed through the  
 32 middle of the crowd and went on his way. Then Jesus went down to  
 33 Capernaum, a city in Galilee. On the Sabbath he taught the people.  
 34 They were amazed at his teaching, because his words were spoken  
 35 with authority. In the Synagogue there was a man with the spirit of a  
 36 foul demon in him, who called out loudly: "Stop! What do you want  
 37 with us, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know  
 38 who you are — the Holy One of God!" But Jesus rebuked the demon.  
 39 "Be silent! Come out from him," he said. The demon flung the  
 40 man down in the middle of the people, and then came out from him,  
 41 without causing him further harm. And they were all lost in amazement,  
 42 and kept saying to one another: "What words are these? For he gives  
 43 his commands to the foul spirits with a marvelous authority, and they  
 44 come out." And rumors about Jesus traveled through every place in the  
 45 neighborhood. On leaving the Synagogue, Jesus went into Simon's house.  
 46 Now Simon's mother-in-law was suffering from a severe attack of fever,  
 47 and they asked Jesus to cure her. Bending over her, he rebuked the fever;  
 48 the fever left her, and she immediately got up and began to wait upon  
 49 them. At sunset, all who had friends suffering from various diseases  
 50 took them to Jesus; and he placed his hands upon every one of them and  
 51 cured them. And even demons came out from many people, screaming  
 52 'You are the Son of God.' Jesus rebuked them, and would not allow them  
 53 to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ. At daybreak, Jesus  
 54 went out and walked to a lonely spot. But crowds of people began to  
 55 look for him; and they came to where he was and tried to detain him  
 56 and prevent his leaving them. Jesus, however, said to them: "I must  
 57 take the Good News of the Kingdom of God to the other town also,  
 58 for that was why I was sent." And he continued to make his  
 59 proclamation in the Synagogues of Judea. Once, when the people were  
 60 pressing round Jesus as he listened to God's Message, he happened to  
 61 be standing by the shore of the

Lake of Gennesaret, and saw two boats close to the shore. The fish- 2  
 ermen had gone away from them and were washing the nets. So, 3  
 getting into one of the boats, which belonged to Simon, Jesus asked  
 him to push off a little way from the shore, and then sat down and  
 taught the people from the boat. When he had finished speaking, he 4  
 said to Simon: "Push off into deep water, and throw out your nets  
 for a haul." "We have been hard at work all night, Sir," answered 5  
 Simon, "and have not caught anything, but, at your bidding, I will  
 throw out the nets." They did so, and enclosed such a great shoal 6  
 of fish that their nets began to break. So they signaled to their part- 7  
 ners in the other boat to come and help them; and they came and  
 filled both the boats so full of fish that they were almost sinking.  
 When Simon Peter saw this, he threw himself down at Jesus' knees, 8  
 exclaiming: "Master, leave me, for I am a sinful man!" For he and all 9  
 who were with him were lost in amazement at the haul of fish which  
 they had made; and so, too, were James and John, Zebediah's sons, 10  
 who were Simon's partners. "Do not be afraid," Jesus said to Simon;  
 "from to-day you shall catch men." And, when they had brought 11  
 their boats to shore, they left everything, and followed him. On one 12  
 occasion Jesus was staying in a town, when he saw a man who was  
 covered with leprosy. When the leper saw Jesus, he threw himself on  
 his face and implored his help: "Master, if only you are willing, you  
 are able to make me clean." Stretching out his hand, Jesus touched 13  
 him, saying as he did so: "I am willing; become clean." Instantly the  
 leprosy left the man; and then Jesus impressed upon him that he 14  
 was not to say a word to any one, "but," he added, "set out and show  
 yourself to the priest, and make the offerings for your cleansing, in  
 the manner directed by Moses, as evidence of your cure." However, 15  
 the story about Jesus spread all the more, and great crowds came  
 together to listen to him, and to be cured of their illnesses; but Jesus 16  
 used to withdraw to lonely places and pray. On one of those days, 17  
 when Jesus was teaching, some Pharisees and Doctors of the Law  
 were sitting near by. (They had come from all the villages in Galilee  
 and Judea, and from Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was upon  
 Jesus, so that he could work cures.) And there some men brought 18

on a bed a man who was paralyzed. They tried to get him in and lay  
19 him before Jesus; but, finding no way of getting him in owing to the  
crowd, they went up on the roof and lowered him through the tiles,  
with his pallet, into the middle of the people and in front of Jesus.  
20 When he saw their faith, Jesus said: "Friend, your sins have been  
21 forgiven you." The Teachers of the Law and the Pharisees began de-  
bating about this. "Who is this man who speaks so blasphemously?"  
22 they asked. "Who can forgive sins except God?" When Jesus became  
aware of the way in which they were debating, he turned to them  
23 and exclaimed: "What are you debating with yourselves? Which is  
the easier? — to say 'Your sins have been forgiven you'? or to say  
24 'Get up, and walk about'? But that you may know that the Son of  
Man has power on earth to forgive sins" — he spoke to the paraly-  
zed man — "To you I say, Get up, and take up your pallet, and go  
25 to your home." Instantly the man stood up before their eyes, took up  
26 what he had been lying on, and went to his home, praising God. The  
people, one and all, were lost in amazement, and praised God; and  
in great awe they said: "We have seen marvelous things to-day!"  
27 After this, Jesus went out; and he noticed a tax-gatherer, named  
28 Levi, sitting in the tax-office, and said to him: "Follow me." Levi  
29 left everything and got up and followed him. And Levi gave a great  
entertainment at his house, in honor of Jesus; and a large number  
30 of tax-gatherers and others were at table with them. The Pharisees  
and the teachers of the Law belonging to their party complained of  
31 this to the disciples of Jesus." In answer Jesus said: "It is not those  
32 who are well that need a doctor, but those who are ill. I have not  
33 come to call the religious, but the outcast, to repent." "John's dis-  
ciples," they said to Jesus, "Often fast and say prayers, and so do  
the disciples of the Pharisees, while yours are eating and drinking!"  
34 But Jesus answered them: "Can you make the bridegroom's friends  
35 fast while the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come —  
a time when the bridegroom will be parted from them; and they  
36 will fast then, when those days come." Then, as an illustration, Je-  
sus said to them: "No man ever tears a piece from a new garment  
and puts it upon an old one; for, if he does, he will not only tear the

new garment, but the piece from the new one will not match the old. And no man puts new wine into old wine-skins; for, if he does, 37  
the new wine will burst the skins, and the wine itself will run out, 38  
and the skins be lost. But new wine must be put into fresh skins. No  
man after drinking old wine wishes for new. 'No,' he says, 'the old  
is excellent.'"

6  
One Sabbath Jesus was walking through cornfields, and his  
disciples were picking the ears of wheat, and rubbing them in their  
hands, and eating them. "Why are you doing what it is not 2  
allowable to do on the Sabbath?" asked some of the Pharisees.  
Jesus' answer was: "Have not you read even of what David did, 3  
when he was hungry, he and his companions — That he went into 4  
the House of God, and took the consecrated bread and ate it, and  
gave some to his companions, though only the priests are allowed  
to eat it?" Then Jesus added: "The Son of Man is lord even of the 5  
Sabbath." On another Sabbath Jesus went into the Synagogue and 6  
taught; and there was a man there whose right hand was withered.  
The Teachers of the Law and the Pharisees watched Jesus closely, 7  
to see if he would work cures on the Sabbath, so that they might  
find a charge to bring against him. Jesus, however, knew what was 8  
in their minds, and said to the man whose hand was withered:  
"Stand up and come out into the middle." The man stood up; and 9  
Jesus said to them: "I ask you, is it allowable to do good on the  
Sabbath — or harm? to save a life, or let it perish?" Then, looking 10  
round at them all, he said to the man: "Stretch out your hand." The  
man did so; and his hand had become sound. But the Teachers of 11  
the Law and the Pharisees were goaded to madness, and consulted  
together what they could do to Jesus. Now about that time, Jesus 12  
went out, up the hill, to pray, and spent the whole night in prayer  
to God. When day came, he summoned his disciples, and chose 13  
twelve of them, whom he also named 'Apostles.' They were Simon 14  
(whom Jesus also named Peter), and his brother Andrew, James,  
John, Philip, Bartholomew, Matthew, Thomas, James son of 15  
Alphaeus, Simon known as the Zealot, Judas son of James, and 16  
Judas Iscariot, who proved a traitor. Afterwards Jesus came down 17

the hill with them and took his stand on a level place. With him were a large crowd of his disciples, and great numbers of people from the whole of Judea, Jerusalem, and the coast district of Tyre and Sidon, who had come to hear him and to be restored to health. Those, too, who were troubled with foul spirits were cured; and every one in the crowd was trying to touch him, because a power went out from him which restored them all. Then, raising his eyes and looking at his disciples, Jesus spoke as follows: "Blessed are you who are poor, for yours is the Kingdom of God. Blessed are you who hunger now, for you shall be satisfied. Blessed are you who weep now, for you shall laugh. Blessed are you when men hate you, and when they expel you from among them, and taunt you, and reject your Name as an evil thing — on account of the Son of Man. Then indeed you may be glad and dance for joy, for be sure that your reward in Heaven will be great; for that is what their ancestors did to the Prophets. But 'alas for you who are rich,' for you have had your comforts in full. Alas for you who are sated now, for you will hunger. Alas for you who laugh now, for you will mourn and weep. Alas for you when all men speak well of you; for this is what their ancestors did to the false Prophets. But to you who hear I say — Love your enemies, show kindness to those who hate you, bless those who curse you, pray for those who insult you. When a man gives one of you a blow on the cheek, offer the other cheek as well; and, when any one takes away your cloak, do not keep back your coat either. Give to every one who asks of you; and, when any one takes away what is yours, do not demand its return. Do to others as you wish them to do to you. If you love only those who love you, what thanks will be due to you? Why, even the outcast love those who love them! For, if you show kindness only to those who show kindness to you, what thanks will be due to you? Even the outcast do that! If you lend only to those from whom you expect to get something, what thanks will be due to you? Even the outcast lend to the outcast in the hope of getting as much in return! But love your enemies, and show them kindness, and lend to them, never despairing. Then your reward shall be great, and you shall



be Sons of the Most High, for he is kind to the thankless and the  
 bad. Learn to be merciful — even as your Father is merciful. Do not 36  
 judge, and you will not be judged; do not condemn, and you will  
 not be condemned. Forgive, and you will be forgiven. Give, and 38  
 others will give to you. A generous measure, pressed and shaken  
 down, and running over, will they pour into your lap; For the  
 measure that you mete will be meted out to you in return.” Then, 39  
 speaking in parables, Jesus said: “Can one blind man guide  
 another? Will they not both fall into a ditch? A scholar is not above 40  
 his teacher; yet every finished scholar shall be like his teacher. And 41  
 why do you look at the straw in your brother’s eye, while you pay  
 no attention at all to the beam in your own? How can you say to 42  
 your brother ‘Brother, let me take out the straw in your eye,’ while  
 you yourself do not see the beam in your own? Hypocrite! Take out  
 the beam from your own eye first, and then you will see clearly  
 how to take out the straw in your brother’s. There is no such thing 43  
 as a good tree bearing worthless fruit, or, on the other hand, a  
 worthless tree bearing good fruit. For every tree is known by its 44  
 own fruit. People do not gather figs off thorn bushes, nor pick a  
 bunch of grapes off a bramble. A good man, from the good stores 45  
 of his heart, brings out what is good; while a bad man, from his  
 bad stores, brings out what is bad. For what fills a man’s heart will  
 rise to his lips. Why do you call me ‘Master! Master!’ and yet fail to 46  
 do what I tell you? Every one who comes to me and listens to my 47  
 teaching and acts upon it — I will show you to whom he may be  
 compared. He may be compared to a man building a house, who 48  
 dug, and went deep, and laid the foundation upon the rock. Then,  
 when a flood came, the river swept down upon that house, but had  
 no power to shake it, because it had been built well. But those who 49  
 have listened and not acted upon what they have heard may be  
 compared to a man who built a house on the ground without any  
 foundation. The river swept down upon it, and the house  
 immediately collapsed; and great was the crash that followed.” 7  
 When Jesus had brought to a conclusion all that he had then had to  
 say to the people, he entered Capernaum. A Captain in the Roman 2

army had a slave whom he valued, and who was seriously ill — al-  
 3 most at the point of death. And, hearing about Jesus, he sent some  
 Jewish Councillors to him, with the request that he would come and  
 4 save his slave's life. When they found Jesus, they earnestly implored  
 him to do so. "He is a man who deserves that you should show him  
 5 this favor," they said, "For he is devoted to our nation, and himself  
 6 built our Synagogue for us." So Jesus went with them. But, when he  
 was no great distance from the house, the Captain sent some friends  
 with the message — "Do not trouble yourself, Sir; for I am unworthy  
 7 to receive you under my roof. That was why I did not even venture  
 to come to you myself; but speak, and let my manservant be cured.  
 8 For I myself am a man under the orders of others, with soldiers un-  
 der me; and if I say to one of them 'Go,' he goes, and to another  
 9 'Come,' he comes, and to my slave 'Do this,' he does it." Jesus was  
 surprised to hear these words from him; and, turning to the crowd  
 which was following him, he said: "I tell you, nowhere in Israel have  
 10 I met with such faith as this!" And, when the messengers returned to  
 11 the house, they found the slave recovered. Shortly after, Jesus went  
 to a town called Nain, his disciples and a great crowd going with  
 12 him. Just as he approached the gate of the town, there was a dead  
 man being carried out for burial — an only son, and his mother was  
 a widow. A large number of the people of the town were with her.  
 13 When he saw her, the Master was moved with compassion for her,  
 14 and he said to her: "Do not weep." Then he went up and touched  
 the bier, and the bearers stopped; and Jesus said: "Young man, I am  
 15 speaking to you — Rise!" The dead man sat up and began to talk,  
 16 and Jesus restored him to his mother. Every one was awe-struck  
 and began praising God. "A great Prophet has arisen among us,"  
 17 they said; "and God has visited his people." And this story about  
 Jesus spread all through Judea, and in the neighboring countries  
 18 as well. All these events were reported to John by his disciples. So  
 he summoned two of them, and sent them to the Master to ask —  
 "Are you 'The Coming One,' or are we to look for some one else?"  
 19 When these men found Jesus, they said: "John the Baptist has sent  
 20 us to you to ask — 'Are you 'The Coming One,' or are we to look

for somebody else?" At that very time Jesus had cured many people of diseases, afflictions, and wicked spirits, and had given many blind people their sight. So his answer to the question was: "Go and report to John what you have witnessed and heard — the blind recover their sight, the lame walk, the lepers are made clean, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised to life, the Good News is told to the poor. And blessed is the man who finds no hindrance in me." When John's messengers had left, Jesus, speaking to the crowds, began to say with reference to John: "What did you go out into the Wilderness to look at? A reed waving in the wind? If not, what did you go out to see? A man dressed in rich clothing? Why, those who are accustomed to fine clothes and luxury live in royal palaces. What then did you go to see? A Prophet? Yes, I tell you, and far more than a Prophet. This is the very man of whom Scripture says — 'Behold, I am sending my Messenger before thy face, And he shall prepare thy way before thee.' There is, I tell you, no one born of a woman who is greater than John; and yet the lowliest in the Kingdom of God is greater than he." (All the people, when they heard this, and even the tax-gatherers, having accepted John's baptism, acknowledged the justice of God. But the Pharisees and the Students of the Law, having rejected John's baptism, frustrated God's purpose in regard to them.) "To what then," Jesus continued, "shall I compare the people of the present generation? What are they like? They are like some little children who are sitting in the market-place and calling out to one another — 'We have played the flute for you, but you have not danced; We have wailed, but you have not wept!' For now that John the Baptist has come, not eating bread or drinking wine, you are saying 'He has a demon in him'; and now that the Son of Man has come, eating and drinking, you are saying 'Here is a glutton and a wine-drinker, a friend of tax-gatherers and outcasts.' And yet Wisdom is vindicated by all her children." One of the Pharisees asked Jesus to dine with him, so Jesus went to his house and took his place at table. Just then a woman, who was an outcast in the town, having ascertained that Jesus was at table in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster jar of perfume, and placed herself behind Jesus, near his

feet, weeping. Then she began to make his feet wet with her tears, and she dried them with the hair of her head, repeatedly kissing his feet and anointing them with the perfume. When the Pharisee who had invited Jesus saw this, he said to himself: "Had this man been 'The Prophet,' he would have known who, and what sort of woman, this is who is touching him, and that she is an outcast." But, addressing him, Jesus said: "Simon, I have something to say to you." "Pray do so, Teacher," Simon answered; and Jesus began: "There were two people who were in debt to a money-lender; one owed fifty pounds, and the other five. As they were unable to pay, he forgave them both. Which of them, do you think, will love him the more?" "I suppose," answered Simon, "it will be the man to whom he forgave the greater debt." "You are right," said Jesus, and then, turning to the woman, he said to Simon: "Do you see this woman? I came into your house — you gave me no water for my feet, but she has made my feet wet with her tears and dried them with her hair. You did not give me one kiss, but she, from the moment I came in, has not ceased to kiss my feet. You did not anoint even my head with oil, but she has anointed my feet with perfume. And for this, I tell you, her sins, many as they are, have been pardoned, because she has loved greatly; but one who has little pardoned him, loves but little." Then he said to the woman: "Your sins have been pardoned." On this, those at table began to say to one another: "Who is this man who even pardons sins?" But Jesus said to the woman: "Your faith has delivered you; go, and peace be with you."

Shortly afterwards, Jesus went on a journey through the towns and villages, proclaiming the Good News of the Kingdom of God. With him went the Twelve, as well as some women who had been cured of wicked spirits and of infirmities. They were Mary, known as Mary of Magdala (from whom seven demons had been expelled), and Joanna (the wife of Herod's steward, Chuza), and Susannah, and many others — all of whom ministered to Jesus and his Apostles out of their means. Once, when a great crowd was collecting, and, when the people of town after town were flocking to Jesus, he spoke to them in the form of a parable: "The sower went out to sow his

seed; and, as he was sowing, some of the seed fell along the path and was trodden upon; and the wild birds ate it up. Other seed fell 6  
upon rock, and, as soon as it began to grow, having no moisture, withered away. Other seed fell in the middle of brambles, but the 7  
brambles grew up with it and choked it entirely. Other seed fell into 8  
rich soil, and grew, and gave a hundred-fold return." After saying this, Jesus cried aloud: "Let him who has ears to hear with hear." His disciples asked Jesus the meaning of this parable. "To you," he 90  
said, "the knowledge of the hidden truths of the Kingdom of God has been imparted, but to others in parables only, that 'though they have eyes they may not see, and though they have ears, they may not understand.' This is the parable — The seed is God's Message. 11  
By the seed which fell along the path are meant those who hear the 12  
Message; but then comes the Devil and carries away the Message from their minds, to prevent their believing it and being saved. By 13  
the seed which fell upon the rock are meant those who, as soon as they hear the Message, welcome it joyfully; but they have no root, and believe it only for a time, and, when the time of temptation comes, they draw back. By that which fell among the brambles are 14  
meant those who hear the Message, but who, as they go on their way, are completely choked by this world's cares and wealth and pleasures, and bring nothing to perfection. But by that in the good 15  
ground are meant those who, having heard the Message, keep it in the good, rich soil of their hearts, and patiently yield a return. No 16  
man sets light to a lamp and then covers it with a bowl or puts it underneath a couch, but he puts it on a lamp-stand, so that anyone who comes in may see the light. Nothing is hidden which will 17  
not be brought into the light of day, not ever kept hidden which will not some day become known and come into the light of day. Take care, then, how you listen. For, to all those who have, more 18  
will be given; while, from all those who have nothing, even what they seem to have will be taken away." Presently Jesus' mother and 19  
brothers came where he was, but they were not able to join him on account of the crowd. So word was brought to him — 'Your mother 20

21 and your brothers are standing outside, wanting to see you.' His reply, spoken to them all, was: "My mother and my brothers are those  
 22 who listen to God's teaching and do what it bids." One day about that time, Jesus got into a boat with his disciples and said to them:  
 23 "Let us go across the lake." So they put off. While they were sailing, Jesus fell asleep. A squall swept down upon the lake, and their  
 24 boat was filling and they were in danger. So the disciples came and roused him. "Sir, Sir," they cried, "we are lost!" Jesus rose and rebuked the wind and the rushing waves, and they fell, and a calm  
 25 followed. "Where is your faith?" he exclaimed. But in great awe and amazement they said to one another: "Who can this be, that he commands even the winds and the waves, and they obey him?" And  
 26 they reached the country of the Gerasenes, which is on the opposite side to Galilee; and, on getting ashore, Jesus met a man, who had demons in him, coming out of the town. For a long time this  
 27 man had worn no clothing, and he had not lived in a house, but in the tombs. Catching sight of Jesus, he shrieked out and threw himself down before him, and in a loud voice exclaimed: "What do  
 28 you want with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I beseech you not to torment me." For Jesus was commanding the foul spirit to come out from the man. On many occasions it had seized him, and, even when secured with chains and fetters, and watched, he would break through anything that bound him, and be driven by the demon into the Wilds. "What is your name?" Jesus asked. "Legion," he  
 29 answered (for many demons had taken possession of him); and the demons begged Jesus not to order them away into the bottomless  
 30 pit. There was a drove of many pigs close by feeding upon the hillside; and the demons begged Jesus to give them leave to enter into them. Jesus gave them leave. They came out from the man and took possession of the pigs; and the drove rushed down the steep slope  
 31 into the lake and were drowned. When the men who tended them saw what had happened, they ran away, and carried the news to the  
 32 town, and to the country round. The people went out to see what had happened, and, when they came to Jesus, they found the man from whom the demons had gone out, sitting, clothed and in his

right mind, at Jesus' feet; and they were awe-struck. Those who had  
 seen it told them how the possessed man had been delivered; upon  
 which all the people in the neighborhood of the Gerasenes asked  
 Jesus to leave them, for they were terrified. Jesus got into a boat and  
 returned. The man from whom the demons had gone out begged  
 Jesus to let him be with him; but Jesus sent him away. "Go back to  
 your home," he said, "and relate the story of all that God has done  
 for you." So the man went through the whole town and proclaimed,  
 as he went, all that Jesus had done for him. On his return, Jesus  
 was welcomed by the people; for everyone was looking out for him.  
 And a man named Jairus, who was a President of the Synagogue,  
 came to Jesus, and threw himself at Jesus' feet, with entreaties that  
 he would come to his house, because his only daughter, who was  
 about twelve years old, was dying. As Jesus was going, the people  
 were pressing closely round him. And a woman, who had suffered  
 from hemorrhage for twelve years, and whom no one could cure,  
 came up behind and touched the tassel of his cloak. Instantly the  
 hemorrhage ceased. "Who was it that touched me?" Jesus asked;  
 and, while everyone was denying having done so, Peter exclaimed:  
 "Why, Sir, the people are crowding round you and pressing upon  
 you!" "Somebody touched me," said Jesus; "for I felt that power had  
 gone out from me." Then the woman, when she saw that she was  
 discovered, came forward trembling, and threw herself down before  
 him; and, in the presence of all the people, she told him her reason  
 for touching him, and that she had been cured instantly. "Daughter,"  
 he said, "your faith has delivered you. Go, and peace be with you."  
 Before he had finished speaking, some one came from the house of  
 the President of the Synagogue and said: "Your daughter is dead!  
 Do not trouble the Teacher further." But Jesus, hearing this, spoke  
 to the President: "Do not be afraid; only have faith, and she shall  
 yet be delivered." When he reached the house, he did not allow any  
 one to go in with him, except Peter, John, and James, and the child's  
 father and mother. And every one was weeping and mourning for  
 her. "Do not weep," Jesus said, "she is not dead; she is asleep." They  
 began to laugh at him, for they knew that she was dead. But, taking

55 her by the hand, Jesus said in a loud voice: "Child, rise!" The child's  
spirit returned to her, and she instantly stood up; and Jesus ordered  
56 them to give her something to eat. Her parents were amazed, but Jesus  
impressed on them that they were not to tell any one what had  
9 happened.

Jesus called the Twelve together, and gave them power and author-  
2 ity over all demons, as well as to cure diseases. He sent them out  
as his Messengers, to proclaim the Kingdom of God, and to work  
3 cures. "Do not," he said to them, "take anything for your journey;  
not even a staff, or a bag, or bread, or any silver, or a change of clothes  
4 with you. Whatever house you go to stay in, remain there, and leave  
5 from that place. If people do not welcome you, as you leave that  
town, shake even the dust off your feet, as a protest against them."  
6 Then they set out and went from village to village, telling the Good  
7 News and curing people everywhere. Prince Herod heard of all that  
was happening, and was perplexed, because it was said by some  
8 that John must be risen from the dead. Some again said that Elijah  
had appeared, and others that one of the old Prophets had risen  
9 again. But Herod himself said: "John I beheaded; but who is this of  
10 whom I hear such things?" And he endeavored to see him. When  
the Apostles returned, they related to Jesus all that they had done.  
Then Jesus retired privately to a town called Bethsaida, taking the  
11 Apostles with him. But the people recognized him and followed him  
in crowds; and Jesus welcomed them and spoke to them about the  
Kingdom of God, while he cured those who were in need of help.  
12 The day was drawing to a close, when the twelve came up to him,  
and said: "Send the crowd away, so that they may make their way to  
the villages and farms round about, and find themselves lodgings  
13 and provisions, for we are in a lonely spot here." But Jesus said: "It is  
for you to give them something to eat." "We have not more than five  
loaves and two fishes," they answered; "unless indeed we are to go  
14 and buy food for all these people." (For the men among them were  
about five thousand.) "Get them seated in companies," was his re-  
15 ply, "about fifty in each." This they did, and got all the people seated.  
16 Taking the five loaves and the two fishes, Jesus looked up to Heaven



and said the blessing over them. Then he broke them in pieces, and gave them to his disciples to set before the people. Every one had sufficient to eat, and what was left of the broken pieces was picked up — twelve baskets. Afterwards, when Jesus was alone, praying, his disciples joined him, and he asked them this question — “Who do the people say that I am?” “John the Baptist,” was their answer; “others, however, say that you are Elijah, while others say that one of the old Prophets has risen again.” “But you,” he went on, “who do you say that I am?” And to this Peter answered: “The Christ of God.” Jesus, however, strictly charged them not to say this to any one; he told them that the Son of Man must undergo much suffering, and be rejected by the Councillors, and Chief Priests, and Teachers of the Law, and be put to death, and rise on the third day. And to all present he said: “If any man wishes to walk in my steps, let him renounce self, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. For whoever wishes to save his life will lose it, and whoever, for my sake, loses his life — that man shall save it. What good does it do a man if, when he has gained the whole world, he has lost or forfeited himself? Whoever is ashamed of me and of my teaching, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him, when he comes in his Glory and the Glory of the father and of the holy angels. Indeed, I tell you, some who are standing before me will not know death, till they have seen the Kingdom of God.” About eight days after speaking these words, Jesus went up the mountain to pray, taking with him Peter, John, and James. As he was praying, the aspect of his face was changed, and his clothing became of a glittering whiteness. And all at once two men were talking with Jesus; they were Moses and Elijah, who appeared in a glorified state, and spoke of his departure, which was destined to take place at Jerusalem. Peter and his companions had been overpowered by sleep but, suddenly becoming wide awake, they saw Jesus glorified and the two men who were standing beside him. And, as Moses and Elijah were passing away from Jesus, Peter exclaimed: “Sir, it is good to be here; let us make three tents, one for you, and one for Moses, and one for Elijah.” He did not know what he was saying; and, while he was speaking, a cloud came down and

enveloped them; and they were afraid, as they passed into the cloud;  
 35 and from the cloud came a voice which said — “This is my Son, the  
 36 Chosen One; him you must hear.” And, as the voice ceased, Jesus  
 was found alone. The Apostles kept silence, and told no one about  
 37 any of the things that they had seen. The next day, when they had  
 38 come down from the mountain, a great crowd met Jesus. And just  
 then a man in the crowd shouted out: “Teacher, I entreat you to look  
 39 at my son, for he is my only child; all at once a spirit will seize him,  
 suddenly shriek out, and throw him into convulsions till he foams,  
 40 and will leave him only when he is utterly exhausted. I entreated  
 41 your disciples to drive the spirit out, but they could not.” “O faith-  
 less and perverse generation!” Jesus exclaimed; “how long must I be  
 42 with you and have patience with you? Lead your son here.” While  
 the boy was coming up to Jesus, the demon dashed him down and  
 threw him into convulsions. But Jesus rebuked the foul spirit, and  
 43 cured the boy, and gave him back to his father. And all present were  
 struck with awe at the majesty of God. In the midst of the general  
 astonishment at all that Jesus was doing, he said to his disciples:  
 44 “Listen carefully to my words. For the Son of Man is destined to be  
 45 betrayed into the hands of his fellow men.” But the disciples did not  
 understand the meaning of this; it had been concealed from them so  
 that they did not see it, and they were afraid to question him as to  
 46 what he meant. A discussion arose among the disciples as to which  
 47 of them was the greatest; and Jesus, knowing of the discussion that  
 was occupying their thoughts, took hold of a little child, and placed  
 48 it beside him, and then said to them: “Any one who, for the sake of  
 my Name, welcomes even this little child is welcoming me; and any  
 one who welcomes me is welcoming him who sent me as his Mes-  
 senger. For whoever is lowliest among you all — that man is great.”  
 49 Thereupon John said: “Sir, we saw a man driving out demons by  
 using your name, and we tried to prevent him, because he does not  
 50 follow you with us.” “None of you must prevent him,” Jesus said to  
 51 John; “he who is not against you is for you.” As the days before his  
 being taken up to Heaven were growing few, Jesus set his face res-  
 olutely in the direction of Jerusalem; and he sent on messengers in

advance. On their way, they went into a Samaritan village to make  
 preparations for him, but the people there did not welcome him,  
 because his face was set in the direction of Jerusalem. When James  
 and John saw this, they said: "Master, do you wish us to call for  
 fire to come down from the heavens and consume them?" But Jesus  
 turned and rebuked them. And they made their way to another vil-  
 lage. And, while they were on their way, a man said to Jesus: "I will  
 follow you wherever you go." "Foxes have holes," he replied, "and  
 wild birds their roosting-places, but the Son of Man has nowhere  
 to lay his head." To another man Jesus said: "Follow me." "Let me  
 first go and bury my father," said the man. But Jesus said: "Leave  
 the dead to bury their dead; but go yourself and carry far and wide  
 the news of the Kingdom of God." "Master," said another, "I will  
 follow you; but first let me say good-bye to my family." But Jesus  
 answered: "No one who looks back, after putting his hand to the  
 plough, is fitted for the Kingdom of God." 10

After this, the Master appointed seventy-two other disciples, and  
 sent them on as his Messengers, two and two, in advance, to every  
 town and place that he was himself intending to visit. "The harvest,"  
 he said, "is abundant, but the laborers are few. Therefore pray to  
 the Owner of the harvest to send laborers to gather in his harvest.  
 Now, go. Remember, I am sending you out as my Messengers like  
 lambs among wolves. Do not take a purse with you, or a bag, or san-  
 dals; and do not stop to greet any one on your journey. Whatever  
 house you go to stay at, begin by praying for a blessing on it. Then,  
 if any one there is deserving of a blessing, your blessing will rest  
 upon him; but if not, it will come back upon yourselves. Remain at  
 that same house, and eat and drink whatever they offer you; for the  
 worker is worth his wages. Do not keep changing from one house  
 to another. Whatever town you visit, if the people welcome you, eat  
 what is set before you; cure the sick there, and tell people 'The King-  
 dom of God is close at hand. But, whatever town you go to visit, if  
 the people do not welcome you, go out into its streets and say 'We  
 wipe off the very dust of your town which has clung to Our feet; still,  
 be assured that the Kingdom of God is close at Hand.' I tell you that 12

the doom of Sodom will be more bearable on 'That Day' than the  
13 doom of that town. Alas for you, Chorazin! Alas for you, Bethsaida!  
For, if the Miracles which have been done in you had been done  
in Tyre and Sidon, they would have sat in sackcloth and ashes and  
14 repented long ago. Yet the doom of Tyre and Sidon will be more  
15 bearable at the Judgment than yours. And you, Capernaum! Will  
you 'exalt yourself to heaven'? 'You shall go down to the Place of  
16 Death.' He who listens to you is listening to me, and he who rejects  
you is rejecting me; while he who rejects me is rejecting him who  
17 sent me as his Messenger." When the seventy-two returned, they  
exclaimed joyfully: "Master, even the demons submit to us when  
18 we use your name." And Jesus replied: "I have had visions of Satan,  
19 fallen, like lightning from the heavens. Remember, I have given you  
the power to 'trample upon serpents and scorpions,' and to meet all  
the strength of the Enemy. Nothing shall ever harm you in any way.  
20 Yet do not rejoice in the fact that the spirits submit to you, but re-  
21 joice that your names have been enrolled in Heaven." At that same  
time, moved to exultation by the Holy Spirit, Jesus said: "I thank  
thee, Father, Lord of Heaven and earth, that, though thou hast hid-  
den these things from the wise and learned, thou hast revealed them  
to the childlike! Yes, Father, I thank thee that this has seemed good  
22 to thee. Everything has been committed to me by my Father; nor  
does any one know who the Son is, except the Father, or who the  
Father is, except the Son and those to whom the Son may choose to  
23 reveal him." Then, turning to his disciples, Jesus said to them alone:  
24 "Blessed are the eyes that see what you are seeing; for, I tell you,  
many Prophets and Kings wished for the sight of the things which  
25 you are seeing, yet never heard them." Just then a Student of the Law  
came forward to test Jesus further. "Teacher," he said, "what must I  
26 do if I am to 'gain Immortal Life'?" "What is said in the Law?" an-  
27 swered Jesus. "What do you read there?" His reply was — "'Thou  
shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,  
and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbor  
28 as thou dost thyself.'" "You have answered right," said Jesus; "do  
29 that, and you shall live." But the man, wanting to justify himself,

said to Jesus: "And who is my neighbor?" To which Jesus replied: 30  
 "A man was once going down from Jerusalem to Jericho when he  
 fell into the hands of robbers, who stripped him of everything, and  
 beat him, and went away leaving him half dead. As it chanced, a 31  
 priest was going down by that road. He saw the man, but passed  
 by on the opposite side. A Levite, too, did the same; he came up to 32  
 the spot, but, when he saw the man, passed by on the opposite side.  
 But a Samaritan, traveling that way, came upon the man, and, when 33  
 he saw him, he was moved with compassion. He went to him and 34  
 bound up his wounds, dressing them with oil and wine, and then  
 put him on his own mule, and brought him to an inn, and took care  
 of him. The next day he took out four shillings and gave them to the 35  
 inn-keeper. 'Take care of him,' he said, 'and whatever more you may  
 spend I will myself repay you on my way back.' Now which, do you 36  
 think, of these three men," asked Jesus, "proved himself a neighbor  
 to the man who fell into the robbers' hands?" "The one that took 37  
 pity on him," was the answer; on which Jesus said: "Go and do the  
 same yourself." As they continued their journey, Jesus came to a vil- 38  
 lage, where a woman named Martha welcomed him to her house.  
 She had a sister called Mary, who seated herself at the Master's feet, 39  
 and listened to his teaching; but Martha was distracted by the many 40  
 preparations that she was making. So she went up to Jesus and said:  
 "Master, do you approve of my sister's leaving me to make prepa-  
 rations alone? Tell her to help me." "Martha, Martha," replied the 41  
 Master, "you are anxious and trouble yourself about many things;  
 but only a few are necessary, or rather one. Mary has chosen the 42  
 good part, and it shall not be taken away from her." 11  
 One day Jesus was at a certain place praying, and, when he had fin-  
 ished, one of his disciples said to him: "Master, teach us to pray, as  
 John taught his disciples." "When you pray," Jesus answered, "say 2  
 — 'Father, May thy named be held holy, thy Kingdom come. Give 3  
 us each day the bread that we shall need; and forgive us our sins, 4  
 for we ourselves forgive every one who wrongs us; and take us not  
 into temptation.'" Jesus also said to them: "Suppose that one of you 5  
 who has a friend were to go to him in the middle of the night and

## Luke 11

6 say 'Friend, lend me three loaves, for a friend of mine has arrived  
7 at my house after a journey, and I have nothing to offer him;' And  
suppose that the other should answer from inside 'Do not trouble  
me; the door is already fastened, and my children and I are in bed;  
8 I cannot get up and give you anything'; I tell you that, even though  
he will not get up and give him anything because he is a friend,  
yet because of his persistence he will rouse himself and give him  
9 what he wants. And so I say to you — Ask, and your prayer shall  
be granted: search, and you shall find; knock, and the door shall be  
10 opened to you. For he that asks receives, he that searches finds, and  
11 to him that knocks the door shall be opened. What father among  
12 you, if his son asks him for a fish, will give him a snake instead, or,  
13 if he asks for an egg, will give him a scorpion? If you, then, natu-  
rally wicked though you are, know how to give good gifts to your  
children, how much more will the Father in Heaven give the Holy  
14 Spirit to those that ask him!" Once Jesus was driving out a dumb  
demon, and, when the demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke.  
15 The people were amazed at this; but some of them said: "He drives  
out demons by the help of Baal-zebub, the chief of the demons";  
16 while others, to test him, asked him for some sign from the heavens.  
17 Jesus himself, however, was aware of what they were thinking, and  
said to them: "Any kingdom wholly divided against itself becomes  
18 a desolation; and a divided house falls. So, too, if Satan is wholly  
divided against himself, how can his kingdom last? Yet you say that  
19 I drive out demons by the help of Baal-zebub. But, if it is by Baal-ze-  
bub's help that I drive out demons, by whose help is it that your  
own sons drive them out? Therefore they shall themselves be your  
20 judges. But, if it is by the hand of God that I drive out demons, then  
21 the Kingdom of God must already be upon you. When a strong man  
is keeping guard, fully armed, over his own mansion, his property  
22 is in safety; but, when one still stronger has attacked and overpow-  
ered him, he takes away all the weapons on which the other had  
23 relied, and divides his spoil. He who is not with me is against me,  
24 and he who does not help me to gather is scattering. No sooner does  
a foul spirit leave a man, than it passes through places where there

is no water, in search of rest; and finding none, it says 'I will go back  
to the home which I left'; but, on coming there, it finds it unoccu- 25  
pied, swept, and put in order. Then it goes and brings with it seven 26  
other spirits more wicked than itself, and they go in, and make their  
home there; and the last state of that man proves to be worse than  
the first." As Jesus was saying this, a woman in the crowd, raising 27  
her voice, exclaimed: "Happy was the mother who bore you and  
nursed you!" But Jesus replied: "Rather, happy are those who lis- 28  
ten to God's Message and keep it." As the crowds increased, Jesus 29  
began to speak: "This generation is a wicked generation. It is ask-  
ing a sign, but no sign shall be given it except the sign of Jonah.  
For, as Jonah became a sign to the people of Nineveh, so shall the 30  
Son of Man be to this generation. At the Judgment the Queen of the 31  
South will rise up with the men of this generation, and will condemn  
them, because she came from the very ends of the earth to listen to  
the wisdom of Solomon; and here is more than a Solomon! At the 32  
Judgment the men of Nineveh will stand up with this generation,  
and will condemn it, because they repented at Jonah's proclama-  
tion; and here is more than a Jonah! No one sets light to a lamp, and 33  
then puts it in the cellar of under the corn-measure, but he puts it  
on the lamp-stand, so that any one who comes in may see the light.  
The lamp of the body is your eye. When your eye is unclouded, your 34  
whole body, also, is lit up; but, as soon as your eye is diseased, your  
body, also, is darkened. Take care, therefore, that the inner Light is 35  
not darkness. If, then, your whole body is lit up, and no corner of 36  
it darkened, the whole will be lit up, just as when a lamp gives you  
light by its brilliance." As Jesus finished speaking, a Pharisee asked 37  
him to breakfast with him, and Jesus went in and took his place at  
table. The Pharisee noticed, to his astonishment, that Jesus omitted 38  
the ceremonial washing before breakfast. But the Master said to him: 39  
"You Pharisees do, it is true, clean the outside of the cup and of the  
plate, but inside you yourselves are filled with greed and wicked-  
ness. Fools! did not the maker of the outside make the inside too? 40  
Only give away what is in them in charity, and at once you have 41  
the whole clean. But alas for you Pharisees! You pay tithes on mint, 42

rue, and herbs of all kinds, and pass over justice and love to God. These last you ought to have put into practice without neglecting  
43 the first. Alas for you Pharisees! You delight to have the front seat in  
44 the Synagogues, and to be greeted in the markets with respect. Alas  
for you! You are like unsuspected graves, over which men walk un-  
45 awares." Here one of the Students of the Law interrupted him by  
46 saying: "Teacher, when you say this, you are insulting us also." But  
Jesus went on: "Alas for you, too, you Students of the Law! You load  
men with loads that are too heavy to carry, but do not, yourselves,  
47 touch them with one of your fingers. Alas for you! You build the  
48 monuments of the Prophets whom your ancestors killed. You are  
actually witnesses to your ancestors' acts and show your approval  
of them, because, while they killed the Prophets, you build tombs  
49 for them. That is why the Wisdom of God said — "I will send to  
50 them Prophets and Apostles, some of whom they will persecute and  
kill, in order that the 'blood' of all the prophets 'that has been spilt'  
since the creation of the world may be exacted from this generation  
51 — From the blood of Abel down to the blood of Zechariah, who was  
slain between the altar and the House of God." Yes, I tell you, it will  
52 be exacted from this generation. Alas for you Students of the Law!  
You have taken away the key of the door of Knowledge. You have  
not gone in yourselves and you have hindered those who try to go  
53 in." When Jesus left the house, the Teachers of the Law and the Phar-  
isees began to press him hard and question him closely upon many  
54 subjects, laying traps for him, so as to seize upon anything that he  
12 might say.

Meanwhile the people had gathered in thousands, so that they trod  
upon one another, when Jesus, addressing himself to his disciples,  
began by saying to them: "Be on your guard against the leaven —  
2 that is, the hypocrisy — of the Pharisees. There is nothing, however  
covered up, which will not be uncovered, nor anything kept secret  
3 which will not become known. Hence all that you have said in the  
dark will be heard in the light, and what you have spoken in the ear,  
4 within closed doors, will be proclaimed upon the housetops. To you  
who are my friends I say, Do not be afraid of those who kill the body,



but after that can do no more. I will show you of whom you should 5  
 be afraid. Be afraid of him who, after killing you, has the power to 6  
 fling you into the Pit. Yes, I say, be afraid of him. Are not five spar- 6  
 rows sold for a penny? Yet not one of them has escaped God's notice.  
 No, the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not be afraid; 7  
 you are of more value than many sparrows. Every one, I tell you, 8  
 who shall acknowledge me before his fellow men, the Son of Man,  
 also, will acknowledge before God's angels; but he, who disowns me 9  
 before his fellow men, will be altogether disowned before God's an-  
 gels. Every one who shall say anything against the Son of Man will 10  
 be forgiven, but for him who slanders the Holy Spirit there will be no  
 forgiveness. Whenever they take you before the Synagogue Courts 11  
 or the magistrates or other authorities, do not be anxious as to how  
 you will defend yourselves, or what your defense will be, or what 12  
 you will say; for the Holy Spirit will show you at the moment what 12  
 you ought to say." "Teacher," a man in the crowd said to Jesus, "tell 13  
 my brother to share the property with me." But Jesus said to him: 14  
 "Man, who made me a judge or an arbiter between you?" And then 15  
 he added: "Take care to keep yourselves free from every form of cov-  
 etousness; for even in the height of his prosperity a man's true Life  
 does not depend on what he has." Then Jesus told them this parable 16  
 — "There was once a rich man whose land was very fertile; and he 17  
 began to ask himself 'What shall I do, for I have nowhere to store my  
 crops? This is what I will do,' he said; 'I will pull down my barns and 18  
 build larger ones, and store all my grain and my goods in them; and 19  
 I will say to myself, Now you have plenty of good things put by for  
 many years; take your ease, eat, drink, and enjoy yourself.' But God 20  
 said to the man 'Fool! This very night your life is being demanded;  
 and as for all you have prepared — who will have it?' So it is with 21  
 those who lay by wealth for themselves and are not rich to the glory  
 of God." And Jesus said to his disciples: "That is why I say to you, 22  
 Do not be anxious about the life here — what you can get to eat; nor  
 yet about your body — what you can get to wear. For life is more 23  
 than food, and the body than its clothes. Think of the ravens — they 24  
 neither sow nor reap; they have neither storehouse nor barn; and yet

God feeds them! And how much more precious are you than birds!  
25 But which of you, by being anxious, can prolong his life a moment?  
26 And, if you cannot do even the smallest thing, why be anxious about  
27 other things? Think of the lilies, and how they grow. They neither  
toil nor spin; yet, I tell you, even Solomon in all his splendor was  
28 not robed like one of these. If, even in the field, God so clothes the  
grass which is living to-day and to-morrow will be thrown into the  
29 oven, how much more will he clothe you, O men of little faith! And  
you — do not be always seeking what you can get to eat or what you  
30 can get to drink; and do not waver. These are the things for which  
all the nations of the world are seeking, and your Father knows that  
31 you need them. No, seek his Kingdom, and these things shall be  
32 added for you. So do not be afraid, my little flock, for your Father  
33 has been pleased to give you the Kingdom. Sell what belongs to you,  
and give in charity. Make yourselves purses that will not wear out  
— an inexhaustible treasure in Heaven, where no thief comes near,  
34 or moth works ruin. For where your treasure is, there also will your  
35 heart be. Make yourselves ready, with your lamps alight; and be like  
men who are waiting for their Master's return from his wedding, so  
that, when he comes and knocks, they may open the door for him  
37 at once. Happy are those servants whom, on his return, the Master  
will find watching. I tell you that he will make himself ready, and bid  
them take their places at table, and will come and wait upon them.  
38 Whether it is late at night, or in the early morning that he comes, if  
39 he finds all as it should be, then happy are they. This you do know,  
that, had the owner of the house known at what time the thief was  
coming, he would have been on the watch, and would not have let  
40 his house be broken into. Do you also prepare, for when you are least  
41 expecting him the Son of Man will come." "Master," said Peter, "are  
42 you telling this parable with reference to us or to every one?" "Who,  
then," replied the Master, "is that trustworthy steward, the careful  
man, who will be placed by his master over his establishment, to  
43 give them their rations at the proper time? Happy will that servant  
44 be whom his master, when he comes home, shall find doing this. His

master, I tell you, will put him in charge of the whole of his prop-  
 erty. But should that servant say to himself 'My master is a long time  
 coming,' and begin to beat the menservants and the maidservants,  
 and to eat and drink and get drunk, that servant's master will come  
 on a day when he does not expect him, and at an hour of which he is  
 unaware, and will flog him severely and assign him his place among  
 the untrustworthy. The servant who knows his master's wishes and  
 yet does not prepare and act accordingly will receive many lashes;  
 while one who does not know his master's wishes, but acts so as to  
 deserve a flogging, will receive but few. From every one to whom  
 much has been given much will be expected, and from the man to  
 whom much has been entrusted the more will be demanded. I came  
 to cast fire upon the earth; and what more can I wish, if it is already  
 kindled? There is a baptism that I must undergo, and how great is  
 my distress until it is over! Do you think that I am here to give peace  
 on earth? No, I tell you, but to cause division. For from this time, if  
 there are five people in a house, they will be divided, three against  
 two, and two against three. 'Father will be opposed to son and son to  
 father, mother to daughter and daughter to mother, mother-in-law  
 to her daughter-in-law and daughter-in-law to her mother-in-law.'  
 And to the people Jesus said: "When you see a cloud rising in the  
 west, you say at once 'There is a storm coming,' and come it does.  
 And when you see that the wind is in the south, you say 'It will be  
 burning hot,' and so it proves. Hypocrites! You know how to judge  
 of the earth and the sky; how is it, then, that you cannot judge of  
 this time? Why do not you yourselves decide what is right? When,  
 for instance, you are going with your opponent before a magistrate,  
 on your way to the court do your best to be quit of him; for fear that  
 he should drag you before the judge, when the judge will hand you  
 over to the bailiff of the court, and the bailiff throw you into prison.  
 You will not, I tell you, come out until you have paid the very last  
 farthing."

13

Just at that time some people had come to tell Jesus about the  
 Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with the blood of their  
 sacrifices. "Do you suppose," replied Jesus, "that, because these

2

Galileans have suffered in this way, they were worse sinners than  
 3 any other Galileans? No, I tell you; but, unless you repent, you will  
 4 all perish as they did. Or those eighteen men at Siloam on whom  
 the tower fell, killing them all, do you suppose that they were  
 5 worse offenders than any other inhabitants of Jerusalem? No, I tell  
 you; but, unless you repent, you will all perish in the same  
 6 manner.” And Jesus told them this parable — “A man, who had a  
 fig tree growing in his vineyard, came to look for fruit on it, but  
 7 could not find any. So he said to his gardener ‘Three years now I  
 have come to look for fruit on this fig tree, without finding any!  
 8 Cut it down. Why should it rob the soil?’ ‘Leave it this one year  
 more, Sir,’ the man answered, ‘till I have dug round it and  
 9 manured it. Then, if it bears in future, well and good; but if not,  
 10 you can have it cut down.’” Jesus was teaching on a Sabbath in one  
 11 of the Synagogues, and he saw before him a woman who for  
 eighteen years had suffered from weakness owing to her having an  
 evil spirit in her. She was bent double, and was wholly unable to  
 12 raise herself. When Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said:  
 13 “Woman, you are released from your weakness.” He placed his  
 hands on her, and she was instantly made straight, and began to  
 14 praise God. But the President of the Synagogue, indignant that  
 Jesus had worked the cure on the Sabbath, interposed and said to  
 the people: “There are six days on which work ought to be done;  
 15 come to be cured on one of those, and not on the Sabbath.” “You  
 hypocrites!” the Master answered him. “Does not every one of you  
 let his ox or his ass loose from its manger, and take it out to drink,  
 16 on the Sabbath? But this woman, a daughter of Abraham, who has  
 been kept in bondage by Satan for now eighteen years, ought not  
 17 she to have been released from her bondage on the Sabbath?” As  
 he said this, his opponents all felt ashamed; but all the people  
 18 rejoiced to see all the wonderful things that he was doing. So Jesus  
 said: “What is the Kingdom of God like? and to what can I liken it?  
 19 It is like a mustard-seed which a man took and put in his garden.  
 The seed grew and became a tree, and ‘the wild birds roosted in its  
 20 branches.’” And again Jesus said: “To what can I liken the

Kingdom of God? It is like some yeast which a woman took and covered in three pecks of flour, until the whole had risen." Jesus went through towns and villages, teaching as he went, and making his way towards Jerusalem. "Master," some one asked, "are there but few in the path of Salvation?" And Jesus answered: "Strive to go in by the small door. Many, I tell you, will seek to go in, but they will not be able, when once the master of the house has got up and shut the door, while you begin to say, as you stand outside and knock, 'Sir, open the door for us.' His answer will be — 'I do not know where you come from.' Then you will begin to say 'We have eaten and drunk in your presence, and you have taught in our streets,' and his reply will be — 'I do not know where you come from. Leave my presence, all you who are living in wickedness.' There, there will be weeping and grinding of teeth, when you see Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and all the Prophets, in the Kingdom of God, while you yourselves are being driven outside. People will come from East and West, and from North and South, and take their places at the banquet in the Kingdom of God. there are some who are last now who will then be first, and some who are first now who will then be last!" Just then some Pharisees came up to Jesus and said: "Go away and leave this place, for Herod wants to kill you." But Jesus answered: "Go and say to that fox 'Look you, I am driving out demons and shall be completing cures to-day and to-morrow, and on the third day I shall have done.' But to-day and to-morrow and the day after I must go on my way, because it cannot be that a Prophet should meet his end outside Jerusalem. Jerusalem! Jerusalem! she who slays the Prophets and stones the messengers sent to her — Oh, how often have I wished to gather your children round me, as a hen takes her brood under her wings, and you would not come! Verily your House is left to you desolate! and never, I tell you, shall you see me, until you say — 'Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.'" **14**

On one occasion, as Jesus was going, on a Sabbath into the house of one of the leading Pharisees to dine, they were watching him closely. There he saw before him a man who was suffering from dropsy. "Is **3**

it allowable," said Jesus, addressing the Students of the Law and  
4 the Pharisees, "to work a cure on the Sabbath, or is it not?" They re-  
5 mained silent. Jesus took hold of the man and cured him, and sent  
6 him away. And he said to them: "Which of you, finding that his son  
7 or his ox has fallen into a well, will not immediately pull him out  
8 on the Sabbath Day?" And they could not make any answer to that.  
9 Observing that the guests were choosing the best places for them-  
10 selves, Jesus told them this parable — "When you are invited by any  
11 one to a wedding banquet, do not seat yourself in the best place, for  
12 fear that some one of higher rank should have been invited by your  
13 host; and he who invited you both will come and say to you 'Make  
14 room for this man,' and then you will begin in confusion to take  
15 the lowest place. No, when you are invited, go and take the lowest  
16 place, so that, when he who has invited you comes, he may say to  
17 you 'Friend, come higher up'; and then you will be honored in the  
18 eyes of all your fellow-guests. For every one who exalts himself will  
19 be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted." Then Je-  
20 sus went on to say to the man who had invited him: "When you give  
21 a breakfast or a dinner, do not ask your friends, or your brothers, or  
your relations, or rich neighbors, for fear that they should invite you  
in return, and so you should be repaid. No, when you entertain, in-  
vite the poor, the crippled, the lame, the blind; and then you will  
be happy indeed, since they cannot recompense you; for you shall  
be recompensed at the resurrection of the good." One of the guests  
heard what he said and exclaimed: "Happy will he be who shall eat  
bread in the Kingdom of God!" But Jesus said to him: "A man was  
once giving a great dinner. He invited many people, and sent his  
servant, when it was time for the dinner, to say to those who had  
been invited 'Come, for everything is now ready.' They all with one  
accord began to ask to be excused. The first man said to the servant  
'I have bought a field and am obliged to go and look at it. I must  
ask you to consider me excused.' The next said 'I have bought five  
pairs of bullocks, and I am on my way to try them. I must ask you to  
consider me excused'; while the next said 'I am just married, and for  
that reason I am unable to come.' On his return the servant told his

master all these answers. Then in anger the owner of the house said to his servant 'Go out at once into the streets and alleys of the town, and bring in here the poor, and the crippled, and the blind, and the lame.' Presently the servant said 'Sir, your order has been carried out, and still there is room.' 'Go out,' the master said, 'into the roads and hedgerows, and make people come in, so that my house may be filled; for I tell you all that not one of those men who were invited will taste my dinner.'" One day, when great crowds of people were walking with Jesus, he turned and said to them: "If any man comes to me and does not hate his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers, and sisters, yes and his very life, he can be no disciple of mine. Whoever does not carry his own cross, and walk in my steps, can be no disciple of mine. Why, which of you, when he wants to build a tower, does not first sit down and reckon the cost, to see if he has enough to complete it? — For fear that, if he has laid the foundation and is not able to finish it, every one who sees it should begin to laugh at him, and say 'Here is a man who began to build and was not able to finish!' Or what king, when he is setting out to fight another king, does not first sit down and consider if with ten thousand men he is able to meet one who is coming against him with twenty thousand? And if he cannot, then, while the other is still at a distance, he sends envoys and asks for terms of peace. And so with every one of you who does not bid farewell to all he has — he cannot be a disciple of mine. Yes, salt is good; but, if the salt itself should lose its strength, what shall be used to season it? It is not fit either for the land or for the manure heap. Men throw it away. Let him who has ears to hear with hear!"

The tax-gatherers and the outcasts were all drawing near to Jesus to listen to him; but the Pharisees and the Teachers of the Law found fault. "This man always welcomes outcasts, and takes meals with them!" they complained. So Jesus told them this parable — "What man among you who has a hundred sheep, and has lost one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine out in the open country, and go after the lost sheep till he finds it? And, when he has found it, he puts in on his shoulders rejoicing; and, on reaching home, he

calls his friends and his neighbors together, and says 'Come and rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost.' So, I tell you, there will be more rejoicing in Heaven over one outcast that repents, than over ninety-nine religious men, who have no need to repent. Or again, what woman who has ten silver coins, if she loses one of them, does not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and search carefully until she finds it? And, when she has found it, she calls her friends and neighbors together, and says 'Come and rejoice with me, for I have found the coin which I lost.' So, I tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of God's angels over one outcast that repents."

12 Then Jesus continued: "A man had two sons; and the younger of them said to his father 'Father, give me my share of the inheritance.' So the father divided the property between them. A few days later the younger son got together all that he had, and went away into a distant land; and there he squandered his inheritance by leading a dissolute life. After he has spent all that he had, there was a severe famine through all that country, and he began to be in actual want. So he went and engaged himself to one of the people of that country, who sent him into his fields to tend pigs. He even longed to satisfy his hunger with the bean-pods on which the pigs were feeding; and no one gave him anything. But, when he came to himself, he said 'How many of my father's hired servants have more bread than they can eat, while here am I starving to death! I will get up and go to my father, and say to him "Father, I sinned against Heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make me one of your hired servants."' And he got up and went to his father. But, while he was still a long way off, his father saw him and was deeply moved; he ran and threw his arms round his neck and kissed him.

21 'Father,' the son said, 'I sinned against Heaven and against you; I am no longer fit to be called your son; make me one of your hired servants.' But the father turned to his servants and said 'Be quick and fetch a robe — the very best — and put it on him; give him a ring for his finger and sandals for his feet; and bring the fattened calf and kill it, and let us eat and make merry; for here is my son who was dead, and is alive again, was lost, and is found.' So they



began making merry. Meanwhile the elder son was out in the fields; 25  
 but, on coming home, when he got near the house, he heard music  
 and dancing, and he called one of the servants and asked what it all 26  
 meant. 'Your brother has come back,' the servant told him, 'and your 27  
 father has killed the fattened calf, because he has him back safe and  
 sound.' This made him angry, and he would not go in. But his father 28  
 came out and begged him to do so. 'No,' he said to his father, 'look 29  
 at all the years I have been serving you, without ever once disobey-  
 ing you, and yet you have never given me even a kid, so that I might  
 have a merry-making with my friends. But, no sooner has this son 30  
 of yours come, who has eaten up your property in the company of  
 prostitutes, than you have killed the fattened calf for him.' 'Child,' 31  
 the father answered, 'you are always with me, and everything that I  
 have is yours. We could but make merry and rejoice, for here is your 32  
 brother who was dead, and is alive; who was lost, and is found.'" 16  
 Jesus said to his disciples: "There was a rich man who had a stew-  
 ard; and this steward was maliciously accused to him of wasting his  
 estate. So the master called him and said 'What is this that I hear 2  
 about you? Give in your accounts, for you cannot act as steward  
 any longer.' 'What am I to do,' the steward asked himself, 'now that 3  
 my master is taking the steward's place away from me? I have not  
 strength to dig, and I am ashamed to beg. I know what I will do, 4  
 so that, as soon as I am turned out of my stewardship, people may  
 welcome me into their homes.' One by one he called up his master's 5  
 debtors. 'How much do you owe my master?' he asked of the first.  
 'Four hundred and forty gallons of oil,' answered the man. 'Here 6  
 is your agreement,' he said; 'sit down at once and make it two hun-  
 dred and twenty.' And you, the steward said to the next, 'how much 7  
 do you owe?' 'Seventy quarters of wheat,' he replied. 'Here is your  
 agreement,' the steward said; 'make it fifty-six.' His master com- 8  
 plimented this dishonest steward on the shrewdness of his action.  
 And indeed men of the world are shrewder in dealing with their  
 fellow-men than those who have the Light. And I say to you 'Win 9  
 friends for yourselves with your dishonest money,' so that, when it  
 comes to an end, there may be a welcome for you into the Eternal

## Luke 16

10 Home. He who is trustworthy in the smallest matter is trustworthy  
in a great one also; and he who is dishonest in the smallest matter is  
11 dishonest in a great one also. So, if you have proved untrustworthy  
12 with the 'dishonest money,' who will trust you with the true? And,  
if you have proved untrustworthy with what does not belong to us,  
13 who will give you what is really our own? No servant can serve two  
masters, for, either he will hate one and love the other, or else he will  
attach himself to one and despise the other. You cannot serve both  
14 God and Money." All this was said within hearing of the Pharisees,  
15 who were lovers of money, and they began to sneer at Jesus. "You,"  
said Jesus, "are the men who justify themselves before the world,  
but God can read your hearts; and what is highly esteemed among  
16 men may be an abomination in the sight of God. The Law and the  
Prophets sufficed until the time of John. Since then the Good News  
of the Kingdom of God has been told, and everybody has been forc-  
17 ing his way into it. It would be easier for the heavens and the earth  
to disappear than for one stroke of a letter in the Law to be lost.  
18 Every one who divorces his wife and marries another woman is an  
adulterer, and the man who marries a divorced woman is an adul-  
19 terer. There was once a rich man, who dressed in purple robes and  
20 fine linen, and feasted every day in great splendor. Near his gateway  
there had been laid a beggar named Lazarus, who was covered with  
21 sores, and who longed to satisfy his hunger with what fell from the  
22 rich man's table. Even the very dogs came and licked his sores. After  
a time the beggar died, and was taken by the angels to be with Abra-  
23 ham. The rich man also died and was buried. In the Place of Death  
he looked up in his torment, and saw Abraham at a distance and  
24 Lazarus at his side. So he called out 'Pity me, Father Abraham, and  
send Lazarus to dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue,  
25 for I am suffering agony in this flame.' 'Child,' answered Abraham,  
'remember that you in your lifetime received what you thought desir-  
able, just as Lazarus received what was not desirable; but now  
26 he has his consolation here, while you are suffering agony. And not  
only that, but between you and us there lies a great chasm, so that  
those who wish to pass from here to you cannot, nor can they cross

from there to us.' 'Then, Father,' he said, 'I beg you to send Lazarus 27  
to my father's house — For I have five brothers to warn them, so 28  
that they may not come to this place of torture also.' 'They have the 29  
writings of Moses and the Prophets,' replied Abraham; 'let them lis-  
ten to them.' 'But, Father Abraham,' he urged, 'if some one from the 30  
dead were to go to them, they would repent.' 'If they do not listen 31  
to Moses and the Prophets,' answered Abraham, 'they will not be  
persuaded, even if some one were to rise from the dead.'" 17

Jesus said to his disciples: "It is inevitable that there should be  
snares; yet alas for him who is answerable for them! It would be 2  
good for him if he had been flung into the sea with a mill-stone  
round his neck, rather than that he should prove a snare to even 3  
one of these lowly ones. Be on your guard! If your brother does 4  
wrong, reprove him; but if he repents, forgive him. Even if he 5  
wrongs you seven times a day, but turns to you every time and  
says 'I am sorry,' you must forgive him." "Give us more faith," said 6  
the Apostles to the Master; but the Master said: "If your faith were 7  
only like a mustard- seed, you could say to this mulberry tree 'Be  
up-rooted and planted in the sea,' and it would obey you. Which of 8  
you, if he had a servant ploughing, or tending the sheep, would  
say to him, when he came in from the fields, 'Come at once and 9  
take your place at table,' Instead of saying 'Prepare my dinner, and 10  
then make yourself ready and wait on me while I am eating and  
drinking, and after that you shall eat and drink yourself'? Does he 11  
feel grateful to his servant for doing what he is told? And so with 12  
you — when you have done all that you have been told, still say  
'We are but useless servants; we have done no more than we ought  
to have done.'" On the way to Jerusalem Jesus passed between 13  
Samaria and Galilee. As he was entering a village, ten lepers met  
him. Standing still, some distance off, they called out loudly: 14  
"Jesus! Sir! pity us!" When Jesus saw them, he said: "Go and show  
yourselves to the priest." And, as they were on their way, they were 15  
made clean. One of them, finding he was cured, came back, 16  
praising God loudly, and threw himself on his face at Jesus' feet,  
thanking him for what he had done; and this man was a

17 Samaritan. "Were not all the ten made clean? exclaimed Jesus. But  
 18 the nine — where are they? Were there none to come back and  
 19 praise God except this foreigner? Get up," he said to him, "and go  
 20 on your way. Your faith has delivered you." Being once asked by  
 the Pharisees when the Kingdom of God was to come, Jesus  
 answered: "The Kingdom of God does not come in a way that  
 21 admits of observation, nor will people say 'Look, here it is!' or  
 22 'There it is!'; for the Kingdom of God is within you! The day will  
 come," he said to his disciples, "when you will long to see but one  
 23 of the days of the Son of Man, and will not see it. People will say to  
 24 you 'There he is! or 'Here he is! Do not go and follow them. For,  
 just as lightning will lighten and flare from one side of the heavens  
 25 to the other, so will it be with the Son of Man. But first he must  
 undergo much suffering, and he must be rejected by the present  
 26 generation. As it was in the days of Noah, so will it be again in the  
 27 days of the Son of Man. They were eating and drinking and  
 marrying and being married, up to the very day on which Noah  
 entered the ark, and then the flood came and destroyed them all.  
 28 So, too, in the days of Lot. People were eating, drinking, buying,  
 29 selling, planting, building; but, on the very day on which Lot came  
 out of Sodom, it rained fire and sulphur from the skies and  
 30 destroyed them all. It will be the same on the day on which the Son  
 31 of Man reveals himself. On that day, if a man is on his house-top  
 and his goods in the house, he must not go down to get them; nor  
 32 again must one who is on the farm turn back. Remember Lot's  
 33 wife. Whoever is eager to get the most out of his life will lose it; but  
 34 whoever will lose it shall preserve it. On that night, I tell you, of  
 two men upon the same bed, one will be taken and the other left;  
 35 of two women grinding together, one will be taken and the other  
 37 left." "Where will it be, Master?" interposed the disciples. "Where  
 18 there is a body," said Jesus, "'there will the vultures flock.'"

Jesus told his disciples a parable to show them that they should al-  
 2 ways pray and never despair. "There was," he said, "in a certain  
 3 town a judge, who had no fear of God nor regard for man. In the  
 same town there was a widow who went to him again and again,

and said 'Grant me justice against my opponent.' For a time the judge refused, but afterwards he said to himself 'Although I am without fear of God or regard for man, yet, as this widow is so troublesome, I will grant her justice, to stop her from plaguing me with her endless visits.'" Then the Master added: "Listen to what this iniquitous judge says! And God — will not he see that his own People, who cry to him night and day, have justice done them — though he holds his hand? He will, I tell you, have justice done them, and that soon! Yet, when the Son of Man comes, will he find faith on earth?"

Another time, speaking to people who were satisfied that they were religious, and who regarded every one else with scorn, Jesus told this parable — "Two men went up into the Temple Courts to pray. One was a Pharisee and the other a tax-gatherer. The Pharisee stood forward and began praying to himself in this way — 'O God, I thank thee that I am not like other men — thieves, rogues, adulterers — or even like this tax-gatherer. I fast twice a week, and give a tenth of everything I get to God.' Meanwhile the tax-gatherer stood at a distance, not venturing even 'to raise his eyes to Heaven'; but he kept striking his breast and saying 'O God, have mercy on me, a sinner.' This man, I tell you, went home pardoned, rather than the other; for every one who exalts himself will be humbled, while every one who humbles himself shall be exalted." Some of the people were bringing even their babies to Jesus, for him to touch them; but, when the disciples saw it, they began to find fault with those who had brought them. Jesus, however, called the little children to him. "Let the little children come to me," he said, "and do not hinder them; for it is to the childlike that the Kingdom of God belongs. I tell you, unless a man receives the Kingdom of God like a child, he will not enter it at all." And one of the Presidents asked Jesus this question — "Good Teacher, what must I do if I am to gain Immortal Life?" "Why do you call me good?" answered Jesus. "No one is good but God. You know the commandments — 'Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not say what is false about others, Honor thy father and thy mother.'" "I have observed all these," he replied, "from childhood." Hearing this, Jesus said to him: "There is one thing still lacking in

23 you; sell everything that you have, and distribute to the poor, and  
 24 you shall have wealth in Heaven; then come and follow me." But  
 25 the man became greatly distressed on hearing this, for he was ex-  
 26 tremely rich. Seeing this, Jesus said to his disciples: "How hard it is  
 27 for men of wealth to enter the Kingdom of God! It is easier, indeed,  
 28 for a camel to get through a needle's eye than for a rich man to enter  
 29 the Kingdom of God!" "Then who can be saved?" asked those who  
 30 heard this. But Jesus said: "What is impossible with men is possible  
 31 with God." "But we," said Peter, "we left what belonged to us and  
 32 followed you." "I tell you," he answered, "that there is no one who  
 33 has left house, or wife, or brothers, or parents, or children, on ac-  
 34 count of the Kingdom of God, who will not receive many times as  
 35 much in the present, and in the age that is coming Immortal Life."  
 36 Gathering the Twelve round him, Jesus said to them: "Listen! We  
 37 are going up to Jerusalem; and there everything that is written in  
 38 the Prophets will be done to the Son of Man. For he will be given up  
 39 to the Gentiles, mocked, insulted and spat upon; they will scourge  
 40 him, and then put him to death; and on the third day he will rise  
 41 again." The Apostles did not comprehend any of this; his meaning  
 42 was unintelligible to them, and they did not understand what he  
 43 was saying. As Jesus was getting near Jericho, a blind man was sit-  
 44 ting by the road-side, begging. Hearing a crowd going by, the man  
 45 asked what was the matter; and, when people told him that Jesus  
 46 of Nazareth was passing, he shouted out: "Jesus, Son of David, take  
 47 pity on me!" Those who were in front kept telling him to be quiet,  
 48 but he continued to call out the louder: "Son of David, take pity on  
 49 me!" Then Jesus stopped and ordered the man to be brought to him.  
 50 And, when he had come close up to him, Jesus asked him: "What do  
 51 you want me to do for you?" "Master," he said, "I want to recover  
 52 my sight." And Jesus said: "Recover your sight, your faith has de-  
 53 livered you." Instantly he recovered his sight, and began to follow  
 54 Jesus, praising God. And all the people, on seeing it, gave glory to  
 55 God.

2 Jesus entered Jericho and made his way through the town. There  
 was a man there, known by the name of Zacchaeus, who was a

commissioner of taxes and a rich man. He tried to see what Jesus 3  
 was like; but, being short, he was unable to do so because of the  
 crowd. So he ran on ahead and climbed into a mulberry tree, to see 4  
 Jesus, for he knew that he must pass that way. When Jesus came to 5  
 the place, he looked up and said to him: "Zacchaeus, be quick and  
 come down, for I must stop at your house to-day." So Zacchaeus 6  
 got down quickly, and joyfully welcomed him. On seeing this, every 7  
 one began to complain: "He has gone to stay with a man who is an  
 outcast." But Zacchaeus stood forward and said to the Master: "Lis- 8  
 ten, Master! I will give half my property to the poor, and, if I have  
 defrauded any one of anything, I will give him back four times as  
 much." "Salvation has come to this house to-day," answered Jesus, 9  
 "for even this man is a son of Abraham. The Son of Man has come 10  
 to 'search for those who are lost' and to save them." As the people 11  
 were listening to this, Jesus went on to tell them a parable. He did so  
 because he was near Jerusalem, and because they thought that the  
 Kingdom of God was going to be proclaimed at once. He said: "A 12  
 nobleman once went to a distant country to receive his appointment  
 to a Kingdom and then return. He called ten of his servants and gave 13  
 them ten pounds each, and told them to trade with them during his  
 absence. But his subjects hated him and sent envoys after him to say 14  
 'We will not have this man as our King.' On his return, after hav- 15  
 ing been appointed King, he directed that the servants to whom he  
 had given his money should be summoned, so that he might learn  
 what amount of trade they had done. The first came up, and said 16  
 'Sir, your ten pounds have made a hundred.' 'Well done, good serv- 17  
 vant!' exclaimed the master. 'As you have proved trustworthy in a  
 very small matter, I appoint you governor over ten towns.' When the 18  
 second came, he said 'Your ten pounds, Sir, have produced fifty.' So 19  
 the master said to him 'And you I appoint over five towns.' Another 20  
 servant also came and said 'Sir, here are your ten pounds; I have kept  
 them put away in a handkerchief. For I was afraid of you, because 21  
 you are a stern man. You take what you have not planted, and reap  
 what you have not sown.' The master answered 'Out of your own 22  
 mouth I judge you, you worthless servant. You knew that I am a

stern man, that I take what I have not planted, and reap what I have  
 23 not sown? Then why did not you put my money into a bank? And  
 24 I, on my return, could have claimed it with interest. Take away from  
 him the ten pounds,' he said to those standing by, 'and give them  
 25 to the one who has the hundred.' 'But, Sir,' they interposed, 'he has  
 26 a hundred pounds already!' 'I tell you,' he answered, 'that, to him  
 who has, more will be given, but, from him who has nothing, even  
 27 what he has will be taken away. But as for my enemies, these men  
 who would not have me as their King, bring them here and put them  
 28 to death in my presence.'" After saying this, Jesus went on in front,  
 29 going up to Jerusalem. It was when Jesus had almost reached Beth-  
 phage and Bethany, near the Mount of Olives, that he sent on two  
 30 of the disciples. "Go to the village facing us," he said, " and, when  
 you get there, you will find a foal tethered, which no one has yet  
 31 ridden; untie it and lead it here. And, if anybody asks you 'Why are  
 32 you untying it?,' you are to say this — 'The Master wants it.'" So the  
 33 two who were sent went and found it as Jesus had told them. While  
 they were untying the foal, the owners asked them — "Why are you  
 34 untying the foal?" And the two disciples answered — "The Master  
 35 wants it." Then they led it back to Jesus, and threw their cloaks on  
 36 the foal and put Jesus upon it. As he went along, the people kept  
 37 spreading their cloaks in the road. When he had almost reached the  
 place where the road led down the Mount of Olives, every one of the  
 38 many disciples began in their joy to praise God loudly for all the mir-  
 39 acles that they had seen: "Blessed is He who comes — Our King — in  
 the name of the Lord! Peace in Heaven, And glory on high." Some of  
 the Pharisees in the crowd said to him: "Teacher, reprove your disci-  
 40 ples." But Jesus answered: "I tell you that if these men are silent, the  
 41 very stones will call out." When he drew near, on seeing the city,  
 42 he wept over it, and said: "Would that you had known, while yet  
 there was time — even you — the things that make for peace! But  
 43 now they have been hidden from your sight. For a time is coming  
 upon you when your enemies will surround you with earthworks,  
 44 and encircle you, and hem you in on all sides; they will trample you  
 down and your children within you, and they will not leave in you



one stone upon another, because you did not know ‘the time of your visitation.’” Jesus went into the Temple Courts and began to drive out those who were selling, saying as he did so: “Scripture says — ‘My House shall be a House of Prayer’; but you have made it ‘a den of robbers.’” Jesus continued to teach each day in the Temple Courts; but the Chief Priests and Teachers of the Law were eager to take his life, and so also were the leading men. Yet they could not see what to do, for the people all hung upon his words. 45  
46  
47  
48  
20

On one of these days, when Jesus was teaching the people in the Temple Courts and telling the Good News, the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law, joined by the Councillors, confronted him, and addressing him, said: “Tell us what authority you have to do these things. Who is it that has given you this authority?” “I, too,” said Jesus in reply, “will ask you one question. Give me an answer to it. It is about John’s baptism — was it of divine or of human origin?” But they began arguing together: “If we say ‘divine,’ he will say ‘Why did not you believe him?’ But, if we say ‘human,’ the people will all stone us, for they are persuaded that John was a Prophet.” So they answered that they did not know its origin. “Then I,” said Jesus, “refuse to tell you what authority I have to do these things.” But Jesus began to tell the people this parable — “A man once planted a vineyard, and then let it out to tenants, and went abroad for a long while. At the proper time he sent a servant to the tenants, that they should give him a share of the produce of the vineyard. The tenants, however, beat him and sent him away empty-handed. The owner afterwards sent another servant; but the tenants beat and insulted this man too, and sent him away empty-handed. He sent a third; but they wounded this man also, and threw him outside. ‘What shall I do?’ said the owner of the vineyard. ‘I will send my son, who is very dear to me. Perhaps they will respect him.’ But, on seeing him, the tenants consulted with one another. ‘Here is the heir!’ they said. ‘Let us kill him, and then the inheritance will become ours.’ So they threw him outside the vineyard and killed him. Now what will the owner of the vineyard do to them? He will come and put those tenants to death, and will let the vineyard to others.” “Heaven forbid!” they 2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16

17 exclaimed when they heard it. But Jesus looked at them and said:  
 18 “What then is the meaning of this passage? — ‘The very stone which  
 19 the builders despised has now itself become the corner-stone.’ Every  
 20 one who falls on that stone will be dashed to pieces, while any one  
 21 on whom it falls — it will scatter him as dust.” After this the Teach-  
 22 ers of the Law and the Chief Priest were eager to lay hands on Je-  
 23 sus then and there, but they were afraid of the people; for they saw  
 24 that it was at them that he had aimed this parable. Having watched  
 25 their opportunity, they afterwards sent some spies, who pretended  
 26 to be good men, to catch Jesus in the course of conversation, and so  
 27 enable them to give him up to the Governor’s jurisdiction and au-  
 28 thority. These men asked Jesus a question. They said: “Teacher, we  
 29 know that you are right in what you say and teach, and that you  
 30 do not take any account of a man’s position, but teach the Way of  
 31 God honestly; are we right in paying tribute to the Emperor or not?”  
 32 Seeing through their deceitfulness, Jesus said to them: “Show me a  
 33 florin. Whose head and title are on it?” “The Emperor’s,” they said;  
 34 and Jesus replied: “Well then, pay to the Emperor what belongs to  
 35 the Emperor, and to God what belongs to God.” They could not lay  
 36 hold of this answer before the people; and, in their wonder at his  
 reply, they held their tongues. Presently there came up some Sad-  
 ducees, who maintain that there is no resurrection. Their question  
 was this — “Teacher, Moses laid down for us in his writings that  
 — ‘Should a man’s married brother die, and should he be childless,  
 the man should take the widow as his wife, and raise up a fam-  
 ily for his brother.’ Well, there were once seven brothers; of whom  
 the eldest, after taking a wife, died childless. The second and third  
 brothers both took her as their wife; and so, too, did all seven — dy-  
 ing without children. The woman herself was the last to die. About  
 the woman, then — at the resurrection, whose wife is she to be, all  
 seven brothers having had her as their wife?” “The men and women  
 of this world,” said Jesus, “marry and are given in marriage; but, for  
 those who are thought worthy to attain to that other world and the  
 resurrection from the dead, there is no marrying or being married,  
 nor indeed can they die again, for they are like angels and, having

shared in the resurrection, they are God's Sons. As to the fact that 37  
the dead rise, even Moses indicated that, in the passage about the  
Bush, when he calls the Lord — 'The God of Abraham, and the God  
of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.' Now he is not God of dead men, 38  
but of living. For in his sight all are alive." "Well said, Teacher!" ex- 39  
claimed some of the Teachers of the Law, for they did not venture to 40  
question him any further. But Jesus said to them: "How is it that peo- 41  
ple say that the Christ is to be David's son? For David, in the Book 42  
of Psalms, says himself — 'The Lord said to my lord: "Sit at my right  
hand, until I put thy enemies as a stool for thy feet.'" David, then, 43  
calls him 'lord,' so how is he David's son?" While all the people were 45  
listening, Jesus said to the disciples: "Be on your guard against the 46  
Teachers of the Law, who delight to walk about in long robes, and  
like to be greeted in the streets with respect, and to have the best  
seats in the Synagogues, and places of honor at dinner. These are 47  
the men who rob widows of their houses, and make a pretense of  
saying long prayers. Their sentence will be all the heavier." 21  
Looking up, Jesus saw the rich people putting their gifts into the  
chests for the Temple offerings. He saw, too, a widow in poor circum- 2  
stances putting two farthings into them. On this he said: "I tell you 3  
that this poor widow has put in more than all the others; for every 4  
one else here put in something from what he had to spare, while she,  
in her need, has put in all she had to live upon." When some of them 5  
spoke about the Temple being decorated with beautiful stones and  
offerings, Jesus said: "As for these things that you are looking at, a 6  
time is coming when not one stone will be left upon another here,  
which will not be thrown down." So the disciples questioned Jesus: 7  
"But, Teacher, when will this be? and what sign will there be when  
this is near?" And Jesus said: "See that you are not led astray; for 8  
many will take my name, and come saying 'I am He,' and 'The time  
is close at hand.' Do not follow them. And, when you hear of wars 9  
and disturbances, do not be terrified, for these things must occur  
first; but the end will not be at once." Then he said to them: "'Nati- 10  
on will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom,' And 11

there will be great earthquakes, and plagues and famines in various places, and there will be terrible appearances and signs in the  
12 heavens. Before all this, they will lay hands on you and persecute you, and they will betray you to Synagogues and put you in prison, when you will be brought before kings and governors for the sake  
13 of my Name. Then will be your opportunity of witnessing for me.  
14 Make up your minds, therefore, not to prepare your defense; for I will myself give you words, and a wisdom which all your opponents  
15 together will be unable to resist or defy. You will be betrayed even by your parents and brothers and relations and friends, and they  
16 will cause some of you to be put to death, and you will be hated by  
17 every one on account of my Name. Yet not a single hair of your heads  
18 shall be lost! By your endurance you shall win yourselves Life. As soon, however, as you see Jerusalem surrounded by armed camps,  
19 then you may know that the hour of her desecration is at hand. Then those of you who are in Judea must take refuge in the mountains,  
20 those who are in Jerusalem must leave at once, and those who are in the country places must not go into it. For these are to be the Days of  
21 Vengeance, when all that Scripture says will be fulfilled. Alas for the women that are with child, and for those that are nursing infants in those days! For there will be great suffering in the land, and anger  
22 against this people. They will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be taken prisoners to every land, and 'Jerusalem will be under the  
23 heel of the Gentiles,' until their day is over — as it shall be. There will be signs, too, in the sun and moon and stars, and on the earth despair among the nations, in their dismay at the roar of the sea  
24 and the surge. Men's hearts will fail them through dread of what is coming upon the world; for 'the forces of the heavens will be convulsed.' Then will be seen the 'Son of Man coming in a cloud' with  
25 power and great glory. And, when these things begin to occur, look upwards and lift your heads, for your deliverance will be at hand."  
26 Then he taught them a lesson thus — "Look at the fig tree and all the other trees. As soon as they shoot, you know, as you look at them,  
27 without being told, that summer is near. And so may you, as soon as you see these things happening, know that the Kingdom of God

is near. I tell you that even the present generation will not pass away 32  
till all has taken place. The heavens and the earth will pass away, but 33  
my words will never pass away. Be on your guard lest your minds 34  
should ever be dulled by debauches or drunkenness or the anxieties  
of life, and lest 'That Day' should come suddenly upon you, like a  
snare. For come it will upon all who are living upon the face of the 35  
whole earth. Be on the watch at all times, and pray that you may 36  
have strength to escape all that is destined to happen, and to stand  
in the presence of the Son of Man." During the days, Jesus contin- 37  
ued to teach in the Temple Courts, but he went out and spent the  
nights on the hill called the 'Mount of Olives.' And all the people 38  
would get up early in the morning and come to listen to him in the  
Temple Courts. 22

The Feast of the Unleavened Bread, known as the Passover, was near.  
The Chief Priest and the Teachers of the Law were looking for an 2  
opportunity of destroying Jesus, for they were afraid of the people.  
Now Satan took possession of Judas, who was known as Iscariot, 3  
and who belonged to the Twelve; and he went and discussed with 4  
the Chief Priests and Officers in charge at the Temple the best way of  
betraying Jesus to them. They were glad of this, and agreed to pay 5  
him. So Judas assented, and looked for an opportunity to betray Je- 6  
sus to them, in the absence of a crowd. When the day of the Festival 7  
of the Unleavened Bread came, on which the Passover lambs had  
to be killed, Jesus sent forward Peter and John, saying to them: "Go 8  
and make preparations for our eating the Passover." "Where do you 9  
wish us to make preparations?" they asked. "Listen," he answered, 10  
"when you have got into the city, a man carrying a pitcher of wa-  
ter will meet you; follow him into whatever house he enters; and 11  
you shall say to the owner of the house 'The Teacher says to you —  
Where is the room where I am to eat the Passover with my disci-  
ples?' The man will show you a large upstairs room, set out; there 12  
make preparations." So Peter and John went on, and found every- 13  
thing just as Jesus had told them, and they prepared the Passover.  
When the time came, Jesus took his place at table, and the Apost- 14  
les with him. "I have most earnestly wished," he said, "to eat this 15

16 Passover with you before I suffer. For I tell you that I shall not eat it  
 17 again, until it has had its fulfillment in the Kingdom of God." Then,  
 18 on receiving a cup, after saying the thanksgiving, he said: "Take this  
 and share it among you. For I tell you that I shall not, after to-day,  
 drink of the juice of the grape, till the Kingdom of God has come."  
 19 Then Jesus took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving,  
 broke it and gave to them, with the words: "This is my body, [which  
 20 is now to be given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me." And  
 in the same way with the cup, after supper, saying: "This cup is the  
 New Covenant made by my blood which is being poured out on  
 21 your behalf.] Yet see! the hand of the man that is betraying me is  
 22 beside me upon the table! True, the Son of Man is passing, by the  
 way ordained for him, yet alas for that man by whom he is being  
 23 betrayed!" Then they began questioning one another which of them  
 24 it could be that was going to do this. And a dispute arose among  
 25 them as to which of them was to be regarded as the greatest. Jesus,  
 however, said: "The kings of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their  
 26 oppressors are styled 'Benefactors.' But with you it must not be so.  
 No, let the greatest among you become like the youngest, and him  
 27 who leads like him who serves. Which is the greater — the mas-  
 ter at the table or his servant? Is not it the master at the table? Yet  
 28 I myself am among you as one who serves. You are the men who  
 29 have stood by me in my trials; and, just as my Father has assigned  
 30 me a Kingdom, I assign you places, so that you may eat and drink  
 at my table in my Kingdom, and be seated upon twelve thrones as  
 31 judges of the twelve tribes of Israel. Simon! Simon! listen. Satan de-  
 32 manded leave to sift you all like wheat, but I prayed for you, Simon,  
 that your faith should not fail. And you, when you have returned  
 33 to me, are to strengthen your Brothers." "Master," said Peter, "with  
 34 you I am ready to go both to prison and to death." "I tell you, Peter,"  
 replied Jesus, "the cock will not crow to-day till you have disowned  
 35 all knowledge of me three times." Then he said to them all: "When  
 I sent you out as my Messengers, without either purse, or bag, or  
 sandals, were you in need of anything?" "No; nothing," they an-  
 36 swered. "Now, however," he said, "he who has a purse must take it

and his bag as well; and he who has not must sell his cloak and buy  
a sword. For, I tell you, that passage of Scripture must be fulfilled in 37  
me, which says — ‘He was counted among the godless’; indeed all  
that refers to me is finding its fulfillment.” “Master,” they exclaimed, 38  
“look, here are two swords!” “Enough!” said Jesus. Jesus then went 39  
out, and made his way as usual to the Mount of Olives, followed by  
his disciples. And, when he reached the spot, he said to them: “Pray 40  
that you may not fall into temptation.” Then he withdrew about a 41  
stone’s throw, and knelt down and began to pray. “Father,” he said, 42  
“if it is thy pleasure, spare me this cup; only, not my will but thine be  
done.” [Presently there appeared to him an angel from Heaven, who 43  
strengthened him. And, as his anguish became intense, he prayed 44  
still more earnestly, while his sweat was like great drops of blood  
falling on the ground.] Then he rose from praying, and came to 45  
the disciples and found them sleeping for sorrow. “Why are you 46  
asleep?” he asked them. “Rise and pray, that you may not fall into  
temptation.” While he was still speaking, a crowd appeared in sight, 47  
led by the man called Judas, who was one of the Twelve. Judas ap-  
proached Jesus, to kiss him; on which Jesus said to him: “Judas, is 48  
it by a kiss that you betray the Son of Man?” But when those who 49  
were round Jesus saw what was going to happen, they exclaimed:  
“Master, shall we use our swords?” And one of them struck the High 50  
Priest’s servant and cut off his right ear; on which Jesus said: “Let me 51  
at least do this”; and, touching his ear, he healed the wound. Then, 52  
turning to the Chief Priests and Officers in charge at the Temple and  
Councillors, who had come for him, he said: “Have you come out,  
as if after a robber, with swords and clubs? When I was with you 53  
day after day in the Temple Courts, you did not lay hands on me;  
but now your time has come, and the power of Darkness.” Those 54  
who had taken Jesus prisoner took him away into the house of the  
High Priest. Peter followed at a distance. But, when they had lit a 55  
fire in the center of the court-yard and had all sat down there, Peter  
seated himself in the middle of them. Presently a maidservant saw 56  
him sitting near the blaze of the fire. Fixing her eyes on him, she  
said: “Why, this man was one of his companions!” But Peter denied 57

58 it. "I do not know him," he replied. A little while afterwards some  
 one else — a man — saw him and said: "Why, you are one of them!"  
 59 "No," Peter said, "I am not." About an hour later another man de-  
 clared positively: "This man also was certainly with him. Why, he is  
 60 a Galilean!" But Peter said: "I do not know what you are speaking  
 61 about." Instantly, while he was still speaking, a cock crowed. And  
 the Master turned and looked at Peter; and Peter remembered the  
 words that the Master had said to him — "Before a cock has crowed  
 62 to-day, you will disown me three times"; and he went outside and  
 63 wept bitterly. The men that held Jesus kept making sport of him and  
 64 beating him. They blindfolded him and then questioned him. "Now  
 65 play the Prophet," they said; "who was it that struck you?" And they  
 66 heaped many other insults on him. At daybreak the National Coun-  
 cil met — both the Chief Priests and the Teachers of the Law — and  
 67 took Jesus before their High Council. "If you are the Christ," they  
 said, "tell us so." "If I tell you," replied Jesus, "you will not believe  
 68 me; and, if I question you, you will not answer. But from this hour  
 'the Son of Man will be seated on the right hand of God Almighty.'" **23**  
 70 "Are you, then, the Son of God?" they all asked. "It is true," an-  
 71 swered Jesus, "I am." At this they exclaimed: "Why do we want any  
 more evidence? We have heard it ourselves from his own lips!"

2 Then they all rose in a body and led Jesus before Pilate. And they  
 began to accuse him: "This is a man whom we found misleading  
 our people, preventing them from paying taxes to the Emperor, and  
 3 giving out that he himself is 'Christ, a King.'" "Are you the King  
 4 of the Jews?" Pilate asked him. "It is true," replied Jesus. But Pi-  
 late, turning to the Chief Priests and the people, said: "I do not see  
 5 anything to find fault with in this man." But they insisted: "He is  
 stirring up the people by his teaching all through Judea; he began  
 6 with Galilee and has now come here." Hearing this, Pilate asked  
 7 if the man was a Galilean; and, having satisfied himself that Jesus  
 came under Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who also  
 8 was at Jerusalem at the time. When Herod saw Jesus, he was ex-  
 ceedingly pleased, for he had been wanting to see him for a long  
 time, having heard a great deal about him; and he was hoping to



see some sign given by him. So he questioned him at some length, 9  
 but Jesus made no reply. Meanwhile the Chief Priests and the Teach- 10  
 ers of the Law stood by and vehemently accused him. And Herod, 11  
 with his soldiers, treated Jesus with scorn; he mocked him by throw-  
 ing a gorgeous robe round him, and then sent him back to Pilate.  
 And Herod and Pilate became friends that very day, for before that 12  
 there had been ill-will between them. So Pilate summoned the Chief 13  
 Priests, and the leading men, and the people, and said to them: "You 14  
 brought this man before me charged with misleading the people;  
 and yet, for my part, though I examined him before you, I did not  
 find this man to blame for any of the things of which you accuse  
 him; nor did Herod either; for he has sent him back to us. And, as 15  
 a fact, he has not done anything deserving death; so I shall have 16  
 him scourged, and then release him." But they began to shout as 18  
 one man: "Kill this fellow, but release Barabbas for us." (Barabbas 19  
 was a man who had been put in prison for a riot that had broken  
 out in the city and for murder.) Pilate, however, wanting to release 20  
 Jesus, called to them again; but they kept calling out: "Crucify, cru- 21  
 cify him!" "Why, what harm has this man done?" Pilate said to them 22  
 for the third time. "I have found nothing in him for which he could  
 be condemned to death. So I will have him scourged, and then re-  
 lease him." But they persisted in loudly demanding his crucifixion; 23  
 and their clamor gained the day. Pilate decided that their demand 24  
 should be granted. He released the man who had been put in prison 25  
 for riot and murder, as they demanded, and gave Jesus up to be dealt  
 with as they pleased. And, as they were leading Jesus away, they 26  
 laid hold of Simon from Cyrene, who was on his way in from the  
 country, and they put the cross on his shoulders, for him to carry  
 it behind Jesus. There was a great crowd of people following him, 27  
 many being women who were beating their breasts and wailing for  
 him. So Jesus turned and said to them: "Women of Jerusalem, do not 28  
 weep for me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. A time, 29  
 I tell you, is coming, when it will be said — 'Happy are the women  
 who are barren, and those who have never borne children or nursed  
 them!' At that time people will begin to say to the mountains 'Fall 30

31 on us,' and to the hills 'Cover us.' If what you see is done while the  
 32 tree is green, what will happen when it is dry?" There were two  
 33 others also, criminals, led out to be executed with Jesus. When they  
 34 had reached the place called 'The Skull,' there they crucified Jesus  
 35 and the criminals, one on the right, and one on the left. [Then Jesus  
 said: "Father, forgive them; they do not know what they are doing."  
 36 ] His clothes they divided among them by casting lots. Meanwhile  
 the people stood looking on. Even the leading men said with a sneer:  
 "He saved others, let him save himself, if he is God's Christ, his Cho-  
 37 sen One." The soldiers, too, came up in mockery, bringing him com-  
 38 mon wine, and saying as they did so: "If you are the King of the Jews,  
 39 save yourself." Above him were the words — 'THIS IS THE KING  
 OF THE JEWS.' One of the criminals who were hanging beside Je-  
 40 sus railed at him. "Are not you the Christ? Save yourself and us," he  
 said. But the other rebuked him. "Have not you," he said, "any fear  
 41 of God, now that you are under the same sentence? And we justly  
 so, for we are only reaping our deserts, but this man has not done  
 42 anything wrong. Jesus," he went on, "do not forget me when you  
 43 have come to your Kingdom." And Jesus answered: "I tell you, this  
 44 very day you shall be with me in Paradise." It was nearly mid-day,  
 when a darkness came over the whole country, lasting till three in  
 45 the afternoon, the sun being eclipsed; and the Temple curtain was  
 46 torn down the middle. Then Jesus, with a loud cry, said: "Father,  
 into thy hands I commit my spirit." And with these words he ex-  
 47 pired. The Roman Captain, on seeing what had happened, praised  
 48 God, exclaiming: "This must have been a good man!" All the peo-  
 ple who had collected to see the sight watched what occurred, and  
 49 then went home beating their breasts. All the friends of Jesus had  
 been standing at a distance, with the women who accompanied him  
 50 from Galilee, watching all this. Now there was a man of the name  
 of Joseph, who was a member of the Council, and who bore a good  
 51 and upright character. (This man had not assented to the decision  
 and action of the Council.) He belonged to Ramah, a town in Judea,  
 52 and lived in expectation of the Kingdom of God. He now went to  
 53 see Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus; and, when he had taken

it down, he wrapped it in a linen sheet, and laid him in a tomb cut out of stone, in which no one had yet been buried. It was the Preparation Day, and just before the Sabbath began. The women who had accompanied Jesus from Galilee followed, and saw the tomb and how the body of Jesus was laid, and then went home, and prepared spices and perfumes. During the Sabbath they rested, as directed by the commandment **24**

But very early on the first day of the week they went to the tomb, taking with them the spices that they had prepared. They found that the stone had been rolled away from the tomb; and, on going into it, they could not find the body [of the Lord Jesus]. While they were at a loss to account for this, all at once two men stood beside them, in dazzling clothing. But, when in their fear the women bowed their faces to the ground, the men said to them: "Why are you looking among the dead for him who is living? [He is not here; but he has risen.] Remember how he spoke to you before he left Galilee — How he said that the Son of Man must be betrayed into the hands of wicked men, and be crucified, and rise again on the third day." Then they remembered the words of Jesus, and, on returning from the tomb, they told all this to the Eleven and to all the rest. There were Mary of Magdala, and Joanna, and Mary, the mother of James. The other women, too, spoke about this to the Apostles. What they said seemed to the Apostles mere nonsense, and they did not believe them. [But Peter got up and ran to the tomb. Stooping down he saw nothing but the linen wrappings, and he went away, wondering to himself at what had taken place.] It happened that very day that two of the disciples were going to a village called Emmaus, which was about seven miles from Jerusalem, talking together, as they went, about all that had just taken place. While they were talking about these things and discussing them, Jesus himself came up and went on their way with them; but their eyes were blinded so that they could not recognize him. "What is this that you are saying to each other as you walk along?" Jesus asked. They stopped, with sad looks on their faces, and then one of them, whose name was Cleopas, said to Jesus: "Are you staying by yourself at Jerusalem, that you have not

19 heard of the things that have happened there within the last few  
 days?" "What things do you mean?" asked Jesus. "Why, about Je-  
 20 sus of Nazareth," they answered, "who, in the eyes of God and all  
 the people, was a Prophet, whose power was felt in both his words  
 21 and actions; and how the Chief Priests and our leading men gave  
 him up to be sentenced to death, and afterwards crucified him. But  
 we were hoping that he was the Destined Deliverer of Israel; yes,  
 and besides all this, it is now three days since these things occurred.  
 22 And what is more, some of the women among us have greatly as-  
 23 tonished us. They went to the tomb at daybreak And, not finding the  
 body of Jesus there, came and told us that they had seen a vision of  
 24 angels who told them that he was alive. So some of our number went  
 to the tomb and found everything just as the women had said; but  
 25 they did not see Jesus." Then Jesus said to them: "O foolish men,  
 26 slow to accept all that the Prophets have said! Was not the Christ  
 bound to undergo this suffering before entering upon his Glory?"  
 27 Then, beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he explained to  
 them all through the Scriptures the passages that referred to him-  
 28 self. When they got near the village to which they were walking,  
 29 Jesus appeared to be going further; but they pressed him not to do  
 so. "Stay with us," they said, "for it is getting towards evening, and  
 30 the sun is already low." So Jesus went in to stay with them. After he  
 had taken his place at table with them, he took the bread and said  
 31 the blessing, and broke it, and gave it to them. Then their eyes were  
 opened and they recognized him; but he disappeared from their  
 32 sight. "How our hearts glowed," the disciples said to each other,  
 "while he was talking to us on the road, and when he explained the  
 33 Scriptures to us!" Then they immediately got up and returned to  
 Jerusalem, where they found the Eleven and their companions all  
 34 together, who told them that the Master had really risen, and had  
 35 appeared to Simon. So they also related what had happened dur-  
 ing their walk, and how they had recognized Jesus at the Breaking  
 36 of the Bread. While they were still talking about these things, Jesus  
 37 himself stood among them, [and said "Peace be with you." ] In their  
 38 terror and alarm they thought they saw a spirit, but Jesus said to

them: "Why are you so startled? and why do doubts arise in you  
minds? Look at my hands and my feet, and you will know that it is 39  
I. Feel me, and look at me, for a spirit has not flesh and bones, as you  
see that I have." [After saying this he showed them his hands and 40  
his feet.] While they were still unable to believe it all for very joy, and 41  
were wondering if it were true, Jesus said to them: "Have you any-  
thing here to eat?" They handed him a piece of broiled fish, and he 42  
took it and ate it before their eyes. "This is what I told you," he said, 44  
"when I was still with you — that everything that had been written  
about me in the Law of Moses, the Prophets, and the Psalms, must 45  
be fulfilled." Then he enabled them to understand the meaning of  
the Scriptures, saying to them: "Scripture says that the Christ should 46  
suffer, and that he should rise again from the dead on the third day,  
and that repentance for forgiveness of sins should be proclaimed on 47  
his authority to all the nations — beginning at Jerusalem. You your- 48  
selves are to be witnesses to all this. And now I am myself about to 49  
send upon you that which my Father has promised. But you must  
remain in the city until you have been invested with power from  
above." After this, Jesus led them out as far as Bethany, and there 50  
raised his hands and blessed them. As he was in the act of blessing 51  
them, he left them [and was carried up into Heaven.] They [bowed 52  
to the ground before him and] returned to Jerusalem full of joy; and 53  
they were constantly in the Temple Courts, blessing God.



## JOHN

## THE GOOD NEWS ACCORDING TO JOHN

In the Beginning the Word was; and the Word was with God; and the Word was God. He was in the Beginning with God; through him all things came into being, and nothing came into being apart from him. That which came into being in him was Life; and the Life was the Light of Man; and the Light shines in the darkness, and the darkness never overpowered it. There appeared a man sent from God, whose name was John; he came as a witness — to bear witness to the Light that through him all men might believe. He was not the Light, but he came to bear witness to the Light. That was the True Light which enlightens every man coming into the world. He was in the world; and through him the world came into being — yet the world did not know him. He came to his own — yet his own did not receive him. But to all who did receive him he gave power to become Children of God — to those who believe in his Name. For not to natural conception, nor to human instincts, nor to will of man did they owe the new Life, but to God. And the Word became Man, and dwelt among us, (We saw his glory — the glory of the Only Son sent from the Father), full of love and truth. (John bears witness to him; he cried aloud — for it was he who spoke — “‘He who is Coming’ after me is now before me, for he was ever first”); out of his fullness we have all received some gift, gift after gift of love; for the Law was given through Moses, love and truth came through Jesus Christ. No man has ever yet seen God; God the Only Son, who is ever with the Father — He has revealed him. When the Jews sent some Priests and Levites to John from Jerusalem, to ask — “Who are you?”, his statement was this: He confessed and did not deny it, he confessed — “I am not the Christ.” “What then?” they asked. “Are you Elijah?” “No,” he said, “I am not.” “Are you ‘the Prophet’?” He answered, “No.” “Who then are you?” they continued; “tell us, that we may have some answer to give to those who have sent us.

## John

23 What do you say about yourself?" "I," he answered, "am — 'The  
24 voice of one crying aloud in the Wilderness — "straighten the way  
25 of the Lord"', as the Prophet Isaiah said." These men had been sent  
26 from the Pharisees; and their next question was: "Why then do you  
27 baptize, if you are not the Christ, nor Elijah, nor yet 'the Prophet'?"  
28 John's answer was — "I baptize with water, but among you stands  
29 one whom you do not know; he is coming after me, yet I am not  
30 worthy even to unfasten his sandal." All this took place at Bethany,  
31 across the Jordan, where John was then baptizing. The next day John  
32 saw Jesus coming towards him, and exclaimed: "Here is the Lamb  
33 of God, who is to take away the sin of the world! It was of him that I  
34 spoke when I said 'After me there is coming a man who is now be-  
35 fore me, for he was ever First.' I myself did not know him, but, that  
36 he may be made known to Israel, I have come, baptizing with water."  
37 John also made this statement — "I have seen the Spirit descending  
38 as a dove out of the heavens, and it remained upon him. I myself did  
39 not know him, but he who sent me to baptize with water, he said to  
40 me 'He upon whom you see the Spirit descending, and remaining  
41 upon him — he it is who baptizes with the Holy Spirit.' This I have  
42 seen myself, and I have declared my belief that he is the Son of God."  
43 The next day, when John was standing with two of his disciples, he  
44 looked at Jesus as he passed and exclaimed: "There is the Lamb of  
45 God!" The two disciples heard him say this, and followed Jesus. But  
46 Jesus turned round, and saw them following. "What are you look-  
47 ing for?" he asked. "Rabbi," they answered (or, as we should say,  
48 "Teacher"), "where are you staying?" "Come, and you shall see," he  
49 replied. So they went, and saw where he was staying, and spent that  
50 day with him. It was then about four in the afternoon. One of the  
51 two, who heard what John said and followed Jesus, was Andrew,  
52 Simon Peter's brother. He first found his own brother Simon, and  
53 said to him: "We have found the Messiah!" (a word which means  
54 'Christ,' or 'Consecrated'.) Then he brought him to Jesus. Fixing his  
55 eyes on him, Jesus said: "You are Simon, the son of John; you shall be  
56 called Kephas" (which means 'Peter,' or 'Rock'). The following day  
57 Jesus decided to leave for Galilee. He found Philip, and said to him:



"Follow me." Philip was from Bethsaida, and a fellow-townsmen 44  
 of Andrew and Peter. He found Nathanael and said to him: "We 45  
 have found him of whom Moses wrote in the Law, and of whom  
 the Prophets also wrote — Jesus of Nazareth, Joseph's son!" "Can 46  
 anything good come out of Nazareth?" asked Nathanael. "Come  
 and see," replied Philip. When Jesus saw Nathanael coming towards 47  
 him, he said: "Here is a true Israelite, in whom there is no deceit!"  
 "How do you know me?" asked Nathanael. "Even before Philip 48  
 called you," replied Jesus, "when you were under the fig tree, I saw  
 you." "Rabbi," Nathanael exclaimed, "you are the Son of God, you 49  
 are King of Israel!" "Do you believe in me," asked Jesus, "because 50  
 I told you that I saw you under the fig tree? You shall see greater  
 things than those! In truth I tell you," he added, "you shall all see 51  
 Heaven open, and 'the angels of God ascending and descending'  
 upon the Son of Man." 2

Two days after this there was a wedding at Cana in Galilee, and  
 Jesus' mother was there. Jesus himself, too, with his disciples, was 2  
 invited to the wedding. And, when the wine ran short, his mother 3  
 said to him: "They have no wine left." "What do you want with me?" 4  
 answered Jesus. "My time has not come yet." His mother said to the 5  
 servants: "Do whatever he tells you." There were standing there six 6  
 stone water-jars, in accordance with the Jewish rule of 'purification,'  
 each holding twenty or thirty gallons. Jesus said to the servants: "Fill 7  
 the water-jars with water;" And, when they had filled them to the 8  
 brim, he added: "Now take some out, and carry it to the Master of  
 the Feast." The servants did so. And, when the Master of the Feast 9  
 had tasted the water which had now become wine, not knowing  
 where it had come from — although the servants who had taken  
 out the water knew — He called the bridegroom and said to him: 10  
 "Every one puts good wine on the table first, and inferior wine after-  
 wards, when his guests have drunk freely; but you have kept back  
 the good wine till now!" This, the first sign of his mission, Jesus 11  
 gave at Cana in Galilee, and by it revealed his glory; and his dis-  
 ciples believed in him. After this, Jesus went down to Capernaum 12  
 — he, his mother, his brothers, and his disciples; but they stayed

## John 3

13 there only a few days. Then, as the Jewish Passover was near, Jesus  
14 went up to Jerusalem. In the Temple Courts he found people who  
were selling bullocks, sheep, and pigeons, and the money-changers  
15 at their counters. So he made a whip of cords, and drove them all  
out of the Temple Courts, and the sheep and bullocks as well; he  
scattered the money of the money-changers, and overturned their  
16 tables, and said to the pigeon-dealers: "Take these things away. Do  
17 not turn my Father's House into a market-house." His disciples re-  
membered that Scripture said — 'Zeal for thy House will consume  
18 me.' Upon this the Jews asked Jesus: "What sign are you going to  
19 show us, since you act in this way?" "Destroy this temple," was his  
20 answer, "and I will raise it in three days." "This Temple," replied  
the Jews, "has been forty-six years in building, and are you going  
21 to 'raise it in three days'?" But Jesus was speaking of his body as a  
22 temple. Afterwards, when he had risen from the dead, his disciples  
remembered that he had said this; and they believed the passage of  
23 Scripture, and the words which Jesus had spoken. While Jesus was  
in Jerusalem, during the Passover Festival, many came to trust in  
24 him, when they saw the signs of his mission that he was giving. But  
Jesus did not trust himself to them, since he could read every heart,  
25 and because he did not need that others should tell him what men  
3 were; for he could of himself read what was in men.

Now there was a Pharisee named Nicodemus, who was a leading  
2 man among the Jews. This man came to Jesus by night, and said to  
him: "Rabbi, we know that you are a Teacher come from God; for  
no one could give such signs as you are giving, unless God were  
3 with him." "In truth I tell you," exclaimed Jesus, "unless a man  
4 is reborn, he cannot see the Kingdom of God." "How can a man,"  
asked Nicodemus, "be born when he is old? Can he be born a sec-  
5 ond time?" "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "unless a man owes  
his birth to Water and Spirit, he cannot enter the Kingdom of God.  
6 All that owes its birth to human nature is human, and all that owes  
7 its birth to the Spirit is spiritual. Do not wonder at my telling you  
8 that you all need to be reborn. The wind blows where it wills, and  
you can hear the sound of it, but you do not know whence it comes,

or where it goes; it is the same with every one that owes his birth  
 to the Spirit." "How can that be?" asked Nicodemus. "What! You a 90  
 teacher of Israel," exclaimed Jesus, "and yet do not understand this!  
 In truth I tell you that we speak of what we know, and state what 11  
 we have seen; and yet you do not accept our statements. If, when 12  
 I tell you earthly things, you do not believe me, how will you be-  
 lieve me when I tell you of heavenly things? No one has ascended 13  
 to Heaven, except him who descended from Heaven — the Son of  
 Man himself. And, as Moses lifted up the serpent in the desert, so 14  
 must the Son of Man be lifted up; that every one who believes in him 15  
 may have Immortal Life." For God so loved the world, that he gave 16  
 his only Son, that every one who believes in him may not be lost,  
 but have Immortal Life. For God did not send his Son into the world 17  
 to condemn the world, but that the world might be saved through  
 him. He who believes in him escapes condemnation, while he who 18  
 does not believe in him is already condemned, because he has not  
 believed in the only Son of God. The ground of his condemnation is 19  
 this, that though the Light has come into the world, men preferred  
 the darkness to the Light, because their actions were wicked. For he 20  
 who lives an evil life hates the light, and will not come to it, for fear  
 that his actions should be exposed; but he who acts up to the truth 21  
 comes to the light, that his actions may be shown to have been done  
 in dependence upon God. After this, Jesus went with his disciples 22  
 into the country parts of Judea; and there he stayed with them, and  
 baptized. John, also, was baptizing at Aenon near Salim, because 23  
 there were many streams there; and people were constantly coming  
 and being baptized. (For John had not yet been imprisoned). Now a 24  
 discussion arose between some of John's disciples and a Jew on the  
 subject of 'purification;' And the disciples came to John and said: 26  
 "Rabbi, the man who was with you on the other side of the Jor-  
 dan, and to whom you have yourself borne testimony — he, also,  
 is baptizing, and everybody is going to him." John's answer was — 27  
 "A man can gain nothing but what is given him from Heaven. You 28  
 are yourselves witnesses that I said 'I am not the Christ,' but 'I have  
 been sent before him as a Messenger.' It is the bridegroom who has 29

## John 4

the bride; but the bridegroom's friend, who stands by and listens to him, is filled with joy when he hears the bridegroom's voice. This joy  
30 I have felt to the full. He must become greater, and I less." He who comes from above is above all others; but a child of earth is earthly, and his teaching is earthly, too. He who comes from Heaven is above  
32 all others. He states what he has seen and what he heard, and yet  
33 no one accepts his statement. They who did accept his statement  
34 attested the fact that God is true. For he whom God sent as his Messenger gives us God's own teaching, for God does not limit the gift  
35 of the Spirit. The Father loves his Son, and has put everything in his  
36 hands. He who believes in the Son has Immortal Life, while he who rejects the Son will not even see that Life, but remains under 'God's  
4 displeasure.'

Now, when the Master heard that the Pharisees had been told that he  
2 was making and baptizing more disciples than John (Though it was  
3 not Jesus himself, but his disciples, who baptized), he left Judea, and  
4 set out again for Galilee. He had to pass through Samaria, and, on  
his way, he came to a Samaritan town called Shechem, near the plot  
6 of land that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Jacob's Spring was there,  
and Jesus, being tired after his journey, sat down beside the spring,  
7 just as he was. It was then about mid-day. A woman of Samaria came  
8 to draw water; and Jesus said to her - "Give me some to drink," For  
9 his disciples had gone into the town to buy food. "How is it," replied  
the Samaritan woman, "that you who are a Jew ask for water from a  
Samaritan woman like me?" (For Jews do not associate with Samar-  
10 itans). "If you knew of the gift of God," replied Jesus, "and who it  
is that is saying to you 'Give me some water,' you would have asked  
11 him, and he would have given you 'living water'." "You have no  
bucket, Sir, and the well is deep," she said; "where did you get that  
12 'living water?' Surely you are not greater than our ancestor Jacob  
who gave us the well, and used to drink from it himself, and his  
13 sons, and his cattle!" "All who drink of this water," replied Jesus,  
14 "will be thirsty again; but whoever once drinks of the water that I  
will give him shall never thirst any more; but the water that I will  
give him shall become a spring welling up within him — a source of

Immortal Life." "Give me this water, Sir," said the woman, "so that I 15  
 may not be thirsty, nor have to come all the way here to draw water."  
 "Go and call your husband," said Jesus, "and then come back." "I 16  
 have no husband," answered the woman. "You are right in saying 'I  
 have no husband,'" replied Jesus, "For you have had five husbands, 18  
 and the man with whom you are now living is not your husband;  
 in saying that, you have spoken the truth." "I see, Sir, that you are a 19  
 Prophet!" exclaimed the woman. "It was on this mountain that our 20  
 ancestors worshiped; and yet you Jews say that the proper place for  
 worship is in Jerusalem." "Believe me," replied Jesus, "a time is com- 21  
 ing when it will be neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem that  
 you will worship the Father. You Samaritans do not know what you 22  
 worship; we know what we worship, for Salvation comes from the  
 Jews. But a time is coming, indeed it is already here, when the true 23  
 worshipers will worship the Father spiritually and truly; for such  
 are the worshipers that the Father desires. God is Spirit; and those 24  
 who worship him must worship spiritually and truly." "I know," an- 25  
 swered the woman, "that the Messiah, who is called the Christ, is  
 coming; when once he has come, he will tell us everything." "I am 26  
 he," Jesus said to her, "I who am speaking to you." At this moment 27  
 his disciples came up, and were surprised to find him talking with  
 a woman; but none of them asked 'What do you want?' or 'Why are  
 you talking with her?' So the woman, leaving her pitcher, went back 28  
 to the town, and said to the people: "Come and see someone who 29  
 has told me everything that I have done. Can he be the Christ?" And 30  
 the people left the town and went to see Jesus. Meanwhile the dis- 31  
 ciples kept saying to him: "Take something to eat, Rabbi." "I have 32  
 food to eat," he answered, "of which you know nothing." "Can any 33  
 one have brought him anything to eat?" the disciples said to one an-  
 other. "My food," replied Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent 34  
 me, and to complete his work. Do not you say that it still wants four 35  
 months to harvest? Why, look up, and see how white the fields are  
 for harvest! Already the reaper is receiving wages and gathering in 36  
 sheaves for Immortal Life, so that sower and reaper rejoice together.  
 For here the proverb holds good — 'One sows, another reaps.' I 38

## John 5

have sent you to reap that on which you have spent no labor; others have labored, and you have entered upon the results of their labor.”

39 Many from that town came to believe in Jesus — Samaritans though they were — on account of the woman’s statement — ‘He has told

40 me everything that I have done.’ And, when these Samaritans had come to Jesus, they begged him to stay with them, and he stayed

41 there two days. But far more came to believe in him on account of what he said himself, and they said to the woman: “It is no longer

42 because of what you say that we believe in him, for we have heard him ourselves and know that he really is the Savior of the world.”

43 After these two days Jesus went on to Galilee; for he himself declared that ‘a Prophet is not honored in his own country.’ When he

45 entered Galilee, the Galileans welcomed him, for they had seen all that he did at Jerusalem during the Festival, at which they also had

46 been present. So Jesus came again to Cana in Galilee, where he had turned the water into wine. Now there was one of the King’s officers whose son was lying ill at Capernaum. When this man heard

47 that Jesus had returned from Judea to Galilee, he went to him, and begged him to come down and cure his son; for he was at the point

48 of death. Jesus answered: “Unless you all see signs and wonders, you will not believe.” “Sir,” said the officer, “come down before my

49 child dies.” And Jesus answered: “Go, your son is living.” The man

50 believed what Jesus said to him, and went; and, while he was on his way down, his servants met him, and told him that his child was

51 living. So he asked them at what time the boy began to get better. “It was yesterday, about one o’clock,” they said, “that the fever left

53 him.” By this the father knew that it was at the very time when Jesus had said to him ‘Your son is living’ ; and he himself, with all his

54 household, believed in Jesus. This was the second occasion on which

5 Jesus gave a sign of his mission on coming from Judea to Galilee.

Sometime after this there was a Jewish Festival; and Jesus went up

2 to Jerusalem. There is in Jerusalem, near the Sheep-gate, a Bath with

3 five colonnades round it. It is called in Hebrew ‘Bethesda.’ In these colonnades a large number of afflicted people were lying — blind,

5 lame, and crippled. One man who was there had been afflicted for

thirty-eight years. Jesus saw the man lying there, and, finding that 6  
 he had been in this state a long time, said to him: "Do you wish to 7  
 be cured?" "I have no one, Sir," the afflicted man answered, "to put 8  
 me into the Bath when there is a troubling of the water, and, while I 9  
 am getting to it, some one else steps down before me." "Stand up," 10  
 said Jesus, "take up your mat, and walk about." The man was cured 11  
 immediately, and took up his mat and began to walk about. Now it 12  
 was the Sabbath. So the Jews said to the man who had been cured: 13  
 "This is the Sabbath; you must not carry your mat." "The man who 14  
 cured me," he answered, "said to me 'Take up your mat and walk 15  
 about.'" "Who was it," they asked, "that said to you 'Take up your 16  
 mat and walk about?'" But the man who had been restored did not 17  
 know who it was; for Jesus had moved away, because there was a 18  
 crowd there. Afterwards Jesus found the man in the Temple Courts, 19  
 and said to him: "You are cured now; do not sin again, for fear that 20  
 something worse may befall you." The man went away, and told the 21  
 Jews that it was Jesus who had cured him. And that was why the 22  
 Jews began to persecute Jesus — because he did things of this kind 23  
 on the Sabbath. But Jesus replied: "My Father works to this very 24  
 hour, and I work also." This made the Jews all the more eager to kill  
 him, because not only was he doing away with the Sabbath, but he  
 actually called God his own Father — putting himself on an equality  
 with God. So Jesus made this further reply: "In truth I tell you, the  
 Son can do nothing of himself; he does only what he sees the Father  
 doing; whatever the Father does, the Son does also. For the Father  
 loves his Son, and shows him everything that he is doing; and he  
 will show him still greater things — so that you will be filled with  
 wonder. For, just as the Father raises the dead and gives them Life, so  
 also the Son gives Life to whom he pleases. The Father himself does  
 not judge any man, but has 'entrusted the work of judging entirely  
 to his Son,' So that all men may honor the Son, just as they honor the  
 Father. He who does not honor the Son fails to honor the Father who  
 sent him. In truth I tell you that he who listens to my Message and  
 believes him who sent me, has Immortal Life, and does not come  
 under condemnation, but has already passed out of Death into Life.

## John 5

25 In truth I tell you that a time is coming, indeed it is already here,  
when the Dead will listen to the voice of the Son of God, and when  
26 those who listen will live. For, just as the Father has inherent Life  
within him, so also he has granted to the Son to have inherent Life  
27 within him; and, because he is Son of Man, he has also given him au-  
28 thority to act as judge. Do not wonder at this; for the time is coming  
29 when all who are in their graves will hear his voice, and will come  
out — those who have done good rising to Life, and those who have  
30 lived evil lives rising for condemnation. I can do nothing of myself;  
I judge as I am taught; and the judgment that I give is just, because  
my aim is not to do my own will, but the will of him who sent me.  
32 If I bear testimony to myself, my testimony is not trustworthy; it is  
another who bears testimony to me, and I know that the testimony  
33 which he bears to me is trustworthy. You have yourselves sent to  
34 John, and he as testified to the Truth. But the testimony which I re-  
35 ceive is not from man; I am saying this for your Salvation. He was  
the 'Lamp that was burning' and shining, and you were ready to  
36 rejoice, for a time, in his light. But the testimony which I have is of  
greater weight than John's; for the work that the Father has given  
me to carry out — the work that I am doing — is in itself proof that  
37 the Father has sent me as his Messenger. The Father who has sent  
me has himself borne testimony to me. You have neither listened to  
38 his voice, not seen his form; and you have not taken his Message  
home to your hearts, because you do not believe him whom he sent  
39 as his Messenger. You search the Scriptures, because you think that  
40 you find in them Immortal Life; and, though it is those very Scrip-  
tures that bear testimony to me, you refuse to come to me to have  
42 life. I do not receive honor from men, but I know this of you, that  
43 you have not the love of God in your hearts. I have come in my Fa-  
ther's name, and you do not receive me; if another comes in his own  
44 name, you will receive him. How can you believe in me, when you  
receive honor from one another and do not desire the honor which  
45 comes from the only God? Do not think that I shall accuse you to  
the Father; your accuser is Moses, on whom you have been resting  
46 your hopes. For, had you believed Moses, you would have believed



me, for it was of me that Moses wrote; but, if you do not believe his 47  
writings, how will you believe my teaching?" 6

After this, Jesus crossed the Sea of Galilee — otherwise called the 2  
Lake of Tiberias. A great crowd of people, however, followed him, 2  
because they saw the signs of his mission in his work among those 3  
who were afflicted. Jesus went up the hill, and sat down there with 3  
his disciples. It was near the time of the Jewish Festival of the 4  
Passover. Looking up, and noticing that a great crowd was coming 5  
towards him, Jesus said to Philip: "Where are we to buy bread for 6  
these people to eat?" He said this to test him, for he himself knew 6  
what he meant to do. "Twenty pounds' worth of bread," answered 7  
Philip, "would not be enough for each of them to have a little." 7  
"There is a boy here," said Andrew, another of his disciples, Simon 8  
Peter's brother, "Who has five barley loaves and two fishes; but 9  
what is that for so many?" "Make the people sit down," said Jesus. 10  
It was a grassy spot; so the men, who numbered about five 11  
thousand, sat down, and then Jesus took the loaves, and, after 11  
saying the thanksgiving, distributed them to those who were 12  
sitting down; and the same with the fish, giving the people as 12  
much as they wanted. When they were satisfied, Jesus said to his 12  
disciples: "Collect the broken pieces that are left, so that nothing 13  
may be wasted." The disciples did so, and filled twelve baskets 13  
with the pieces of the five barley loaves, which were left after all 14  
had eaten. When the people saw the signs which Jesus gave, they 14  
said: "This is certainly 'the Prophet who was to come' into the 15  
world." But Jesus, having discovered that they were intending to 15  
come and carry him off to make him King, retired again up the hill, 16  
quite alone. When evening fell, his disciples went down to the Sea, 16  
and, getting into a boat, began to cross to Capernaum. By this time 17  
darkness had set in, and Jesus had not yet come back to them; the 18  
Sea, too, was getting rough, for a strong wind was blowing. When 19  
they had rowed three or four miles, they caught sight of him 19  
walking on the water and approaching the boat, and they were 20  
frightened. But Jesus said to them: "It is I; do not be afraid!" And 20  
after this they were glad to take him into the boat; and the boat at

## John 6

22 once arrived off the shore, for which they had been making. The people who remained on the further side of the Sea had seen that only one boat had been there, and that Jesus had not gone into it with his disciples, but that they had left without him. Some boats, however, had come from Tiberias, from near the spot where they had eaten the bread after the Master had said the thanksgiving. So, on the next day, when the people saw that Jesus was not there, or his disciples either, they themselves got into the boats, and went to Capernaum to look for him. And, when they found him on the other side of the Sea, they said: "When did you get here, Rabbi?" "In truth I tell you," answered Jesus, "it is not on account of the signs which you saw that you are looking for me, but because you had the bread to eat and were satisfied. Work, not for the food that perishes, but for the food that lasts for Immortal Life, which the Son of Man will give you; for upon him the Father — God himself — has set the seal of his approval." "How," they asked, "are we to do the work that God would have us do?" "The work that God would have you do," answered Jesus, "is to believe in him whom God sent as his Messenger." "What sign, then," they asked, "are you giving, which we may see, and so believe you? What is the work that you are doing? Our ancestors had the manna to eat in the desert; as Scripture says — 'He gave them bread from Heaven to eat.'" "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "Moses did not give you the Bread from Heaven, but my Father does give you the true Bread from Heaven; for the Bread that God gives is that which comes down from Heaven, and gives Life to the world." "Master," they exclaimed, "give us that Bread always!" "I am the Life-giving Bread," Jesus said to them; "he that comes to me shall never be hungry, and he that believes in me shall never thirst again. But, as I have said already, you have seen me, and yet you do not believe in me. All those whom the Father gives me will come to me; and no one who comes to me will I ever turn away. For I have come down from Heaven, to do, not my own will, but the will of him who sent me; and his will is this — that I should not lose one of all those whom he has given me, but should raise them up at the Last Day.

For it is the will of my Father that every one who sees the Son, and 40  
 believes in him, should have Immortal Life; and I myself will raise 41  
 him up at the Last Day." Upon this the Jews began murmuring 42  
 against Jesus for saying — 'I am the Bread which came down from 43  
 Heaven.' "Is not this Jesus, Joseph's son," they asked, "whose 44  
 father and mother we know? How is it that he now says that he has 45  
 come down from Heaven?" "Do not murmur among yourselves," 46  
 said Jesus in reply. "No one can come to me, unless the Father who 47  
 sent me draws him to me; and I will raise him up at the Last Day. It 48  
 is said in the Prophets — 'And they shall all be taught by God.' 49  
 Every one who is taught by the Father and learns from him comes 50  
 to me. Not that any one has seen the Father, except him who is from 51  
 God — he has seen the Father. In truth I tell you, he who believes 52  
 in me has Immortal Life. I am the Life-giving Bread. Your ancestors 53  
 ate the manna in the desert, and yet died. The Bread that comes 54  
 down from Heaven is such that whoever eats of it will never die. I 55  
 am the Living Bread that has come down from Heaven. If any one 56  
 eats of this Bread, he will live for ever; and the Bread that I shall 57  
 give is my flesh, which I will give for the Life of the world." Upon 58  
 this the Jews began disputing with one another: "How is it possible 59  
 for this man to give us his flesh to eat?" "In truth I tell you," 60  
 answered Jesus, "unless you eat the flesh of the Son of Man, and 61  
 drink his blood, you have not Life within you. He who takes my 62  
 flesh for his food, and drinks my blood, has Immortal Life; and I  
 will raise him up at the Last Day. For my flesh is true food, and my  
 blood true drink. He who takes my flesh for his food, and drinks  
 my blood, remains united to me, and I to him. As the Living Father  
 sent me as his Messenger, and as I live because the Father lives, so  
 he who takes me for his food shall live because I live. That is the  
 Bread which has come down from Heaven — not such as your  
 ancestors ate, and yet died; he who takes this Bread for his food  
 shall live for ever." All this Jesus said in a Synagogue, when he was  
 teaching in Capernaum. On hearing it, many of his disciples said:  
 "This is harsh doctrine! Who can bear to listen to it?" But Jesus,  
 aware that his disciples were murmuring about it, said to them: "Is

## John 7

this a hindrance to you? What, then, if you should see the Son of  
63 Man ascending where he was before? It is the Spirit that gives Life;  
mere flesh is of no avail. In the teaching that I have been giving  
64 you there is Spirit and there is Life. Yet there are some of you who  
do not believe in me." For Jesus knew from the first who they were  
that did not believe in him, and who it was that would betray him;  
65 and he added: "This is why I told you that no one can come to me,  
66 unless enabled by the Father." After this many of his disciples  
67 drew back, and did not go about with him any longer. So Jesus  
68 said to the Twelve: "Do you also wish to leave me?" But Simon  
Peter answered: "Master, to whom shall we go? Immortal Life is in  
69 your teaching; and we have learned to believe and to know that  
70 you are the Holy One of God." "Did not I myself choose you to be  
the Twelve?" replied Jesus; "and yet, even of you, one is playing  
71 the 'Devil's' part." He meant Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot, who  
7 was about to betray him, though he was one of the Twelve.

After this, Jesus went about in Galilee, for he would not do so in  
2 Judea, because the Jews were eager to put him to death. When the  
3 Jewish Festival of Tabernacles was near, his brothers said to him:  
"Leave this part of the country, and go into Judea, so that your dis-  
4 ciples, as well as we, may see the work that you are doing. For no one  
does a thing privately, if he is seeking to be widely known. Since you  
do these things, you should show yourself publicly to the world."  
5 For even his brothers did not believe in him. "My time," answered  
7 Jesus, "is not come yet, but your time is always here. The world can-  
not hate you, but it does hate me, because I testify that its ways are  
8 evil. Go yourselves up to the Festival; I am not going to this Festival  
9 yet, because my time has not yet come." After telling them this, he  
10 stayed on in Galilee. But, when his brothers had gone up to the Fes-  
11 tival, Jesus also went up — not publicly, but privately. The Jews were  
12 looking for him at the Festival and asking 'Where is he?'; and there  
were many whispers about him among the people, some saying 'He  
13 is a good man;' others: 'No! he is leading the people astray.' No one,  
14 however, spoke freely about him, for fear of the Jews. About the mid-  
dle of the Festival week, Jesus went up into the Temple Courts, and

began teaching. The Jews were astonished. "How has this man got  
 his learning," they asked, "when he has never studied?" So, in reply,  
 Jesus said: "My teaching is not my own; it is his who sent me. If any  
 one has the will to do God's will, he will find out whether my teach-  
 ing is from God, or whether I speak on my own authority. The man  
 who speaks on his own authority seeks honor for himself; but the  
 man who seeks the honor of him that sent him is sincere, and there  
 is nothing false in him. Was not it Moses who gave you the Law? Yet  
 not one of you obeys it! Why are you seeking to put me to death?"  
 "You must be possessed by a demon!" the people exclaimed. "Who  
 is seeking to put you to death?" "There was one thing I did," replied  
 Jesus, "at which you are all still wondering. 'Is he going to kill him-  
 self,'" the Jews exclaimed, "that he says — 'You cannot go where I am  
 going'?" When a man receives circumcision on a Sabbath to prevent  
 the Law of Moses from being broken, how can you be angry with  
 me for making a man sound and well on a Sabbath? Do not judge by  
 appearances; judge justly." At this some of the people of Jerusalem  
 exclaimed: "Is not this the man that they are seeking to put to death?  
 Yet here he is, speaking out boldly, and they say nothing to him! Is it  
 possible that our leading men have really discovered that he is the  
 Christ? Yet we know where this man is from; but, when the Christ  
 comes, no one will be able to tell where he is from." Therefore, Je-  
 sus, as he was teaching in the Temple Courts, raised his voice and  
 said: "Yes; you know me and you know where I am from. Yet I have  
 not come on my own authority, but he who sent me may be trusted;  
 and him you do not know. I do know him, for it is from him that  
 I have come, and he sent me as his Messenger." So they sought to  
 arrest him; but no one touched him, for his time was not come yet.  
 Many of the people, however, believed in him. "When the Christ  
 comes," they said, "will he give more signs of his mission than this  
 man has given?" The Pharisees heard the people whispering about  
 him in this way, and so the Chief Priests and the Pharisees sent of-  
 ficers to arrest him; on which Jesus said: "I shall be with you but a  
 little longer, and then I am going to him who sent me. You will look  
 for me, and you will not find me; and you will not be able to come

## John 7

35 where I shall be." "Where is this man going," the Jews asked one  
36 another, "that we shall not find him? Will he go to our countrymen  
37 abroad, and teach foreigners? What does he mean by saying 'You  
38 will look for me, and you will not find me; and you will not be able  
39 to come where I shall be'?" On the last and greatest day of the Festival,  
40 Jesus, who was standing by, exclaimed: "If any one thirsts, let  
41 him come to me, and drink. I tell you what I have myself seen in  
42 the presence of my Father; and you, in the same way, do what you  
43 have learned from your father." (By this he meant the Spirit, which  
44 those who had believed in him were to receive; for the Spirit had  
45 not yet come, because Jesus had not yet been exalted.) But, as it is,  
46 you are seeking to put me to death — a man who has told you the  
47 Truth as he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that way.  
48 You are doing what your own father does." "We are not bastards,"  
49 they said, "we have one Father — God himself." Is not it said in  
50 Scripture that it is of the race of David, and from Bethlehem, the vil-  
51 lage to which David belonged, that the Christ is to come?" So there  
52 was a sharp division among the people on account of Jesus. Some  
53 of them wanted to arrest him, and yet no one touched him. When  
54 the officers returned to the Chief Priests and Pharisees, they were  
55 asked: "Why have you not brought him?" "No man ever spoke as he  
56 speaks!" they answered. "What! Have you been led astray too?" the  
57 Pharisees replied. "Have any of our leading men believed in him,  
58 or any of the Pharisees? "I am not possessed by a demon," Jesus  
59 answered, "but I am showing reverence for my Father; and yet you  
60 have no reverence for me. But one of their number, Nicodemus, who  
61 before this had been to see Jesus, said to them: "Does our Law pass  
62 judgment on a man without first giving him a hearing, and find-  
63 ing out what he has been doing?" "Are you also from Galilee?" they  
64 retorted. "Search, and you will find that no Prophet is to arise in  
65 Galilee!" Jesus again addressed the people. "I am the Light of the  
66 World," he said. "He who follows me shall not walk in darkness,  
67 but shall have the Light of Life." "You are bearing testimony to your-  
68 self!" exclaimed the Pharisees, "your testimony is not trustworthy."  
69 "Even if I bear testimony to myself," answered Jesus, "my testimony

is trustworthy; for I know where I came from, and where I am going; but you do not know where I come from, nor where I am going. You judge by appearances; I judge no one. Yet, even if I were to judge, my judgment would be trustworthy; because I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. Why, in your own Law it is said that the testimony of two persons is trustworthy. I, who bear testimony to myself, am one, and the Father who sent me also bears testimony to me." "Where is your father, then?" they asked. "You know neither me nor my Father," replied Jesus. "If you had known me, you would have also known my Father." These statements Jesus made in the Treasury, while teaching in the Temple Courts. Yet no one arrested him, for his time had not then come. Jesus again spoke to the people. "I am going away," he said, "and you will look for me, but you will die in your sin; you cannot come where I am going." "Is he going to kill himself," the Jews exclaimed, "that he says — 'You cannot go where I am going'?" "You," added Jesus, "are from below, I am from above; you are of this present world, I am not; and so I told you that you would die in your sins, for, unless you believe that I am what I am, you will die in your sins." "Who are you?" they asked. "Why ask exactly what I have been telling you?" said Jesus. "I have still much that concerns you to speak of and to pass judgment on; yet he who sent me may be trusted, and I speak to the world only of the things which I have heard from him." They did not understand that he meant the Father. So Jesus added: "When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you will understand that I am what I am, and that I do nothing of myself, but that I say just what the Father has taught me. Moreover, he who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone; for I always do what pleases him." While he was speaking in this way, many came to believe in him. So Jesus went on to say to those Jews who had believed him: "If you remain constant to my Message, you are truly my disciples; and you find out the Truth, and the Truth will set you free." "We are descendants of Abraham," was their answer, "and have never yet been in slavery to any one. What do you mean by saying 'you will be set free'?" "In truth I tell you," replied

## John 7

35 Jesus, "every one who sins is a slave to sin. And a slave does not re-  
36 main in the home always; but a son remains always. If, then, the Son  
37 sets you free, you will be free indeed! I know that you are descen-  
dants of Abraham; yet you are seeking to put me to death, because  
38 my Message finds no place in your hearts. I tell you what I have my-  
self seen in the presence of my Father; and you, in the same way, do  
39 what you have learned from your father." "Our father is Abraham,"  
was their answer. "If you are Abraham's children," replied Jesus,  
40 "do what Abraham did. But, as it is, you are seeking to put me to  
death — a man who has told you the Truth as he heard it from God.  
41 Abraham did not act in that way. You are doing what your own fa-  
ther does." "We are not bastards," they said, "we have one Father —  
42 God himself." "If God were your Father," Jesus replied, "you would  
have loved me, for I came out from God, and now am here; and I  
43 have not come of myself, but he sent me as his Messenger. How is it  
that you do not understand what I say? It is because you cannot bear  
44 to listen to my Message. As for you, you are children of your Father  
the Devil, and you are determined to do what your father loves to  
do. He was a murderer from the first, and did not stand by the truth,  
because there is no truth in him. Whenever he lies, he does what is  
45 natural to him; because he is a liar, and the father of lying. But, as  
for me, it is because I speak the truth to you that you do not believe  
46 me. Which of you can convict me of sin? Why then do not you be-  
lieve me, if I am speaking truth? He who comes from God listens to  
47 God's teaching; the reason why you do not listen is because you do  
not come from God." "Are not we right, after all," replied the Jews,  
"in saying that you are a Samaritan, and are possessed by a demon?"  
49 "I am not possessed by a demon," Jesus answered, "but I am show-  
ing reverence for my Father; and yet you have no reverence for me.  
50 Not that I am seeking honor for myself; there is one who is seeking  
my honor, and he decides. In truth I tell you, if any one lays my Mes-  
51 sage to heart, he will never really die." "Now we are sure that you  
are possessed by a demon," the Jews replied. "Abraham died, and  
52 so did the Prophets; and yet you say 'If any one lays my Message to



heart, he will never know death.' Are you greater than our ancestor Abraham, who died? And the Prophets died too. Whom do you make yourself out to be?" "If I do honor to myself," answered Jesus, "such honor counts for nothing. It is my Father who does me honor — and you say that he is your God; and yet you have not learned to know him; but I know him; and, if I were to say that I do not know him, I should be a liar like you; but I do know him, and I lay his Message to heart. Your ancestor Abraham rejoiced that he would see my day; and he did see it, and was glad." "You are not fifty years old yet," the Jews exclaimed, "and have you seen Abraham?" "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "before Abraham existed I was." At this they took up stones to throw at him; but Jesus hid himself, and left the Temple Courts. Jesus again addressed the people. "I am the Light of the World," he said. "He who follows me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the Light of Life." "You are bearing testimony to yourself!" exclaimed the Pharisees, "your testimony is not trustworthy." "Even if I bear testimony to myself," answered Jesus, "my testimony is trustworthy; for I know where I came from, and where I am going; but you do not know where I come from, nor where I am going. You judge by appearances; I judge no one. Yet, even if I were to judge, my judgment would be trustworthy; because I am not alone, but the Father who sent me is with me. Why, in your own Law it is said that the testimony of two persons is trustworthy. I, who bear testimony to myself, am one, and the Father who sent me also bears testimony to me." "Where is your father, then?" they asked. "You know neither me nor my Father," replied Jesus. "If you had known me, you would have also known my Father." These statements Jesus made in the Treasury, while teaching in the Temple Courts. Yet no one arrested him, for his time had not then come. Jesus again spoke to the people. "I am going away," he said, "and you will look for me, but you will die in your sin; you cannot come where I am going." "Is he going to kill himself," the Jews exclaimed, "that he says — 'You cannot go where I am going'?" "You," added Jesus, "are from below, I am from above; you are of this present world, I am not; and so I told you that you would die in your sins, for, unless you believe that I am

## John 8

25 what I am, you will die in your sins." "Who are you?" they asked.  
26 "Why ask exactly what I have been telling you?" said Jesus. "I have  
still much that concerns you to speak of and to pass judgment on;  
yet he who sent me may be trusted, and I speak to the world only  
27 of the things which I have heard from him." They did not under-  
28 stand that he meant the Father. So Jesus added: "When you have  
lifted up the Son of Man, then you will understand that I am what  
I am, and that I do nothing of myself, but that I say just what the  
29 Father has taught me. Moreover, he who sent me is with me; he has  
30 not left me alone; for I always do what pleases him." While he was  
31 speaking in this way, many came to believe in him. So Jesus went  
on to say to those Jews who had believed him: "If you remain con-  
32 stant to my Message, you are truly my disciples; and you find out  
33 the Truth, and the Truth will set you free." "We are descendants of  
Abraham," was their answer, "and have never yet been in slavery  
to any one. What do you mean by saying 'you will be set free'?"  
34 "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, "every one who sins is a slave to  
35 sin. And a slave does not remain in the home always; but a son re-  
36 mains always. If, then, the Son sets you free, you will be free indeed!  
37 I know that you are descendants of Abraham; yet you are seeking to  
put me to death, because my Message finds no place in your hearts.  
38 I tell you what I have myself seen in the presence of my Father; and  
you, in the same way, do what you have learned from your father."  
39 "Our father is Abraham," was their answer. "If you are Abraham's  
40 children," replied Jesus, "do what Abraham did. But, as it is, you are  
seeking to put me to death — a man who has told you the Truth as  
41 he heard it from God. Abraham did not act in that way. You are do-  
ing what your own father does." "We are not bastards," they said,  
42 "we have one Father — God himself." "If God were your Father,"  
Jesus replied, "you would have loved me, for I came out from God,  
and now am here; and I have not come of myself, but he sent me as  
43 his Messenger. How is it that you do not understand what I say? It  
44 is because you cannot bear to listen to my Message. As for you, you  
are children of your Father the Devil, and you are determined to do  
what your father loves to do. He was a murderer from the first, and

did not stand by the truth, because there is no truth in him. When-  
 ever he lies, he does what is natural to him; because he is a liar, and  
 the father of lying. But, as for me, it is because I speak the truth to 45  
 you that you do not believe me. Which of you can convict me of sin? 46  
 Why then do not you believe me, if I am speaking truth? He who 47  
 comes from God listens to God's teaching; the reason why you do  
 not listen is because you do not come from God." "Are not we right, 48  
 after all," replied the Jews, "in saying that you are a Samaritan, and  
 are possessed by a demon?" "I am not possessed by a demon," Je- 49  
 sus answered, "but I am showing reverence for my Father; and yet  
 you have no reverence for me. Not that I am seeking honor for my- 50  
 self; there is one who is seeking my honor, and he decides. In truth 51  
 I tell you, if any one lays my Message to heart, he will never really  
 die." "Now we are sure that you are possessed by a demon," the 52  
 Jews replied. "Abraham died, and so did the Prophets; and yet you  
 say 'If any one lays my Message to heart, he will never know death.'  
 Are you greater than our ancestor Abraham, who died? And the 53  
 Prophets died too. Whom do you make yourself out to be?" "If I do 54  
 honor to myself," answered Jesus, "such honor counts for nothing.  
 It is my Father who does me honor — and you say that he is your  
 God; and yet you have not learned to know him; but I know him; 55  
 and, if I were to say that I do not know him, I should be a liar like  
 you; but I do know him, and I lay his Message to heart. Your ances- 56  
 tor Abraham rejoiced that he would see my day; and he did see it,  
 and was glad." "You are not fifty years old yet," the Jews exclaimed, 57  
 "and have you seen Abraham?" "In truth I tell you," replied Jesus, 58  
 "before Abraham existed I was." At this they took up stones to throw 59  
 at him; but Jesus hid himself, and left the Temple Courts. 9  
 As Jesus passed by, he saw a man who had been blind from his birth.  
 "Rabbi," asked his disciples, "who was it that sinned, this man or his 2  
 parents, that he was born blind?" "Neither the man nor the parents," 3  
 replied Jesus; "but he was born blind that the work of God should  
 be made plain in him. We must do the work of him who sent me, 4  
 while it is day; night is coming, when no one can work. As long as I 5  
 am in the world, I am the Light of the world." Saying this, Jesus spat 6

## John 9

on the ground, made clay with the saliva, and put it on the man's  
7 eyes. "Go," he said, "and wash your eyes in the Bath of Siloam" (a  
word which means 'Messenger'). So the man went and washed his  
8 eyes, and returned able to see. Upon this his neighbors, and those  
who had formerly known him by sight as a beggar, exclaimed: "Is  
9 not this the man who used to sit and beg?" "Yes," some said, "it is";  
while others said: "No, but he is like him." The man himself said: "I  
10 am he." "How did you get your sight, then?" they asked. "The man  
whom they call Jesus," he answered, "made clay, and anointed my  
eyes, and said to me 'Go to Siloam and wash your eyes.' So I went  
12 and washed my eyes, and gained my sight." "Where is he?" they  
13 asked. I do not know," he answered. They took the man, who had  
14 been blind, to the Pharisees. Now it was a Sabbath when Jesus made  
15 the clay and gave him his sight. So the Pharisees also questioned the  
man as to how he had gained his sight. "He put clay on my eyes,"  
16 he answered, "and I washed them, and I can see." "The man cannot  
be from God," said some of the Pharisees, "for he does not keep the  
Sabbath." "How is it possible," retorted others, "for a bad man to  
17 give signs like this?" So there was a difference of opinion among  
them, and they again questioned the man; "What do you yourself  
18 say about him, for it is to you that he has given sight?" The Jews,  
however, refused to believe that he had been blind and had gained  
19 his sight, until they had called his parents and questioned them. "Is  
this your son," they asked, "who you say was born blind? If so, how  
20 is it that he can see now?" "We know that this is our son," answered  
21 the parents, "and that he was born blind; but how it is that he can  
see now we do not know; nor do we know who it was that gave  
him his sight. Ask him — he is old enough- -he will tell you about  
22 himself." His parents spoke in this way because they were afraid of  
the Jews; for the Jews had already agreed that, if any one should  
acknowledge Jesus as the Christ, he should be expelled from their  
23 synagogues. This was why his parents said 'He is old enough; ask  
24 him.' So the Jews again called the man who had been blind, and said  
25 to him: "Give God the praise; we know that this is a bad man." "I  
know nothing about his being a bad man," he replied; "one thing

I do know, that although I was blind, now I can see." "What did 26  
 he do to you?" they asked. "How did he give you your sight?" "I 27  
 told you just now," he answered, "and you did not listen. Why do  
 you want to hear it again? Surely you also do not want to become  
 his disciples?" "You are his disciple," they retorted scornfully; "but 28  
 we are disciples of Moses. We know that God spoke to Moses; but, 29  
 as for this man, we do not know where he comes from." "Well," the 30  
 man replied, "this is very strange; you do not know where he comes  
 from, and yet he has given me my sight! We know that God never 31  
 listens to bad men, but, when a man is god-fearing and does God's  
 will, God listens to him. Since the world began, such a thing was 32  
 never heard of as any one's giving sight to a person born blind. If 33  
 this man had not been from God, he could not have done anything  
 at all." "You," they retorted, "were born totally depraved; and are 34  
 you trying to teach us?" So they expelled him. Jesus heard of their 35  
 having put him out; and, when he had found the man, he asked: "Do  
 you believe in the Son of Man?" "Tell me who he is, Sir," he replied, 36  
 "so that I may believe in him." "Not only have you seen him," said 37  
 Jesus; "but it is he who is now speaking to you." "Then, Sir, I do 38  
 believe," said the man, bowing to the ground before him; and Jesus 39  
 added: "It was to put men to the test that I came into this world,  
 in order that those that cannot see should see, and that those that  
 can see should become blind." Hearing this, some of the Pharisees 40  
 who were with him said: "Then are we blind too?" "If you had been 41  
 blind," replied Jesus, "you would have had no sin to answer for; but,  
 as it is, you say 'We can see,' and so your sin remains. 10  
 In truth I tell you, whoever does not go into the sheepfold through  
 the door, but climbs up at some other place, that man is a thief and  
 a robber; but the man who goes in through the door is shepherd to 2  
 the sheep. For him the watchman opens the door; and the sheep listen 3  
 to his voice; and he calls his own sheep by name, and leads them  
 out. When he has brought them all out, he walks in front of them, 4  
 and his sheep follow him, because they know his voice. They will 5  
 not follow a stranger, but will run away from him; because they do  
 not know a stranger's voice." This was the allegory that Jesus told 6

## John 10

7 them, but they did not understand of what he was speaking. So he  
8 continued: "In truth I tell you, I am the Door for the sheep. All who  
9 came before me were thieves and robbers; but the sheep did not lis-  
10 ten to them. I am the Door; he who goes in through me will be safe,  
11 and he will go in and out and find pasture. The thief comes only to  
12 steal, to kill, and to destroy; I have come that they may have Life,  
13 and may have it in greater fullness. I am the Good Shepherd. The  
14 Good Shepherd lays down his life for his sheep. The hired man who  
15 is not a shepherd, and who does not own the sheep, when he sees a  
16 wolf coming, leaves them and runs away; then the wolf seizes them,  
17 and scatters the flock. He does this because he is only a hired man  
18 and does not care about the sheep. I am the Good Shepherd; and I  
19 know my sheep, and my sheep know me — Just as the Father knows  
20 me and I know the Father — and I lay down my life for the sheep.  
21 I have other sheep besides, which do not belong to this fold; I must  
22 lead them also, and they will listen to my voice; and they shall be-  
23 come one flock under 'one Shepherd.' This is why the Father loves  
24 me, because I lay down my life- -to receive it again. No one took it  
25 from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have authority to lay it down,  
26 and I have authority to receive it again. This is the command which  
27 I received from my Father." In consequence of these words a dif-  
28 ference of opinion again arose among the Jews. Many of them said:  
29 "He is possessed by a demon and is mad; why do you listen to him?"  
Others said: "This is not the teaching of one who is possessed by a  
demon. Can a demon give sight to the blind?" Soon after this the  
Festival of the Re-dedication was held at Jerusalem. It was winter;  
and Jesus was walking in the Temple Courts, in the Colonnade of  
Solomon, when the Jews gathered round him, and said: "How long  
are you going to keep us in suspense? If you are the Christ, tell us so  
frankly." "I have told you so," replied Jesus, "and you do not believe  
me. The work that I am doing in my Father's name bears testimony  
to me. But you do not believe me, because you are not of my flock.  
My sheep listen to my voice; I know them, and they follow me; and  
I give them Immortal Life, and they shall not be lost; nor shall any  
one snatch them out of my hands. What my Father has entrusted to

me is more than all else; and no one can snatch anything out of the Father's hands. The Father and I are one." The Jews again brought stones to throw at him; and seeing this, Jesus said: "I have done before your eyes many good actions, inspired by the Father; for which of them would you stone me?" "It is not for any good action that we would stone you," answered the Jews, "but for blasphemy; and because you, who are only a man, make yourself out to be God." "Are there not," replied Jesus, "these words in your Law — 'I said "Ye are gods"'? If those to whom God's word were addressed were said to be 'gods' — and Scripture cannot be set aside — Do you say of one whom the Father has consecrated and sent as his Messenger to the world 'You are blaspheming,' because I said 'I am God's Son'? If I am not doing the work that my Father is doing, do not believe me; if I am doing it, even though you do not believe me, believe what that work shows; so that you may understand, and understand more and more clearly, that the Father is in union with me, and I with the Father." Upon this the Jews again sought to arrest him; but he escaped their hands. Then Jesus again crossed the Jordan to the place where John used to baptize at first, and stayed there some time, during which many people came to see him. "John gave no sign of his mission," they said; "but everything that he said about this man was true." And many learned to believe in Jesus there. 1142

Now a man named Lazarus, of Bethany, was lying ill; he belonged to the same village as Mary and her sister Martha. This Mary, whose brother Lazarus was ill, was the Mary who anointed the Master with perfume, and wiped his feet with her hair. The sisters, therefore, sent this message to Jesus — 'Master, your friend is ill'; and, when Jesus heard it, he said: "This illness is not to end in death, but is to redound to the honor of God, in order that the Son of God may be honored through it." Jesus loved Martha and her sister, and Lazarus. Yet, when he heard of the illness of Lazarus, he still stayed two days in the place where he was. Then, after that, he said to his disciples: "Let us go to Judea again." "Rabbi," they replied, "the Jews were but just now seeking to stone you; and are you going there again?" "Are not there twelve hours in the day?" answered Jesus. "If a man

## John 11

walks about in the day-time, he does not stumble, because he can  
10 see the light of the sun; but, if he walks about at night, he stum-  
11 bles, because he has not the light." And, when he had said this,  
he added: "Our friend Lazarus has fallen asleep; but I am going  
12 that I may wake him." "If he has fallen asleep, Master, he will get  
13 well," said the disciples. But Jesus meant that he was dead; they,  
14 however, supposed that he was speaking of natural sleep. Then he  
15 said to them plainly: "Lazarus is dead; and I am glad for your sakes  
that I was not there, so that you may learn to believe in me. But let  
16 us go to him." At this, Thomas, who was called 'The Twin,' said to  
his fellow-disciples: "Let us go too, so that we may die with him."  
17 When Jesus reached the place, he found that Lazarus had been four  
18 days in the tomb already. Bethany being only about two miles from  
19 Jerusalem, a number of the Jews had come there to condole with  
20 Martha and Mary on their brother's death. When Martha heard that  
Jesus was coming, she went to meet him; but Mary sat quietly at  
21 home. "Master," Martha said to Jesus, "if you had been here, my  
22 brother would not have died. Even now, I know that God will grant  
23 you whatever you ask him." "Your brother shall rise to life," said  
24 Jesus. "I know that he will," replied Martha, "in the resurrection  
25 at the Last Day." "I am the Resurrection and the Life," said Jesus.  
26 "He that believes in me shall live, though he die; and he who lives  
27 and believes in me shall never die. Do you believe this?" "Yes Mas-  
ter," she answered; "I have learned to believe that you are the Christ,  
28 the Son of God, 'who was to come' into the world." After saying  
this, Martha went and called her sister Mary, and whispered: "The  
29 Teacher is here, and is asking for you." As soon as Mary heard that,  
30 she got up quickly, and went to meet him. Jesus had not then come  
into the village, but was still at the place where Martha had met him.  
31 So the Jews, who were in the house with Mary, condoling with her,  
when they saw her get up quickly and go out, followed her, think-  
32 ing that she was going to the tomb to weep there. When Mary came  
where Jesus was and saw him, she threw herself at his feet. "Mas-  
ter," she exclaimed, "if you had been here, my brother would not  
33 have died!" When Jesus saw her weeping, and the Jews who had



come with her weeping also, he groaned deeply, and was greatly  
 distressed. "Where have you buried him?" he asked. "Come and  
 see, Master," they answered. Jesus burst into tears. "How he must  
 have loved him!" the Jews exclaimed; but some of them said: "Could  
 not this man, who gave sight to the blind man, have also prevented  
 Lazarus from dying?" Again groaning inwardly, Jesus came to the  
 tomb. It was a cave, and a stone lay against the mouth of it. "Move  
 the stone away," said Jesus. "Master," said Martha, the sister of the  
 dead man, "by this time the smell must be offensive, for this is the  
 fourth day since his death." "Did not I tell you," replied Jesus, "that,  
 if you would believe in me, you should see the glory of God?" So  
 they moved the stone away; and Jesus, with uplifted eyes, said: "Fa-  
 ther, I thank thee that thou hast heard my prayer; I know that thou  
 always headrest me; but I say this for the sake of the people standing  
 near, so that they may believe that thou has sent me as thy Messen-  
 ger." Then, after saying this, Jesus called in a loud voice: "Lazarus!  
 come out!" The dead man came out, wrapped hand and foot in a  
 winding-sheet; his face, too, had been wrapped in a cloth. "Set him  
 free," said Jesus, "and let him go." In consequence of this, many of  
 the Jews, who had come to visit Mary and had seen what Jesus did,  
 learned to believe in him. Some of them, however, went to the Phar-  
 isees, and told them what he had done. Upon this the Chief Priests  
 and the Pharisees called a meeting of the High Council, and said:  
 "What are we to do, now that this man is giving so many signs?  
 If we let him alone as we are doing, every one will believe in him;  
 and the Romans will come and will take from us both our City and  
 our Nationality." One of them, however, Caiaphas, who was High  
 Priest that year, said to them: "You are utterly mistaken. You do not  
 consider that it is better for you that one man should die for the  
 people, rather than the whole nation should be destroyed." Now he  
 did not say this of his own accord; but, as High Priest that year, he  
 prophesied that Jesus was to die for the nation — And not for the  
 nation only, but also that he might unite in one body the Children  
 of God now scattered far and wide. So from that day they plotted  
 to put Jesus to death. In consequence of this, Jesus did not go about

publicly among the Jews any more, but left that neighborhood, and went into the country bordering on the Wilderness, to a town called Ephraim, where he stayed with his disciples. But the Jewish Festival of the Passover was near; and many people had gone up from the country to Jerusalem, for their 'purification,' before the Festival began. So they looked for Jesus there, and said to one another, as they stood in the Temple Courts: "What do you think? Do you think he will come to the Festival?" The Chief Priests and the Pharisees had already issued orders that, if any one learned where Jesus was, he should give information, so that they might arrest him.

Six days before the Passover Jesus came to Bethany, where Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead, was living. There a supper was given in honor at which Martha waited, while Lazarus was one of those present at the table. So Mary took a pound of choice spikenard perfume of great value, and anointed the feet of Jesus with it, and then wiped them with her hair. The whole house was filled with the scent of the perfume. One of the disciples, Judas Iscariot, who was about to betray Jesus, asked: "Why was not this perfume sold for thirty pounds, and the money given to poor people?" He said this, not because he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and, being in charge of the purse, used to take what was put in it. "Let her alone," said Jesus, "that she may keep it till the day when my body is being prepared for burial. The poor you always have with you, but you will not always have me." Now great numbers of the Jews found out that Jesus was at Bethany; and they came there, not solely on his account, but also to see Lazarus, whom he had raised from the dead. The Chief Priests, however, plotted to put Lazarus, as well as Jesus, to death, because it was owing to him that many of the Jews had left them, and were becoming believers in Jesus. On the following day great numbers of people who had come to the Festival, hearing that Jesus was on his way to Jerusalem, took palm-branches, and went out to meet him, shouting as they went: "'God save Him! Blessed is He who Comes in the name of the Lord' — The King of Israel!" Having found a young ass, Jesus seated himself on it, in accordance with the passage of Scripture — 'Fear not, Daughter of

Zion; Behold, thy King is coming to thee, Sitting on the foal of an  
 ass.' His disciples did not understand all this at first; but, when Je- 16  
 sus had been exalted, then they remembered that these things had  
 been said of him in Scripture, and that they had done these things  
 for him. Meanwhile the people who were with him, when he called 17  
 Lazarus out of the tomb and raised him from the dead, were telling  
 what they had seen. This, indeed, was why the crowd met him — 18  
 because people had heard that he had given this sign of his mission.  
 So the Pharisees said to one another: "You see that you are gaining 19  
 nothing! Why, all the world has run after him!" Among those who 20  
 were going up to worship at the Festival were some Greeks, who 21  
 went to Philip of Bethsaida in Galilee, and said: "Sir, we wish to see  
 Jesus." Philip went and told Andrew, and then together they went 22  
 and told Jesus. This was his reply — "The time has come for the Son 23  
 of Man to be exalted. In truth I tell you, unless a grain of wheat falls 24  
 into the ground and dies, it remains solitary; but, if it dies, it be-  
 comes fruitful. He who loves his life loses it; while he who hates his 25  
 life in the present world shall preserve it for Immortal Life. If a man 26  
 is ready to serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there my  
 servant shall be also. If a man is ready to serve me, my Father will  
 honor him. Now I am distressed at heart and what can I say? Father, 27  
 bring me safe through this hour — yet it was for this very reason that  
 I came to this hour — Father, honor thine own name." At this there 28  
 came a voice from Heaven, which said: "I have already honored it,  
 and I will honor it again." The crowd of bystanders, who heard the 29  
 sound, said that it was thundering. Others said: "An angel has been  
 speaking to him." "It was not for my sake that the voice came," said 30  
 Jesus, "but for yours. Now this world is on its trial. Now the Spirit  
 that is ruling this world shall be driven out; and I, when I am lifted 31  
 up from the earth, shall draw all men to myself." By these words 32  
 he indicated what death he was destined to die. "We," replied the 33  
 people, "have learned from the Law that the 'Christ is to remain for  
 ever'; how is it, then, that you say that the Son of Man must be 'lifted  
 up' Who is this 'Son of Man'?" "Only a little while longer," answered 34  
 Jesus, "will you have the Light among you. Travel on while you have 35

## John 13

the Light, so that darkness may not overtake you; he who travels in  
36 the darkness does not know where he is going. While you still have  
the Light, believe in the Light, that you may be 'Sons of Light.'" After  
37 he had said this, Jesus went away, and hid himself from them. But,  
though Jesus had given so many signs of his mission before their  
38 eyes, they still did not believe in him, in fulfillment of the words of  
the Prophet Isaiah, where he says — 'Lord, who has believed our  
teaching? And to whom has the might of the Lord been revealed?'  
39 The reason why they were unable to believe is given by Isaiah else-  
40 where, in these words — 'He has blinded their eyes, and blunted  
their mind, so that they should not see with their eyes, and perceive  
41 with their mind, and turn — And I should heal them.' Isaiah said  
this, because he saw Christ's glory; and it was of him that he spoke.  
42 Yet for all this, even among the leading men there were many who  
came to believe in Jesus; but, on account of the Pharisees, they did  
not acknowledge it, for fear that they should be expelled from their  
43 Synagogues; for they valued honor from men more than honor from  
44 God. But Jesus had proclaimed: "He who believes in me believes,  
45 not in me, but in him who sent me; and he who sees me sees him  
46 who sent me. I have come as a Light into the world, that no one who  
47 believes in me should remain in the darkness. When any one hears  
my teaching and pays no heed to it, I am not his judge; for I came  
48 not to judge the world, but to save the world. He who rejects me,  
and disregards my teaching, has a judge already — the very Mes-  
49 sage which I have delivered will itself be his judge at the Last Day.  
For I have not delivered it on my own authority; but the Father, who  
sent me, has himself given me his command as to what I should say,  
50 and what message I should deliver. And I know that Immortal Life  
lies in keeping his command. Therefore, whatever I say, I say only  
13 what the Father has taught me."

Before the Passover Festival began, Jesus knew that the time had  
come for him to leave the world and go to the Father. He had loved  
those who were his own in the world, and he loved them to the  
2 last. The Devil had already put the thought of betraying Jesus into  
3 the mind of Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon; and at supper, Jesus

— although knowing that the Father had put everything into his  
 hands, and that he had come from God, and was to return to God  
 — Rose from his place, and, taking off his upper garments, tied a 4  
 towel round his waist. He then poured some water into the basin, 5  
 and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the  
 towel which was tied round him. When he came to Simon Peter, Pe- 6  
 ter said: "You, Master! Are you going to wash my feet?" "You do 7  
 not understand now what I am doing," replied Jesus, "but you will  
 learn by and by." "You shall never wash my feet!" exclaimed Peter. 8  
 "Unless I wash you," answered Jesus, "you have nothing in common  
 with me." "Then, Master, not my feet only," exclaimed Simon Peter, 9  
 "but also my hands and my head." "He who has bathed," replied 10  
 Jesus, "has no need to wash, unless it be his feet, but is altogether  
 clean; and you," he said to the disciples, "are clean, yet not all of  
 you." For he knew who was going to betray him, and that was why 11  
 he said 'You are not all clean.' When he had washed their feet, and 12  
 had put on his upper garments and taken his place, he spoke to  
 them again. "Do you understand what I have been doing to you?"  
 he asked. "You yourselves call me 'the Teacher' and 'the Master', 13  
 and you are right, for I am both. If I, then — 'the Master' and 'the 14  
 Teacher' — have washed your feet, you also ought to wash one an-  
 other's feet; for I have given you an example, so that you may do 15  
 just as I have done to you. In truth I tell you, a servant is not greater 16  
 than his master, nor yet a messenger than the man who sends him.  
 Now that you know these things, happy are you if you do them. I am 18  
 not speaking about all of you. I know whom I have chosen; but this  
 is in fulfillment of the words of Scripture — 'He that is eating my  
 bread has lifted his heel against me.' For the future I shall tell you 19  
 of things before they take place, so that, when they take place, you  
 may believe that I am what I am. In truth I tell you, he who receives 20  
 any one that I send receives me; and he who receives me receives  
 him who sent me." After saying this, Jesus was much troubled, and 21  
 said solemnly: "In truth I tell you that it is one of you who will be-  
 tray me." The disciples looked at one another, wondering whom he 22  
 meant. Next to Jesus, in the place on his right hand, was one of his 23

## John 14

24 disciples, whom he loved. So Simon Peter made signs to that dis-  
25 ciple, and whispered: "Tell me who it is that he means." Being in  
this position, that disciple leant back on Jesus' shoulder, and asked  
26 him: "Who is it, Master?" "It is the one," answered Jesus, "to whom  
I shall give a piece of bread after dipping it in the dish." And, when  
Jesus had dipped the bread, he took it and gave it to Judas, the son  
27 of Simon Iscariot; and it was then, after he had received it, that Satan  
took possession of him. So Jesus said to him: "Do at once what you  
28 are going to do." But no one at table understood why he said this  
29 to Judas. Some thought that, as Judas kept the purse, Jesus meant  
that he was to buy some things needed for the Festival, or to give  
30 something to the poor. After taking the piece of bread, Judas went  
31 out immediately; and it was night. When Judas had gone out, Jesus  
said: "Now the Son of Man has been exalted, and God has been ex-  
32 alted through him; and God will exalt him with himself — yes, he  
33 will exalt him forthwith. My children, I am to be with you but a lit-  
tle while longer. You will look for me; and what I said to the Jews  
34 — 'You cannot come where I am going' — I now say to you. I give  
you a new commandment — Love one another; love one another as  
35 I have loved you. It is by this that every one will recognize you as  
36 my disciples — by your loving one another." "Where are you going,  
Master?" asked Peter. "I am going where you cannot now follow  
37 me," answered Jesus, "but you shall follow me later." "Why cannot  
I follow you now, Master?" asked Peter. "I will lay down my life for  
38 you." "Will you lay down your life for me?" replied Jesus. "In truth  
I tell you, the cock will not crow till you have disowned me three  
14 times.

Do not let your hearts be troubled. Believe in God; believe also in me.

2 In my Father's Home there are many dwellings. If it had not been  
so, I should have told you, for I am going to prepare a place for you.  
3 And, since I go and prepare a place for you, I shall return and take  
4 you to be with me, so that you may be where I am; and you know the  
5 way to the place where I am going." "We do not know where you  
are going, Master," said Thomas; "so how can we know the way?"  
6 Jesus answered: "I am the Way, and the Truth, and the Life; no one

ever comes to the Father except through me. If you had recognized 7  
 me, you would have known my Father also; for the future you will  
 recognize him, indeed you have already seen him." "Master, show 8  
 us the Father," said Philip, "and we shall be satisfied." "Have I been 9  
 all this time among you," said Jesus, "and yet you, Philip, have not  
 recognized me? He who has seen me has seen the Father, how can  
 you say, then, 'Show us the Father'? Do not you believe that I am 10  
 in union with the Father, and the Father with me? In giving you  
 my teaching I am not speaking on my own authority; but the Father  
 himself, always in union with me, does his own work. Believe me," 11  
 he said to them all, "when I say that I am in union with the Father  
 and the Father with me, or else believe me on account of the work  
 itself. In truth I tell you, he who believes in me will himself do the 12  
 work that I am doing; and he will do greater work still, because I  
 am going to the Father. Whatever you ask, in my Name, I will do, 13  
 that the Father may be honored in the Son. If you ask anything, in  
 my Name, I will do it. If you love me, you will lay my commands to 14  
 heart, and I will ask the Father, and he will give you another Helper, 15  
 to be with you always — the Spirit of Truth. The world cannot re- 16  
 ceive this Spirit, because it does not see him or recognize him, but  
 you recognize him, because he is always with you, and is within you.  
 I will not leave you bereaved; I will come to you. In a little while the 18  
 world will see me no more, but you will still see me; because I am  
 living, you will be living also. At that time you will recognize that 20  
 I am in union with the Father, and you with me, and I with you. It 21  
 is he who has my commands and lays them to heart that loves me;  
 and he who loves me will be loved by my Father, and I will love him,  
 and will reveal myself to him." "What has happened, Master," said 22  
 Judas (not Judas Iscariot), "that you are going to reveal yourself to  
 us, and not to the world?" "Whoever loves me," Jesus answered, " 23  
 will lay my Message to heart; and my Father will love him, and we  
 will come to him and make our dwelling with him. He who does not 24  
 love me will not lay my Message to heart; and the Message to which  
 you are listening is not my own, but that of the Father who sent me. I 25  
 have told you all this while still with you, but the Helper — the Holy 26

## John 15

Spirit whom the Father will send in my Name — he will teach you all things, and will recall to your minds all that I have said to you.

27 Peace be with you! My own peace I give you. I do not give to you as the world gives. Do not let your hearts be troubled, or dismayed.  
28 You heard me say that I was going away and would return to you. Had you loved me, you would have been glad that I was going to  
29 the Father, because the Father is greater than I. And this I have told you now before it happens, that, when it does happen, you may still  
30 believe in me. I shall not talk with you much more, for the Spirit that is ruling the world is coming. He has nothing in common with me;  
31 but he is coming that the world may see that I love the Father, and  
15 that I do as the Father commanded me. Come, let us be going.

2 I am the True Vine, and my Father is the Vine-grower. Any unfruitful branch in me he takes away, and he cleanses every fruitful branch,  
3 that it may bear more fruit. You are already clean because of the  
4 Message that I have given you. Remain united to me, and I will remain united to you. As a branch cannot bear fruit by itself, unless it remains united to the vine; no more can you, unless you remain  
5 united to me. I am the Vine, you are the branches. He that remains united to me, while I remain united to him — he bears fruit plentifully;  
6 for you can do nothing apart from me. If any one does not remain united to me, he is thrown away, as a branch would be, and withers up. Such branches are collected and thrown into the fire,  
7 and are burnt. If you remain united to me, and my teaching remains  
8 in your hearts, ask whatever you wish, and it shall be yours. It is by your bearing fruit plentifully, and so showing yourselves my disciples,  
9 that my Father is honored. As the Father has loved me, so have  
10 I loved you; remain in my love. If you lay my commands to heart, you will remain in my love; just as I have laid the Father's commands  
11 to heart and remain in his love. I have told you all this so that my  
12 own joy may be yours, and that your joy may be complete. This is  
13 my command — Love one another, as I have loved you. No one can give greater proof of love than by laying down his life for his friends.  
14 And you are my friends, if you do what I command you. I no longer



call you ‘servants,’ because a servant does not know what his master is doing; but I have given you the name of ‘friends,’ because I made known to you everything that I learned from my Father. It was not you who chose me, but I who chose you, and I appointed you to go and bear fruit — fruit that should remain, so that the Father might grant you whatever you ask in my Name. I am giving you these commands that you may love one another. If the world hates you, you know that it has first hated me. If you belonged to the world, the world would love its own. Because you do not belong to the world, but I have chosen you out of the world — that is why the world hates you. Remember what I said to you — ‘A servant is not greater than his master.’ If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have laid my Message to heart, they will lay yours to heart also. But they will do all this to you, because you believe in my Name, for they do not know him who sent me. If I had not come and spoken to them, they would have had no sin to answer for; but as it is, they have no excuse for their sin. He who hates me hates my Father also. If I had not done among them such work as no one else ever did, they would have had no sin to answer for; but, as it is, they have both seen and hated both me and my Father. And so is fulfilled what is said in their Law — ‘They hated me without cause.’ But, when the Helper comes, whom I will send to you from the Father — the Spirit of Truth, who comes from the Father — he will bear testimony to me; yes, and you also are to bear testimony, because you have been with me from the first.

I have spoken to you in this way so that you may not falter. They will expel you from their Synagogues; indeed the time is coming when any one who kills you will think that he is making an offering to God. They will do this, because they have not learned to know the Father, or even me. But I have spoken to you of these things that, when the time for them comes, you may remember that I told you about them myself. I did not tell you all this at first, because I was with you. But now I am to return to him who sent me; and yet not one of you asks me — ‘Where are you going?’ Although your hearts are full of sorrow at all that I have been saying to you. Yet I am only

## John 16

telling you the truth; it is for your good that I should go away. For otherwise the Helper will never come to you, but, if I leave you, I  
8 will send him to you. And he, when he comes, will bring conviction to the world as to Sin, and as to Righteousness, and as to Judgment;  
19 as to Sin, for men do not believe in me; as to Righteousness, for I am  
11 going to the Father, and you will see me no longer; as to Judgment,  
12 for the Spirit that is ruling this world has been condemned. I have  
13 still much to say to you, but you cannot bear it now. Yet when he — The Spirit of Truth — comes, he will guide you into all Truth; for he will not speak on his own authority, but he will speak of all that he hears; and he will tell you of the things that are to come.  
14 He will honor me; because he will take of what is mine, and will  
15 tell it to you. Everything that the Father has is mine; that is why I  
16 said that he takes of what is mine, and will tell it to you. In a little while you will no longer see me; and then in a little while you will  
17 see me indeed.” At this some of his disciples said to one another: “What does he mean by saying to us ‘In a little while you will not see me, and then in a little while you will see me indeed’; and by  
18 saying ‘Because I am going to the Father’? What does he mean by ‘In a little while’?” they said; “we do not know what he is speaking  
19 about.” Jesus saw that they were wanting to ask him a question, and said: “Are you trying to find out from one another what I meant by saying ‘In a little while you will not see me; and then in a little while  
20 you will see me indeed’? In truth I tell you that you will weep and mourn, but the world will rejoice; you will suffer pain, but your pain  
21 shall turn to joy. A woman in labor is in pain because her time has come; but no sooner is the child born, than she forgets her trouble  
22 in her joy that a man has been born into the world. You, in the same way, are sorry now; but I shall see you again, and your hearts will  
23 rejoice, and no one will rob you of your joy. And at that time you will not ask me anything; in truth I tell you, if you ask the Father for  
24 anything, he will grant it to you in my Name. So far you have not asked for anything, in my Name; ask, and you will receive, so that  
25 your joy may be complete. I have spoken to you of all this in figures; a time is coming, however, when I shall not speak any longer to you

in figures, but shall tell you about the Father plainly. You will ask, at 26  
 that time, in my Name; and I do not say that I will intercede with the  
 Father for you; for the Father himself loves you, because you have 27  
 loved me, and have believed that I came from the Father. I came 28  
 out from the Father, and have come into the world; and now I am  
 to leave the world, and go to the Father." "At last," exclaimed the 29  
 disciples, "you are using plain words and not speaking in figures at  
 all. Now we are sure that you know everything, and need not wait 30  
 for any one to question you. This makes us believe that you did come  
 from God." "Do you believe that already?" Jesus answered. "Listen! 31  
 a time is coming — indeed it has already come — when you are to  
 be scattered, each going his own way, and to leave me alone; and yet 32  
 I am not alone, because the Father is with me. I have spoken to you 33  
 in this way, so that in me you may find peace. In the world you will  
 find trouble; yet, take courage! I have conquered the world." 17  
 After saying this, Jesus raised his eyes heaven-wards, and said: "Fa-  
 ther, the hour has come; honor thy Son, that thy Son may honor thee;  
 even as thou gavest him power over all mankind, that he should 2  
 give Immortal Life to all those whom thou has given him. And the 3  
 Immortal Life is this — to know thee the one true God, and Jesus  
 Christ whom thou has sent as thy Messenger. I have honored thee 4  
 on earth by completing the work which thou has given me to do;  
 and now do thou honor me, Father, at thy own side, with the honor 5  
 which I had at thy side before the world began. I have revealed thee 6  
 to those whom thou gavest me from the world; they were thy own,  
 and thou gavest them to me; and they have laid thy Message to heart.  
 They recognize now that everything that thou gavest me was from 7  
 thee; for I have given them the teaching which thou gavest me, and 8  
 they received it, and clearly understood that I came from thee, and  
 they believed that thou has sent me as thy Messenger. I intercede for 9  
 them; I am not interceding for the world, but for those whom thou  
 has given me, for they are thy own — All that is mine is thine, and 10  
 all that is thine is mine — and I am honored in them. Now I am to 11  
 be in this world no longer, but they are still to be in the world, and  
 I am to come to thee. Holy Father, keep them by that revelation of

## John 18

thy Name which thou has given me, that they may be one, as we  
12 are. Whilst I was with them, I kept them by that revelation, and I  
have guarded them; and not one of them has been lost, except that  
13 lost soul — in fulfillment of Scripture. But now I am to come to thee;  
and I am speaking thus, while still in the world, that they may have  
14 my own joy, in all its fullness, in their hearts. I have given them thy  
Message; and the world hated them, because they do not belong to  
15 the world, even as I do not belong to the world. I do not ask thee to  
16 take them out of the world, but to keep them from Evil. They do not  
17 belong to the world, even as I do not belong to the world. Consecrate  
18 them by the Truth; thy Message is Truth. Just as thou has sent me  
as thy Messenger to the world, so I send them as my Messengers to  
19 the world. And it is for their sakes that I am consecrating myself, so  
20 that they also may be truly consecrated. But it is not only for them  
that I am interceding, but also for those who believe in me through  
21 their Message, that they all may be one — that as thou, Father, art in  
union with us — and so the world may believe that thou hast sent  
22 me as thy Messenger. I have given them the honor which thou has  
23 given me, that they may be one as we are one — I in union with them  
and thou with me — that so they may be perfected in their union,  
and thus the world may know that thou hast sent me as thy Mes-  
24 senger, and that thou has loved them as thou hast loved me. Father,  
my desire for all those whom thou has given me is that they may be  
with me where I am, so that they may see the honor which thou has  
given me; for thou didst love me before the beginning of the world.  
25 O righteous Father, though the world did not know thee, I knew  
thee; and these men knew that thou has sent me as thy Messenger.  
26 I have made thee known to them, and will do so still; that the love  
that thou has had for me may be in their hearts, and that I may be  
18 in them also."

When Jesus had said this, he went out with his disciples and crossed  
the brook Kedron to a place where there was a garden, into which  
2 he and his disciples went. The place was well known to Judas, the  
3 betrayer, for Jesus and his disciples had often met there. So Judas,  
who had obtained the soldiers of the Roman garrison, and some

police-officers from the Chief Priests and the Pharisees, came there  
 with lanterns, torches, and weapons. Jesus, aware of all that was 4  
 coming upon him, went to meet them, and said to them: "For whom  
 are you looking?" "Jesus of Nazareth," was their answer. "I am he," 5  
 said Jesus. (Judas, the betrayer, was also standing with them.) When 6  
 Jesus said 'I am he,' they drew back and fell to the ground. So he 7  
 again asked for whom they were looking, and they answered: "Jesus  
 of Nazareth." "I have already told you that I am he," replied Jesus, 8  
 "so, if it is for me that you are looking, let these men go." This was 9  
 in fulfillment of his words — 'Of those whom thou hast given me I  
 have not lost one.' At this, Simon Peter, who had a sword with him, 10  
 drew it, and struck the High Priest's servant, and cut off his right ear.  
 The servant's name was Malchus. But Jesus said to Peter: "Sheathe 11  
 your sword. Shall I not drink the cup which the Father has given  
 me?" So the soldiers of the garrison, with their Commanding Offi- 12  
 cer and the Jewish police, arrested Jesus and bound him, and took 13  
 him first of all to Annas. Annas was the father-in-law of Caiaphas,  
 who was High Priest that year. It was Caiaphas who had counseled 14  
 the Jews, that it was best that one man should die for the people.  
 Meanwhile Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disci- 15  
 ple. That disciple, being well-known to the High Priest, went with  
 Jesus into the High Priest's court-yard, while Peter stood outside by 16  
 the door. Presently the other disciple — the one well-known to the  
 High Priest — went out and spoke to the portress, and brought Pe- 17  
 ter in. So the maidservant said to Peter: "Are not you also one of  
 this man's disciples?" "No, I am not," he said. The servants and po- 18  
 lice-officers were standing round a char- coal fire (which they had  
 made because it was cold), and were warming themselves. Peter,  
 too, was with them, standing and warming himself. The High Priest 19  
 questioned Jesus about his disciples and about his teaching. "For my 20  
 part," answered Jesus, "I have spoken to all the world openly. I al-  
 ways taught in some Synagogue, or in the Temple Courts, places  
 where all the Jews assemble, and I never spoke of anything in se-  
 cret. Why question me? Question those who have listened to me as 21  
 to what I have spoken about to them. They must know what I said."

## John 18

22 When Jesus said this, one of the police-officers, who was standing  
near, gave him a blow with his hand. "Do you answer the High Priest  
23 like that?" he exclaimed. "If I said anything wrong, give evidence  
24 about it," replied Jesus; "but if not, why do you strike me?" Annas  
25 sent him bound to Caiaphas the High Priest. Meanwhile Simon Peter  
was standing there, warming himself; so they said to him: "Are  
not you also one of his disciples?" Peter denied it. "No, I am not," he  
26 said. One of the High Priest's servants, a relation of the man whose  
ear Peter had cut off, exclaimed: "Did not I myself see you with him  
27 in the garden?" Peter again denied it; and at that moment a cock  
28 crowed. From Caiaphas they took Jesus to the Government House.  
It was early in the morning. But they did not enter the Government  
House themselves, lest they should become 'defiled,' and so be un-  
29 able to eat the Passover. Therefore Pilate came outside to speak to  
30 them. "What charge do you bring against this man?" he asked. "If he  
had not been a criminal, we should not have given him up to you,"  
31 they answered. "Take him yourselves," said Pilate, "and try him by  
your own Law." "We have no power to put any one to death," the  
32 Jews replied- - In fulfillment of what Jesus had said when indicat-  
33 ing the death that he was destined to die. After that, Pilate went into  
the Government House again, and calling Jesus up, asked him: "Are  
34 you the King of the Jews?" "Do you ask me that yourself?" replied  
35 Jesus, "or did others say it to you about me?" "Do you take me for  
a Jew?" was Pilate's answer. "It is your own nation and the Chief  
36 Priests who have given you up to me. What have you done?" "My  
kingly power," replied Jesus, "is not due to this world. If it had been  
so, my servants would be doing their utmost to prevent my being  
given up to the Jews; but my kingly power is not from the world."  
37 "So you are a King after all!" exclaimed Pilate. "Yes, it is true I am  
a King," answered Jesus. "I was born for this, I have come into the  
world for this — to bear testimony to the Truth. Every one who is on  
38 the side of Truth listens to my voice." "What is Truth?" exclaimed  
Pilate. After saying this, he went out to the Jews again, and said:  
39 "For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged. It is,  
however, the custom for me to grant you the release of one man at

the Passover Festival. Do you wish for the release of the King of the Jews?" "No, not this man," they shouted again, "but Barabbas!" This Barabbas was a robber. 40  
19

After that, Pilate had Jesus scourged. The soldiers made a crown with some thorns and put it on his head and threw a purple robe round him. They kept coming up to him and saying: "Long live the King of the Jews!" and they gave him blow after blow with their hands. Pilate again came outside, and said to the people: "Look! I am bringing him out to you, so that you may know that I find nothing with which he can be charged." Then Jesus came outside, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple robe; and Pilate said to them: "Here is the man!" When the Chief Priests and the police-officers saw him, they shouted: "Crucify him! Crucify him!" "Take him yourselves and crucify him," said Pilate. "For my part, I find nothing with which he can be charged." "But we," replied the Jews, "have a Law, under which he deserves death for making himself out to be the Son of God." When Pilate heard what they said, he became still more alarmed; and, going into the Government House again, he said to Jesus: "Where do you come from?" But Jesus made no reply. So Pilate said to him: "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do not you know that I have power to release you, and have power to crucify you?" "You would have no power over me at all," answered Jesus, "if it had not been given you from above; and, therefore, the man who betrayed me to you is guilty of the greater sin." This made Pilate anxious to release him; but the Jews shouted: "If you release that man, you are no friend of the Emperor! Any one who makes himself out to be a King is setting himself against the Emperor!" On hearing what they said, Pilate brought Jesus out, and took his seat upon the Bench at a place called 'The Stone Pavement' — in Hebrew 'Gabbatha.' It was the Passover Preparation Day, and about noon. Then he said to the Jews: "Here is your King!" At that the people shouted: "Kill him! Kill him! Crucify him!" "What! shall I crucify your King?" exclaimed Pilate. "We have no King but the Emperor," replied the Chief Priests; whereupon Pilate gave Jesus up to them to be crucified. So they took Jesus; and he went out, carrying his cross himself, 13  
14  
15  
16  
17

to the place which is named from a scull, or, in Hebrew, Golgotha.  
18 There they crucified him, and two others with him — one on each  
19 side, and Jesus between them. Pilate also had these words written  
and put up over the cross — ‘JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF  
20 THE JEWS.’ These words were read by many of the Jews, because  
the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and they were  
21 written in Hebrew, Latin and Greek. The Jewish Chief Priests said to  
Pilate: “Do not write ‘The King of the Jews’, but write what the man  
22 said — ‘I am the King of the Jews.’” But Pilate answered: “What I  
23 have written, I have written.” When the soldiers had crucified Je-  
sus, they took his clothes and divided them into four shares — a  
share for each soldier — and they took the coat also. The coat had  
24 no seam, being woven in one piece from top to bottom. So they said  
to one another: “Do not let us tear it, but let us cast lots for it, to  
see who shall have it.” This was in fulfillment of the words of Scrip-  
ture — ‘They shared my clothes among them, And over my clothing  
25 they cast lots.’ That was what the soldiers did. Meanwhile near the  
cross of Jesus were standing his mother and his mother’s sister, as  
26 well as Mary the wife of Clopas and Mary of Magdala. When Jesus  
saw his mother, and the disciple whom he loved, standing near, he  
27 said to his mother: “There is your son.” Then he said to that disciple:  
“There is your mother.” And from that very hour the disciple took  
28 her to live in his house. Afterwards, knowing that everything was  
now finished, Jesus said, in fulfillment of the words of Scripture: “I  
29 am thirsty.” There was a bowl standing there full of common wine;  
so they put a sponge soaked in the wine on the end of a hyssop-stalk,  
30 and held it up to his mouth. When Jesus had received the wine, he  
exclaimed: “All is finished!” Then, bowing his head, he resigned his  
31 spirit to God. It was the Preparation Day, and so, to prevent the bod-  
ies from remaining on the crosses during the Sabbath (for that Sab-  
bath was a great day), the Jews asked Pilate to have the legs broken  
32 and the bodies removed. Accordingly the soldiers came and broke  
the legs of the first man, and then those of the other who had been  
33 crucified with Jesus; but, on coming to him, when they saw that he  
34 was already dead, they did not break his legs. One of the soldiers,



however, pierced his side with a spear, and blood and water immediately flowed from it. This is the statement of one who actually saw it — and his statement may be relied upon, and he knows that he is speaking the truth — and it is given in order that you also may be convinced. For all this took place in fulfillment of the words of Scripture — ‘Not one of its bones shall be broken.’ And there is another passage which says — ‘They will look upon him whom they pierced.’ After this, Joseph of Ramah, a disciple of Jesus — but a secret one, owing to his fear of the Jews — begged Pilate’s permission to remove the body of Jesus. Pilate gave him leave; so Joseph went and removed the body. Nicodemus, too — the man who had formerly visited Jesus by night — came with a roll of myrrh and aloes, weighing nearly a hundred pounds. They took the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen with the spices, according to the Jewish mode of burial. At the place where Jesus had been crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a newly-made tomb in which no one had ever been laid. And so, because of its being the Preparation Day, and as the tomb was close at hand, they laid Jesus there. **20**

On the first day of the week, early in the morning, while it was still dark, Mary of Magdala went to the tomb, and saw that the stone had been removed. So she came running to Simon Peter, and to that other disciple who was Jesus’ friend, and said to them: “They have taken away the Master out of the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid him!” Upon this, Peter started off with that other disciple, and they went to the tomb. The two began running together; but the other disciple ran faster than Peter, and reached the tomb first. Stooping down, he saw the linen wrappings lying there, but did not go in. Presently Simon Peter came following behind him, and went into the tomb; and he looked at the linen wrappings lying there, and the cloth which had been upon Jesus’ head, not lying with the wrappings, but rolled up on one side, separately. Then the other disciple, who had reached the tomb first, went inside too, and he saw for himself and was convinced. For they did not then understand the passage of Scripture which says that Jesus must rise again from the dead. The disciples then returned to their companions. Meanwhile **10**

Mary was standing close outside the tomb, weeping. Still weeping,  
12 she leant forward into the tomb, and perceived two angels clothed  
in white sitting there, where the body of Jesus had been lying, one  
13 where the head and the other where the feet had been. "Why are you  
weeping?" asked the angels. "They have taken my Master away," she  
14 answered, "and I do not know where they have laid him." After say-  
ing this, she turned round, and looked at Jesus standing there, but  
15 she did not know that it was Jesus. "Why are you weeping? Whom  
are you seeking?" he asked. Supposing him to be the gardener, Mary  
answered: "If it was you, Sir, who carried him away, tell me where  
16 you have laid him, and I will take him away myself." "Mary!" said  
Jesus. She turned round, and exclaimed in Hebrew: "Rabboni!" (or,  
17 as we should say, 'Teacher'). "Do not hold me," Jesus said; "for I  
have not yet ascended to the Father. But go to my Brothers, and tell  
them that I am ascending to him who is my Father and their Father,  
18 my God and their God." Mary of Magdala went and told the disci-  
ples that she had seen the Master, and that he had said this to her.  
19 In the evening of the same day — the first day of the week — after  
the doors of the room, in which the disciples were, had been shut for  
fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood among them and said: "Peace  
20 be with you"; after which he showed them his hands and his side.  
21 The disciples were filled with joy when they saw the Master. Again  
Jesus said to them: "Peace be with you. As the Father has sent me as  
22 his Messenger, so I am sending you." After saying this, he breathed  
23 on them, and said: "Receive the Holy Spirit; if you remit any one's  
sins, they have been remitted; and, if you retain them, they have  
24 been retained." But Thomas, one of the Twelve, called 'The Twin,'  
25 was not with them when Jesus came; so the rest of the disciples said  
to him: "We have seen the Master!" "Unless I see the marks of the  
nails in his hands," he exclaimed, "and put my finger into the marks,  
26 and put my hand into his side, I will not believe it." A week later the  
disciples were again in the house, and Thomas with them. After the  
doors had been shut, Jesus came and stood among them, and said:  
27 "Peace be with you." Then he said to Thomas: "Place your finger  
here, and look at my hands; and place your hand here, and put it

into my side; and do not refuse to believe, but believe." And Thomas 28  
 exclaimed: "My Master, and my God!" "Is it because you have seen 29  
 me that you have believed?" said Jesus. "Blessed are they who have  
 not seen, and yet have believed!" There were many other signs of his 30  
 mission that Jesus gave in presence of the disciples, which are not  
 recorded in this book; but these have been recorded that you may 31  
 believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God — and that, through  
 your belief in his Name, you may have Life. **21**

Later on, Jesus showed himself again to the disciples by the Sea of  
 Tiberias. It was in this way: — Simon Peter, Thomas, who was called 2  
 'The Twin,' Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, Zebediah's sons, and two  
 other disciples of Jesus, were together, when Simon Peter said: "I 3  
 am going fishing." "We will come with you," said the others. They  
 went out and got into the boat, but caught nothing that night. Just 4  
 as day was breaking, Jesus came and stood on the beach; but the  
 disciples did not know that it was he. "My children," he said, "have 5  
 you anything to eat?" "No," they answered. "Cast your net to the 6  
 right of the boat," he said, "and you will find fish." So they cast the  
 net, and now they could not haul it in on account of the quantity  
 of fish. Upon this the disciple whom Jesus loved said to Peter: "It 7  
 is the Master!" When Simon Peter heard that it was the Master, he  
 fastened his coat round him (for he had taken it off), and threw him-  
 self into the Sea. But the rest of the disciples came in the boat (for 8  
 they were only about a hundred yards from shore), dragging the net  
 full of fish. When they had come ashore, they found a charcoal fire 9  
 ready, with some fish already on it, and some bread as well. "Bring 10  
 some of the fish which you have just caught," said Jesus. So Simon 11  
 Peter got into the boat and hauled the net ashore full of large fish,  
 a hundred and fifty-three of them; and yet, although there were so  
 many, the net had not been torn. And Jesus said to them: "Come 12  
 and breakfast." Not one of the disciples ventured to ask him who he  
 was, knowing that it was the Master. Jesus went and took the bread 13  
 and gave it to them, and the fish too. This was the third time that 14  
 Jesus showed himself to the disciples after he had risen from the  
 dead. When breakfast was over, Jesus said to Simon Peter: "Simon, 15

son of John, do you love me more than the others?" "Yes, Master," he answered, "you know that I am your friend." "Feed my lambs,"  
16 said Jesus. Then, a second time, Jesus asked: "Simon, son of John, do you love me?" "Yes, Master," he answered, "you know that I am  
17 your friend." "Tend my sheep," said Jesus. The third time, Jesus said to him: "Simon, son of John, are you my friend?" Peter was hurt at his third question being 'Are you my friend?'; and exclaimed: "Master, you know everything! You can tell that I am your friend." "Feed  
18 my sheep," said Jesus. "In truth I tell you," he continued, "when you were young, you used to put on your own girdle, and walk wherever you wished; but, when you have grown old, you will have to stretch out your hands, while some one else puts on your girdle, and  
19 takes you where you do not wish." Jesus said this to show the death by which Peter was to honor God, and then he added: "Follow me."  
20 Peter turned round, and saw the disciple whom Jesus loved following — the one who at the supper leant back on the Master's shoulder, and asked him who it was that would betray him. Seeing him,  
21 Peter said to Jesus: "Master, what about this man?" "If it is my will that he should wait till I come," answered Jesus, "what has that to  
22 do with you? Follow me yourself." So the report spread among the Brethren that that disciple was not to die; yet Jesus did not say that he was not to die, but said "If it is my will that he should wait till I  
23 come, what has that to do with you?" It is this disciple who states these things, and who recorded them; and we know that his statement is true. There are many other things which Jesus did; but, if every one of them were to be recorded in detail, I suppose that even the world itself would not hold the books that would be written.

# ACTS

## THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES

The first account which I drew up, Theophilus, dealt with all that Jesus did and taught from the very first, down to that day on which he was taken up to Heaven, after he had, by the help of the Holy Spirit, given instructions to the Apostles whom he had chosen. With abundant proofs, he showed himself to them, still living, after his death; appearing to them from time to time during forty days, and speaking of all that related to the Kingdom of God. And once, when he had gathered them together, he charged them not to leave Jerusalem, but to wait there for the fulfillment of the Father's promise — "that promise," he said, "of which you have heard me speak; for, while John baptized with water, you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit before many days have passed." So, when the Apostles had met together, they asked Jesus this question — "Master, is this the time when you intend to re-establish the Kingdom for Israel?" His answer was: "It is not for you to know times or hours, for the Father has reserved these for his own decision; but you shall receive power, when the Holy Spirit shall have descended upon you, and shall be witnesses for me not only in Jerusalem, but throughout Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth." No sooner had Jesus said this than he was caught up before their eyes, and a cloud received him from their sight. While they were still gazing up into the heavens, as he went, suddenly two men, clothed in white, stood beside them, and said: "Men of Galilee, why are you standing here looking up into the heavens? This very Jesus, who has been taken from you into the heavens, will come in the very way in which you have seen him go into the heavens." Then the Apostles returned to Jerusalem from the hill called Olivet, which is about three quarters of a mile from the city. When they reached Jerusalem, they went to the upstairs room, where they were staying. There were there Peter, John, James, and

## Acts 2

Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, Simon the Zealot, and Judas the son of James.

14 They all united in devoting themselves to Prayer, and so did some  
15 women, and Mary, the mother of Jesus, and his brothers. About  
this time, at a meeting of the Brethren, when there were about a  
16 hundred and twenty present, Peter rose to speak. "Brothers," he  
said, "it was necessary that the prediction of Scripture should be  
fulfilled, which the Holy Spirit made by the lips of David about  
17 Judas, who acted as guide to the men that arrested Jesus, for he  
was one of our number and had his part allotted him in this work  
18 of ours." (This man had bought a piece of land with the price of his  
treachery; and, falling heavily, his body had burst open, and all his  
19 bowels protruded. This became known to every one living in  
Jerusalem, so that the field came to be called, in their language,  
20 'Akeldama,' which means the 'Field of Blood.') "For in the Book of  
Psalms," Peter continued, "it is said — 'Let his dwelling become  
desolate, and let no one live in it'; and also — 'His office let another  
21 take.' Therefore, from among the men who have been with us all  
the time that Jesus, our Master, went in and out among us — From  
22 his baptism by John down to that day on which he was taken from  
us — some one must be found to join us as a witness of his  
23 resurrection." So they put forward two men, Joseph called  
24 Barsabas, whose other name was Justus, and Matthias; and they  
offered this prayer — "O Lord, who reads all hearts, show which of  
25 these two men you have chosen To take the place in this apostolic  
26 work, which Judas has abandoned, to go to his proper place." Then  
they drew lots between them; and, the lot having fallen on  
2 Matthias, he was added to the number of the eleven Apostles.

In the course of the Festival at the close of the Harvest the disci-  
2 ples had all met together, when suddenly there came from the heav-  
ens a noise like that of a strong wind rushing by; it filled the whole  
3 house in which they were sitting. Then there appeared tongues of  
what seemed to be flame, separating, so that one settled on each  
4 of them; and they were all filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to  
speak with strange 'tongues' as the Spirit prompted their utterances.

Now there were then staying in Jerusalem religious Jews from every 5  
 country in the world; and, when this sound was heard, numbers of 6  
 people collected, in the greatest excitement, because each of them  
 heard the disciples speaking in his own language. They were utterly 7  
 amazed, and kept asking in astonishment: "What! Are not all these  
 men who are speaking Galileans? Then how is it that we each of us 8  
 hear them in our own native language? Some of us are Parthians, 9  
 some Medes, some Elamites; and some of us live in Mesopotamia,  
 in Judea and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Roman Asia, in Phrygia 10  
 and Pamphylia, in Egypt and the districts of Libya adjoining Cyrene;  
 some of us are visitors from Rome, either Jews by birth or converts, 11  
 and some are Cretans and Arabians — yet we all alike hear them  
 speaking in our own tongues of the great things that God has done."  
 They were all utterly amazed and bewildered. "What does it mean?" 12  
 they asked one another. But there were some who said with a sneer: 13  
 "They have had too much new wine." Then Peter, surrounded by the 14  
 eleven other Apostles, stood up, and, raising his voice, addressed  
 the crowd. "Men of Judea," he began, "and all you who are staying  
 in Jerusalem, let me tell you what this means. Mark well my words.  
 These men are not drunk, as you suppose; for it is only now nine in 15  
 the morning! No! This is what is spoken of in the prophet Joel — 'It 16  
 shall come about in the last days,' God says, 'That I will pour out  
 my Spirit on all mankind; your sons and your daughters shall be-  
 come Prophets, your young men shall see visions, and your old men  
 dream dreams; yes, even on the slaves — for they are mine — both 18  
 men and women, I will in those days pour out my Spirit, and I will 19  
 show wonders in the heavens above, and signs on the earth below  
 — Blood and fire and mist of smoke; the sun shall become dark- 20  
 ness, and the moon blood-red, Before the Day of the Lord comes  
 — that great and awful day. Then shall every one who invokes the 21  
 Name of the Lord be saved.' Men of Israel, listen to what I am say- 22  
 ing. Jesus of Nazareth, a man whose mission from God to you was  
 proved by miracles, wonders, and signs, which God showed among  
 you through him, as you know full well — He, I say, in accordance 23

with God's definite plan and with his previous knowledge, was betrayed, and you, by the hands of lawless men, nailed him to a cross  
24 and put him to death. But God released him from the pangs of death and raised him to life, it being impossible for death to retain its hold  
25 upon him. Indeed it was to him that David was referring when he said — 'I have had the Lord ever before my eyes, For he stands at my  
26 right hand, that I should not be disquieted. Therefore my heart was cheered, and my tongue told its delight; Yes, even my body, too, will  
27 rest in hope; for you wilt not abandon my soul to the Place of Death, nor surrender me, your holy one, to undergo corruption. Thou have  
28 shown me the path to life, you wilt fill me with gladness in your presence.' Brothers, I can speak to you the more confidently about  
29 the Patriarch David, because he is dead and buried, and his tomb  
30 is here among us to this very day. David, then, Prophet as he was, knowing that God 'had solemnly sworn to him to set one of his descendants upon his throne,' looked into the future, and referred to  
31 the resurrection of the Christ when he said that 'he had not been abandoned to the Place of Death, nor had his body undergone corruption.' It was this Jesus, whom God raised to life; and of that we  
32 are ourselves all witnesses. And now that he has been exalted to the right hand of God, and has received from the Father the promised  
33 gift of the Holy Spirit, he has begun to pour out that gift, as you yourselves now see and hear. It was not David who went up into  
34 Heaven; for he himself says- -'The Lord said to my master: "Sit on my right hand, till I put your enemies as a footstool under they feet."' So  
35 let the whole nation of Israel know beyond all doubt, that God has made him both Lord and Christ — this very Jesus whom you crucified." When the people heard this, they were conscience-smitten,  
36 and said to Peter and the rest of the Apostles: "Brothers, what can we do?" "Repent," answered Peter, "and be baptized every one of  
37 you in the Faith of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins; and then you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit. For the promise is for  
38 you and for your children, and also for all those now far away, who may be called by the Lord our God." With many other words Peter  
39 enforced his teaching, while the burden of his exhortations was  
40



— “Save yourselves from the perverse spirit of this age.” So those 41  
 who accepted his teaching were baptized, and about three thousand 42  
 people joined the disciples on that day alone. They devoted them- 43  
 selves to the teaching of the Apostles and to the Common Life of the 44  
 Church, to the Breaking of the Bread and to the Prayers. A deep im- 45  
 pression was made upon every one, and many wonders and signs 46  
 were done at the hands of the Apostles. All who became believers in 47  
 Christ held everything for the common use; they sold their property 3  
 and their goods, and shared the proceeds among them all, accord-  
 ing to their individual needs. Every day they devoted themselves to  
 meeting together in the Temple Courts, and to the Breaking of Bread  
 at their homes, while they partook of their food in simple-hearted  
 gladness, praising God, and winning the good-will of all the people.  
 And the Lord daily added to their company those who were in the  
 path of Salvation.

One day, as Peter and John were going up into the Temple Courts for  
 the three o’clock Prayers, a man, who had been lame from his birth,  
 was being carried by. This man used to be set down every day at the 2  
 gate of the Temple called ‘the Beautiful Gate,’ to beg of those who  
 went in. Seeing Peter and John on the point of entering, he asked 3  
 them to give him something. Peter fixed his eyes on him, and so 4  
 did John, and then Peter said: “Look at us.” The man was all atten- 5  
 tion, expecting to get something from them; but Peter added: “I have 6  
 no gold or silver, but I give you what I have. In the Name of Jesus  
 Christ of Nazareth I bid you walk.” Grasping the lame man by the 7  
 right hand, Peter lifted him up. Instantly the man’s feet and ankles  
 became strong, and, leaping up, he stood and began to walk about, 8  
 and then went with them into the Temple Courts, walking, and leap-  
 ing, and praising God. All the people saw him walking about and 9  
 praising God; and, when they recognized him as the man who used 10  
 to sit begging at the Beautiful Gate of the Temple, they were utterly  
 astonished and amazed at what had happened to him. While the 11  
 man still clung to Peter and John, the people all quickly gathered  
 round them in the Colonnade named after Solomon, in the great-  
 est astonishment. On seeing this, Peter said to the people: “Men of 12

Israel, why are you surprised at this? and why do you stare at us, as though we, by any power or piety of our own, had enabled this  
13 man to walk? The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our ancestors, has done honor to his Servant Jesus — him whom you gave up and disowned before Pilate, when he had decided to  
14 set him free. You, I say, disowned the Holy and Righteous One, and asked for the release of a murderer! The very Guide to Life you put to death! But God raised him from the dead — and of that we are  
15 ourselves witnesses. And it is by faith in the Name of Jesus, that this man, whom you all see and know, has — by his Name — been made strong. Yes, it is the faith inspired by Jesus that has made this  
16 complete cure of the man, before the eyes of you all. And yet, my Brothers, I know that you acted as you did from ignorance, and your  
17 rulers also. But it was in this way that God fulfilled all that he had long ago foretold, as to the sufferings of his Christ, by the lips of  
18 all the Prophets. Therefore, repent and turn, that your sins may be wiped away; so that happier times may come from the Lord himself,  
19 and that he may send you, in Jesus, your long-appointed Christ. But Heaven must be his home, until the days of the Universal Restoration, of which God has spoken by the lips of his holy Prophets from  
20 the very first. Moses himself said — ‘The Lord your God will raise up from among your brothers a Prophet, as he raised me. To him you  
21 will listen whenever he speaks to you. And it shall be that should any one among the people not listen to that Prophet, he will be utterly  
22 destroyed.’ Yes, and all the Prophets from Samuel onwards, and all their successors who had a message to deliver, told of these  
23 days. You yourselves are the heirs of the Prophets, and heirs, too, of the Covenant which God made with your ancestors, when he said to Abraham — ‘In your descendants will all the nations of the earth  
24 be blessed.’ For you, first, God raised up his Servant, and sent him  
25 to bless you, by turning each one of you from his wicked ways.”

While Peter and John were still speaking to the people, the Chief Priest, with the Officer in charge at the Temple and the Sadducees,  
2 came up to them, much annoyed because they were teaching the people, and because, through Jesus, they were preaching the

resurrection from the dead. They arrested the Apostles and, as it 3  
 was already evening, had them placed in custody till the next day.  
 Many, however, of those who had heard the Apostles' Message 4  
 became believers in Christ, the number of the men alone  
 amounting to about five thousand. The next day, a meeting of the 5  
 leading men, the Councillors, and the Teachers of the Law was  
 held in Jerusalem. There were present Annas the High Priest, 6  
 Caiaphas, John, Alexander, and all who were of High-Priestly rank.  
 They had Peter and John brought before them, and questioned 7  
 them. "By what power," they asked, "Or in whose name have men  
 like you done this thing?" On this, Peter, filled with the Holy 8  
 Spirit, spoke as follows: "Leaders of the people and Councillors,  
 since we are on our trial to-day for a kind act done to a helpless 9  
 man, and are asked in what way the man here before you has been  
 cured, let me tell you all and all the people of Israel, that it is by the 10  
 Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified and whom  
 God raised from the dead — it is, I say, by his Name that this man  
 stands here before you lame no longer. Jesus is 'the stone which, 11  
 scorned by you the builders, has yet become the corner stone.' And 12  
 Salvation is in him alone; for there is no other Name in the whole  
 world, given to men, to which we must look for our Salvation."  
 When the Council saw how boldly Peter and John spoke, and 13  
 found that they were uneducated men of humble station, they  
 were surprised, and realized that they had been companions of  
 Jesus. But, when they looked at the man who had been healed, 14  
 standing there with them, they had nothing to say. So they ordered 15  
 them out of court, and then began consulting together. "What are 16  
 we to do to these men?" they asked one another. "That a  
 remarkable sign has been given through them is obvious to every  
 one living in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it. But, to prevent this 17  
 thing from spreading further among the people, let us warn them  
 not to speak in this Name any more to any one whatever." So they 18  
 called the Apostles in, and ordered them not to speak or teach in  
 the Name of Jesus. But Peter and John replied: "Whether it is right, 19  
 in the sight of God, to listen to you rather than to him — Judge for 20

## Acts 4

yourself, for we cannot help speaking of what we have seen and  
21 heard.” However, after further warnings, the Council set them at  
liberty, not seeing any safe way of punishing them, because of the  
22 people, for they were all praising God for what had occurred; for  
the man who was the subject of this miraculous cure was more  
23 than forty years old. After they had been set at liberty, the Apostles  
went to their friends and told them what the Chief Priests and the  
24 Councillors had said to them. All who heard their story, moved by  
a common impulse, raised their voices to God in prayer: “O  
Sovereign Lord, it is you who has ‘made the heavens, the earth, the  
25 sea, and everything that is in them,’ And who, by the lips of our  
ancestor, your servant David, who spoke under the influence of the  
Holy Spirit, have said — ‘Why did the nations rage, and the  
26 peoples form vain designs? The kings of the earth set their array,  
and its rulers gathered together, against the Lord and against his  
27 Christ.’ There have indeed gathered together in this city against  
your holy Servant Jesus, whom you have consecrated the Christ, not  
Herod and Pontius Pilate only, but the nations and the people of  
28 Israel besides — Yet only to do what thou, by thy power and of thy  
own will, didst long ago destine to be done. Now, therefore, O  
29 Lord, mark their threats, and enable thy servants, with all  
fearlessness, to tell thy Message, while thou stretchest out thy hand  
30 to heal, and causest signs and wonders to take place through the  
Name of thy holy Servant Jesus.” When their prayer was ended, the  
31 place in which they were assembled was shaken; and they were all  
filled with the Holy Spirit, and began to tell God’s Message  
32 fearlessly. The whole body of those who had become believers in  
Christ were of one heart and mind. Not one of them claimed any of  
his goods as his own, but everything was held for the common use.  
33 The Apostles continued with great power to bear their testimony  
to the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and God’s blessing rested  
34 upon them all abundantly. Nor was there any one in need among  
them, for all who were owners of land or houses sold them, and  
35 brought the proceeds of the sales And laid them at the Apostles’  
feet; and then every one received a share in proportion to his

wants. A Levite of Cyprian birth, named Joseph, (who had 36  
received from the Apostles the additional name of 'Barnabas' —  
which means 'The Consoler,') Sold a farm that belonged to him, 37  
and brought the money and laid it at the Apostles' feet. 5

There was, however, a man named Ananias, who, with his wife  
Sapphira, sold some property, and, with her connivance, kept back 2  
some of the proceeds. He brought only a part and laid it at the  
Apostles' feet. "Ananias," Peter exclaimed, "how is it that Satan has 3  
so taken possession of your heart that you have lied to the Holy  
Spirit, and kept back a part of the money paid for the land? While 4  
it was unsold, was not it your own? and after it was sold, was not  
the money at your own disposal? How did you come to think of  
such a thing? You have lied, not to men, but to God!" As Ananias 5  
heard these words, he fell down and expired; and every one who  
heard of it was appalled. The young men got up, and, winding the 6  
body in a sheet, carried it out and buried it. After an interval of 7  
about three hours his wife came in, not knowing what had  
happened. "Is it true," Peter asked, addressing her, "that you sold 8  
your land for such a sum?" "Yes," she answered, "we did." Then 9  
Peter said: "How did you come to agree to provoke the Spirit of the  
Lord? Listen! The foot-steps of those who have buried your  
husband are at the door; and they will carry you out too." Instantly 10  
Sapphira fell down at Peter's feet and expired. On coming in, the  
young men found her dead; so they carried her out and buried her  
by her husband's side. The whole Church and all who heard of 11  
these events were appalled. Many signs and wonders continued to 12  
occur among the people, through the instrumentality of the  
Apostles, whose custom it was to meet all together in the  
Colonnade of Solomon; but of the rest no one ventured to join 13  
them. On the other hand, the people were full of their praise, and 14  
still larger numbers, both of men and women, as they became  
believers in the Lord, were added to their number. The 15  
consequence was that people would bring out their sick even into  
the streets, and lay them on mattresses and mats, in the hope that,  
as Peter came by, at least his shadow might fall on some one of

16 them. Besides this, the inhabitants of the towns round Jerusalem  
flocked into the city, bringing with them their sick and those who  
17 were troubled by foul spirits; and they were cured every one. At  
this the High Priest was roused to action, and he and all his  
supporters (who formed the party of the Sadducees), moved by  
18 jealousy, arrested the Apostles, and had them placed in custody.  
An angel of the Lord, however, opened the prison doors at night  
19 and led them out. "Go," he said, "and stand in the Temple Courts,  
20 and tell the people the whole Message of this new Life." When  
they heard this, they went at daybreak into the Temple Courts, and  
began to teach. The High Priest and his party, on their arrival,  
summoned the High Council, including all the leading men among  
22 the Israelites, and sent to the jail to fetch the Apostles. But, when  
the officers got there, they did not find them in the prison; so they  
23 returned and reported that, while they had found the goal barred  
securely and the guards posted at the doors, yet, on opening them,  
24 they had not found any one inside. When the Officer in charge at  
the Temple and the Chief Priests heard their story, they were  
perplexed about the Apostles and as to what all this would lead to.  
25 Presently, however, some one came and told them, that the men  
whom they had put in prison were actually standing in the Temple  
26 Courts, teaching the people. On this, the Officer went with his men  
and fetched the Apostles — without using violence, for they were  
27 afraid of being stoned by the people — And then brought them  
before the Council. The High Priest demanded an explanation  
28 from them. "We gave you strict orders," he said, "not to teach in  
this Name. Yet you have actually flooded Jerusalem with your  
teaching, and you want to make us responsible for the death of this  
29 man." To this Peter and the Apostles replied: "We must obey God  
30 rather than men. The God of our ancestors raised Jesus, whom you  
put to death by hanging him on a cross. It is this Jesus whom God  
31 has exalted to his right hand, to be a Guide and a Savior, to give  
Israel repentance and forgiveness of sins. And we are witness to  
32 the truth of this, and so is the Holy Spirit — the gift of God to those  
33 who obey him." The members of the Council became frantic with

rage on hearing this, and were for putting the Apostles to death. But Gamaliel, a Pharisee, who was a Doctor of the Law and who was held in universal respect, rose in the Council, and directed that the men should be taken out of court for a little while. He then said: "Men of Israel, take care as to what you intend to do with these men. For not long ago Theudas appeared, professing to be somebody, and was joined by a body of some four hundred men. But he was killed; and all his followers scattered and dwindled away. After him, Judas the Galilean appeared at the time of the census, and induced people to follow him; Yet he, too, perished and all his followers were dispersed. And, in this present case, my advice to you is not to interfere with these men, but to let them alone, for, if their designs and their work are merely of human origin, they will come to an end; but, if they are of divine origin, you will be powerless to put an end to them — or else you may find yourselves fighting against God!" The Council followed his advice, and, calling the Apostles in, had them flogged, and then, after cautioning them not to speak in the Name of Jesus, set them free. But the Apostles left the Council, rejoicing that they had been thought worthy to suffer disgrace for that Name; and never for a single day, either in the Temple Courts or in private houses, did they cease to teach, or to tell the Good News of Jesus, the Christ.

About this time, when the number of the disciples was constantly increasing, complaints were made by the Jews of foreign birth against the native Jews, that their widows were being overlooked in the daily distribution. The Twelve, therefore, called together the general body of the disciples and said to them: "It is not well for us to see to the distribution at the tables and neglect God's Message. Therefore, Brothers, look for seven men of reputation among yourselves, wise and spiritually-minded men, and we will appoint them to attend to this matter; while we, for our part, will devote ourselves to Prayer, and to the delivery of the Message." This proposal was unanimously agreed to; and the disciples chose Stephen — a man full of faith and of the Holy Spirit — and Philip, Prochorus, Nicanor, Timon, Parmenas, and Nicholas of Antioch, a former convert to Judaism; and

they brought these men to the Apostles, who, after praying, placed  
7 their hands on them. So God's Message spread, and the number of  
the disciples continued to increase rapidly in Jerusalem, and a large  
8 body of the priests accepted the Faith. Meanwhile Stephen, divinely  
helped and strengthened, was showing great wonders and signs  
9 among the people. But some members of the Synagogue known  
as that of Libertines, Cyrenians, Alexandrians, and Visitors from  
Cilicia and Roman Asia, were roused to action and began disput-  
10 ing with Stephen; yet they were quite unable to withstand the wis-  
dom and the inspiration with which he spoke. Then they induced  
11 some men to assert that they had heard Stephen saying blasphemous  
things against Moses, and against God; and they stirred up  
12 the people, as well as the Councillors and the Teachers of the Law,  
and set upon Stephen, and arrested him, and brought him before the  
13 High Council. There they produced witnesses who gave false evi-  
dence. "This man," they said, "is incessantly saying things against  
14 this Holy Place and the Law; indeed, we have heard him declare  
that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this Place, and change the  
15 customs handed down to us by Moses." The eyes of all the mem-  
bers of the Council were riveted upon Stephen, and they saw his  
7 face looking like the face of an angel. Then the High Priest asked:  
2 "Is this true?" And, upon that, Stephen spoke as follows: "Brothers  
and Fathers, hear what I have to say. God, who manifests himself  
in the Glory, appeared to our ancestor Abraham when he was in  
Mesopotamia, and before he settled in Haran, and said to him —  
3 'Leave your country and your kindred, and come into the country  
4 that I will show you.' On this, Abraham left the country of the Chal-  
daeans and settled in Haran; and from there, after his father's death,  
God caused him to migrate into this very country, in which you are  
5 now living. God did not at that time give him any part of it, not  
even a foot of ground. But he promised to 'give him possession of it  
and his descendants after him, though at that time he had no child.  
6 God's words were these — 'Abraham's descendants shall live in a  
foreign country, where they will be enslaved and ill-treated for four  
7 hundred years. But I myself will judge the nation, to which they will



be enslaved,' God said, 'and after that they shall leave the country  
 and worship me in this place.' Then God made with Abraham the 8  
 Covenant of Circumcision; and under it Abraham became the fa-  
 ther of Isaac, and circumcised him when he was eight days old; and  
 Isaac became the father of Jacob; and Jacob of the Twelve Patriarchs.  
 The Patriarchs, out of jealousy, sold Joseph into slavery in Egypt; 9  
 but God was with him, and delivered him out of all his troubles, 10  
 and enabled him to win favor and show wisdom before Pharaoh,  
 King of Egypt, who appointed him Governor of Egypt and of his  
 whole household. Then a famine spread over the whole of Egypt 11  
 and Canaan, causing great distress, and our ancestors could find  
 no food. Hearing, however, that there was corn in Egypt, Jacob sent 12  
 our ancestors there on their first visit. In the course of their second 13  
 visit, Joseph revealed himself to his brothers, and his family became  
 known to Pharaoh. Then Joseph sent an urgent invitation to his fa- 14  
 ther Jacob and to his relations, seventy-five persons in all; and so 15  
 Jacob went down into Egypt. There he died, and our ancestors also,  
 and their bodies were removed to Shechem, and laid in the tomb 16  
 which Abraham had bought for a sum of money from the sons of  
 Hamor in Shechem. As the time drew near for the fulfillment of the 17  
 promise which God had made to Abraham, the people increased  
 largely in numbers in Egypt, until a new king, who knew nothing 18  
 of Joseph, came to the throne. This king acted deceitfully towards 19  
 our race and ill-treated our ancestors, making them abandon their  
 own infants, so that they should not be reared. It was just at this 20  
 time that Moses was born. He was an exceedingly beautiful child,  
 and for three months was brought up in his own father's house; and, 21  
 when he was abandoned, the daughter of Pharaoh found him and  
 brought him up as her own son. So Moses was educated in all the 22  
 learning of the Egyptians, and proved his ability both by his words  
 and actions. When he was in his fortieth year, he resolved to visit his 23  
 brother Israelites; and, seeing an Israelite ill-treated, he defended 24  
 him, and avenged the man, who was being wronged, by striking  
 down the Egyptian. He thought his brothers would understand that 25  
 God was using him to save them; but they failed to do so. The next 26

day he again appeared upon the scene, when some of them were fighting, and tried to make peace between them. 'Men,' he said, 'you  
 27 are brothers; how is it that you are ill-treating one another?' But the man who was ill-treating his fellow workman pushed Moses aside  
 28 saying — 'Who made you a ruler and judge over us? Do you mean to make away with me as you did yesterday with that Egyptian?'  
 29 At these words Moses took to flight, and became an exile in Midian;  
 30 and there he had two sons born to him. Forty years had passed when there appeared to him, in the Desert of Mount Sinai, an angel in a  
 31 flame of fire in a bush. When Moses saw it, he was astonished at the vision; but on his going nearer to look at it more closely, the voice  
 32 of the Lord was heard to say — 'I am the God of your ancestors, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.' Moses trembled, and did  
 33 not dare to look. Then the Lord said to him — 'Take your sandals  
 34 off your feet, for the spot where you are standing is holy ground. I have seen the oppression of my people who are in Egypt, and heard their groans, and I have come down to deliver them. Come now and  
 35 I will send you into Egypt.' This same Moses, whom they had disowned with the words — 'Who made you a ruler and a judge?' was the very man whom God sent to be both a ruler and a deliverer, under the guidance of the angel that had appeared to him in the bush.  
 36 He it was who led them out, after he had shown wonders and signs in Egypt, in the Red Sea, and in the Desert during forty years. This was the Moses who said to the people of Israel — 'God will raise up for you, from among your brothers, a Prophet, as he raised up me.'  
 38 He, too, it was who was present at the assembly in the Desert, with the angel who talked to him on Mount Sinai, and with our ancestors, and who received living truths to impart to you. Yet our ancestors refused him obedience; more than that, they rejected him, and in their  
 39 hearts turned back to Egypt, while they said to Aaron — 'Make us Gods who will lead the way for us, since, as for this Moses who has brought us out of Egypt, we do not know what has become of him.'  
 41 That was the time when they made the Calf and offered sacrifice to their idol, and held festivities in honor of their own handiwork! So God turned from them and left them to the worship of the Starry  
 42

Host, as is written in the Book of the Prophets — ‘Did you offer vic-  
 tims and sacrifices to me, O House of Israel, all those forty years in  
 the Desert? You took with you the tabernacle of Moloch and the Star 43  
 of the god Rephan — the images which you had made to worship.  
 Therefore I will exile you beyond Babylon.’ Our ancestors had the 44  
 Tabernacle of Revelation in the Desert, constructed, just as he who  
 spoke to Moses had directed him to make it, after the model which  
 he had seen. This Tabernacle, which was handed down to them, was 45  
 brought into this country by our ancestors who accompanied Joshua  
 (at the conquest of the nations that God drove out before their ad-  
 vance), and remained here until the time of David. David found fa- 46  
 vor with God, and prayed that he might find a dwelling for the God  
 of Jacob. But it was Solomon who built a House for God. Yet it is 48  
 not in buildings made by hands that the Most High dwells. As the  
 Prophet says — ‘The heavens are a throne for me, and the earth a 49  
 stool for my feet. What manner of House will you build me, says the  
 Lord, or what place is there where I may rest? Was it not my hand 50  
 that made all these things?’ O! stubborn race, heathen in heart and 51  
 ears, you are for ever resisting the Holy Spirit; your ancestors did it,  
 and you are doing it still. Which of the Prophets escaped persecu- 52  
 tion at their hands? They killed those who foretold the coming of the  
 Righteous One; of whom you, in your turn, have now become the  
 betrayers and murderers — You who received the Law as transmit- 53  
 ted by angels and yet failed to keep it.” As they listened to this, the 54  
 Council grew frantic with rage, and gnashed their teeth at Stephen.  
 He, filled as he was with the Holy Spirit, fixed his eyes intently on 55  
 the heavens, and saw the Glory of God and Jesus standing at God’s  
 right hand. “Look,” he exclaimed, “I see Heaven open and the Son 56  
 of Man standing at God’s right hand!” At this, with a loud shout, 57  
 they stopped their ears and all rushed upon him, forced him outside  
 the city, and began to stone him, the witnesses laying their clothes 58  
 at the feet of a young man named Saul. And they stoned Stephen, 59  
 while he cried to the Lord: “Lord Jesus! receive my spirit!” Falling 60  
 on his knees, he called out loudly: “Lord! do not charge them with  
 this sin;” and with these words he fell asleep. 8

## Acts 8

Saul approved of his being put to death. On that very day a great persecution broke out against the Church which was in Jerusalem; and its members, with the exception of the Apostles, were all scattered over the districts of Judea and Samaria. Some religious men buried Stephen, with loud lamentations for him. But Saul began to devastate the Church; he entered house after house, dragged out men and women alike, and threw them into prison. Now those who were scattered in different directions went from place to place proclaiming the Good News. Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and there began to preach the Christ. The people, one and all, listened attentively to what Philip told them, when they heard of, and saw, the miracles which he was working. For there were many instances of people with foul spirits, where the spirits, with loud screams, came out of them; and many who were paralyzed or lame were cured, so that there was great rejoicing throughout that city. There was staying in the city a man named Simon, who had been practicing magic there and mystifying the Samaritan people, giving himself out to be some great Being. Every one, high and low, paid attention to him. 'This man,' they used to say, 'must be that Power of God which men call "The Great Power."' And they paid attention to him because they had for a long time been mystified by his magic arts. However, when they came to believe Philip, as he told them the Good News about the Kingdom of God and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women. Even Simon believed, and after his baptism attached himself to Philip, and was in his turn mystified at seeing signs and great miracles constantly occurring. When the Apostles at Jerusalem heard that the Samaritans had welcomed God's Message, they sent Peter and John to them; and they, on their arrival, prayed that the Samaritans might receive the Holy Spirit. (As yet the Spirit had not descended upon any of them; they had only been baptized into the Faith of the Lord Jesus). Then Peter and John placed their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. When Simon saw that it was through the placing of the Apostles' hands on them that the Spirit was given,

he brought them a sum of money and said: "Give me also this 19  
 power of yours, so that, if I place my hands upon any one, he may  
 receive the Holy Spirit." "A curse upon you and upon your 20  
 money," Peter exclaimed, "for thinking that God's free gift can be  
 bought with gold! You have no share or part in our Message, for 21  
 your 'heart is not right with God.' Therefore repent of this 22  
 wickedness of yours, and pray to the Lord, that, if possible, you  
 may be forgiven for such a thought; for I see that you have fallen 23  
 into the 'bitterness of envy' and the 'fetters of sin.'" "Pray to the 24  
 Lord for me, all of you," Simon answered, "so that none of the  
 things you have spoken of may befall me." Peter and John, having 25  
 borne their testimony and delivered the Lord's Message, returned  
 to Jerusalem, telling the Good News, as they went, in many  
 Samaritan villages. Meanwhile an angel of the Lord had said to 26  
 Philip: "Set out on a journey southwards, along the road that runs  
 down from Jerusalem to Gaza." (It is now deserted). So Philip set 27  
 out on a journey; and on his way he came upon an official of high  
 rank, in the service of Candace, Queen of the Abyssinians. He was  
 her treasurer, and had been to Jerusalem to worship, and was now 28  
 on his way home, sitting in his carriage and reading the Prophet  
 Isaiah. The Spirit said to Philip: "Go up to the carriage yonder and 29  
 keep close to it." So Philip ran up, and he heard the Abyssinian 30  
 reading the Prophet Isaiah. "Do you understand what you are  
 reading?" he asked. "How can I," the other answered, "unless 31  
 some one will explain it to me?" and he invited Philip to get up  
 and sit by his side. The passage of Scripture which he was reading 32  
 was this — 'Like a sheep, he was led away to slaughter, and as a  
 lamb is dumb in the hands of its shearer, so he refrains from  
 opening his lips. In his lowly condition justice was denied him. 33  
 Who will tell the story of his generation? For his life is cut off from  
 earth.' "Now," said the Treasurer, addressing Philip, "tell me, of 34  
 whom is the Prophet speaking? Of himself, or of some one else?"  
 Then Philip began, and, taking this passage as his text, told him 35  
 the Good News about Jesus. Presently, as they were going along 36  
 the road, they came to some water, and the Treasurer exclaimed:

38 "Look! here is water; what is to prevent my being baptized?" So he  
 ordered the carriage to stop, and they went down into the water —  
 39 both Philip and the Treasurer — and Philip baptized him. But,  
 when they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught  
 Philip away, and the Treasurer saw no more of him; for he  
 40 continued his journey with a joyful heart. But Philip was found at  
 Ashdod, and, as he went on his way, he told the Good News in all  
 9 the towns through which he passed, till he came to Caesarea.

Meanwhile Saul, still breathing murderous threats against the dis-  
 2 ciples of the Lord, went to the High Priest, and asked him to give  
 him letters to the Jewish congregations at Damascus, authorizing  
 him, if he found there any supporters of the Cause, whether men or  
 3 women, to have them put in chains and brought to Jerusalem. While  
 on his journey, as he was nearing Damascus, suddenly a light from  
 4 the heavens flashed around him. He fell to the ground and heard a  
 voice saying to him — "Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?"  
 5 "Who are you, Lord?" he asked. "I am Jesus, whom you are perse-  
 6 cuting," the voice answered; "Yet stand up and go into the city, and  
 7 you will be told what you must do." The men traveling with Saul  
 were meanwhile standing speechless; they heard the sound of the  
 8 voice, but saw no one. When Saul got up from the ground, though  
 his eyes were open, he could see nothing. So his men led him by the  
 9 hand, and brought him into Damascus; and for three days he was  
 10 unable to see, and took nothing either to eat or to drink. Now there  
 was at Damascus a disciple named Ananias, to whom, in a vision,  
 11 the Lord said: "Ananias." "Yes, Lord," he answered. "Go at once,"  
 said the Lord, "to the 'Straight Street', and ask at Judas's house for  
 12 a man named Saul, from Tarsus. He is at this moment praying, and  
 he has seen, in a vision, a man named Ananias coming in and plac-  
 13 ing his hands on him, so that he may recover his sight." "Lord," ex-  
 claimed Ananias, "I have heard from many people about this man —  
 14 how much harm he has done at Jerusalem to your People there. And,  
 here, too, he holds authority from the Chief Priests to put in chains  
 15 all those who invoke your Name." But the Lord said to him: "Go,  
 for this man is my chosen instrument to uphold my Name before

the Gentiles and their kings, and the people of Israel. I will myself  
 show him all that he has to suffer for my Name." So Ananias went,  
 entered the house, and, placing his hands on Saul, said: "Saul, my  
 Brother, I have been sent by the Lord — by Jesus, who appeared to  
 you on your way here — so that you may recover your sight and be  
 filled with the Holy Spirit." Instantly it seemed as if a film fell from  
 Saul's eyes, and his sight was restored. Then he got up and was bap-  
 tized, and, after he had taken food, he felt his strength return. Saul  
 stayed for some days with the disciples who were at Damascus, and  
 at once began in the Synagogues to proclaim Jesus as the Son of God.  
 All who heard him were amazed. "Is not this," they asked, "the man  
 who worked havoc in Jerusalem among those that invoke this Name,  
 and who had also come here for the express purpose of having such  
 persons put in chains and taken before the Chief Priests?" Saul's in-  
 fluence, however, kept steadily increasing, and he confounded the  
 Jews who lived in Damascus by the proofs that he gave that Jesus  
 was the Christ. After some time the Jews laid a plot to kill Saul, but it  
 became known to him. They even watched the gates day and night,  
 to kill him; but his disciples let him down by night through an open-  
 ing in the wall, lowering him in a basket. On his arrival in Jerusalem,  
 Saul attempted to join the disciples, but they were all afraid of him,  
 as they did not believe that he was really a disciple. Barnabas, how-  
 ever, taking him by the hand, brought him to the Apostles, and told  
 them the whole story of how Saul on his journey had seen the Lord,  
 and how the Lord had talked to him, and how in Damascus he had  
 spoken out fearlessly in the Name of Jesus. After that, Saul remained  
 in Jerusalem, in close intercourse with the Apostles; and he spoke  
 fearlessly in the Name of the Lord, talking and arguing with the Jews  
 of foreign birth, who, however, made attempts to kill him. But, when  
 the Brethren found this out, they took him down to Caesarea, and  
 sent him on his way to Tarsus. And so it came about that the Church,  
 throughout Judea, Galilee, and Samaria, enjoyed peace and became  
 firmly established; and, ordering its life by reverence for the Lord  
 and the help of the Holy Spirit, it increased in numbers. Peter, while  
 traveling from place to place throughout the country, went down

33 to visit the People of Christ living at Lydda. There he found a man  
 34 named Aeneas, who had been bed-ridden for eight years with paral-  
 35 ysis. "Aeneas," Peter said to him, "Jesus Christ cures you. Get up,  
 and make your bed." Aeneas got up at once; and all the inhabitants  
 of Lydda and of the Plain of Sharon saw him, and came over to the  
 36 Lord's side. At Jaffa there lived a disciple whose name was Tabitha,  
 which is in Greek 'Dorcas' — a Gazelle. Her life was spent in doing  
 37 kind and charitable actions. Just at that time she was taken ill, and  
 died; and they had washed her body and laid it out in an upstairs  
 38 room. Jaffa was near Lydda, and the disciples, having heard that Pe-  
 ter was at Lydda, sent two men with the request that he would come  
 39 on to them without delay. Peter returned with them at once. On his  
 arrival, he was taken upstairs, and all the widows came round him  
 in tears, showing the coats and other clothing which Dorcas had  
 40 made while she was among them. But Peter sent everybody out of  
 the room, and knelt down and prayed. Then, turning to the body,  
 he said: "Tabitha! stand up." She opened her eyes, and, seeing Peter,  
 41 sat up. Giving her his hand, Peter raised her up, and, calling in the  
 widows and others of Christ's People, presented her to them alive.  
 42 This became known all through Jaffa, and numbers of People came  
 43 to believe in the Lord. And Peter stayed some days at Jaffa with a  
 10 tanner named Simon.

There was then in Caesarea a man named Cornelius, a Captain in  
 2 the regiment known as the 'Italian Regiment,' A religious man and  
 one who revered God, with all his household. He was liberal  
 3 in his charities to the people, and prayed to God constantly. One  
 afternoon, about three o'clock, he distinctly saw in a vision an an-  
 4 gel from God come to him, and call him by name. Cornelius fixed  
 his eyes on him and, in great alarm, said: "What is it, Lord?" "Your  
 prayers and your charities," the angel answered, "have been an ac-  
 5 ceptable offering to God. And now, send messengers to Jaffa and  
 6 fetch a man called Simon, who is also known as Peter. He is lodging  
 7 with a tanner named Simon, who has a house near the sea." When  
 the angel, who had spoken to him, had gone, Cornelius called two



menservants and a religious soldier, who was one of his constant attendants, and, after telling them the whole story, sent them to Jaffa. 8  
 On the next day, while these men were on their way, just as they were 9  
 nearing the town, Peter went up on the housetop about mid-day to 10  
 pray. He became hungry and wanted something to eat; but while 11  
 it was being prepared, he fell into a trance, and saw that the heav- 12  
 ens were open, and that something like a great sail was descending, 13  
 let down by its four corners towards the earth. In it were all kinds of 14  
 quadrupeds, reptiles, and birds. Then he was aware of a voice which 15  
 said — “Stand up, Peter, kill something, and eat.” “No, Lord, I can- 16  
 not,” answered Peter, “for I have never eaten anything ‘defiled’ and 17  
 ‘unclean’.” Again he was aware of a voice which said — “What God 18  
 has pronounced ‘clean’, do not regard as ‘defiled’.” This happened 19  
 three times, and then suddenly it was all taken up into the heavens. 20  
 While Peter was still perplexed as to the meaning of the vision that 21  
 he had seen, the men sent by Cornelius, having enquired the way to 22  
 Simon’s house, came up to the gate, and called out and asked if the 23  
 Simon, who was also known as Peter, was lodging there. Peter was 24  
 still pondering over the vision, when the Spirit said to him: “There 25  
 are two men looking for you at this moment. Go down at once and 26  
 do not hesitate to go with them, for I have sent them.” Peter went 27  
 down to the men and said: “I am the man for whom you are looking.  
 What is your reason for coming?” The men replied: “Our captain,  
 Cornelius, a pious man who reverences God and is well spoken of  
 by the whole Jewish nation, has been instructed by a holy angel to  
 send for you to his house, and to listen to what you have to say.”  
 Upon this Peter invited them in and entertained them. The next day  
 he lost no time in setting out with them, accompanied by some of  
 the Brethren from Jaffa; and the day following he entered Caesarea.  
 Cornelius was expecting them, and had invited his relations and  
 intimate friends to meet them. So, when Peter entered the city, Cor-  
 nelius met him, and, throwing himself at Peter’s feet, bowed to the  
 ground. Peter, however, lifted him up, saying as he did so: “Stand  
 up, I am only a man like yourself.” Talking with him as he went, Pe-  
 ter entered the house, where he found a large gathering of people,

28 to whom he said: "You are doubtless aware that it is forbidden for a  
 Jew to be intimate with a foreigner, or even to enter his house; and  
 yet God has shown me that I ought not to call any man 'defiled' or  
 29 'unclean.' That was why I came, when I was sent for, without raising  
 30 any objection. And now I ask your reason for sending for me." "Just  
 three days ago this very hour," Cornelius said, "I was in my house,  
 saying the Afternoon Prayers, when a man in dazzling clothing sud-  
 31 denly stood before me. 'Cornelius,' he said, 'your prayer has been  
 32 heard, and your charities have been accepted, by God. Therefore  
 send to Jaffa, and invite the Simon, who is also known as Peter, to  
 come here. He is lodging in the house of Simon the tanner, near the  
 33 sea.' Accordingly I sent to you at once, and you have been so good  
 as to come. And now we are all here in the presence of God, to lis-  
 34 ten to all that you have been instructed by the Lord to say." Then  
 Peter began. "I see, beyond all doubt," he said, "that 'God does not  
 35 show partiality,' But that in every nation he who reverences him and  
 36 does what is right is acceptable to him. God has sent his Message to  
 the Israelites and told them, through Jesus Christ, the Good News  
 37 of peace — and Jesus is Lord of all! You yourselves know the story  
 which spread through all Judea, how, beginning from Galilee, after  
 38 the baptism which John proclaimed — The story, I mean, of Jesus  
 of Nazareth, and how God consecrated him his Christ by enduing  
 him with the Holy Spirit and with power; and how he went about  
 doing good and curing all who were under the power of the Devil,  
 39 because God was with him. We are ourselves, too, witnesses to all  
 that he did in Judea and in Jerusalem; yet they put him to death  
 40 by hanging him on a cross! This Jesus God raised on the third day,  
 41 and enabled him to appear, not indeed to every one, but to witnesses  
 chosen beforehand by God — to us, who ate and drank with him af-  
 42 ter his resurrection from the dead. Further, God charged us to pro-  
 claim to the people, and solemnly affirm, that it is Jesus who has  
 43 been appointed by God Judge of the living and the dead. To him  
 it is that all the Prophets bear witness, when they say that every  
 one who believes in him receives through his Name forgiveness of  
 44 sins." Before Peter had finished saying these words, the Holy Spirit

fell on all who were listening to the Message. Those converts from 45  
 Judaism, who had come with Peter, were amazed that the gift of 46  
 the Holy Spirit had been bestowed even upon the Gentiles; for they 47  
 heard them speaking with ‘tongues’ and extolling God. At this Pe- 48  
 ter asked: “Can any one refuse the water for the baptism of these 49  
 people, now that they have received the Holy Spirit as we did our- 50  
 selves?” And he directed that they should be baptized in the Faith 51  
 of Jesus Christ; after which they asked him to stay there a few days 52  
 longer. 53

The Apostles and the Brethren throughout Judea heard that even 54  
 the Gentiles had welcomed God’s Message. But, when Peter went 55  
 up to Jerusalem, those who were converts from Judaism began to 56  
 attack him, on the ground that he had visited people who were not 57  
 circumcised, and had taken meals with them. So Peter began to re- 58  
 late the facts to them as they had occurred. “I was in the town of 59  
 Jaffa,” he said, “and was praying; and, while in a trance, I saw a 60  
 vision. There was something like a great sail descending, let down 61  
 by its four corners out of the heavens; and it came right down to 62  
 me. Looking intently at it, I began to distinguish quadrupeds, wild 63  
 beasts, reptiles, and birds; and I also heard a voice saying to me — 64  
 ‘Stand up, Peter, kill something and eat.’ ‘No, Lord, I cannot,’ I an- 65  
 swered, ‘for nothing ‘defiled’ or ‘unclean’ has ever passed my lips.’ 66  
 Then a second time there came a voice from the heavens. “What 67  
 God has pronounced ‘clean,’” it said, “you must not call ‘defiled.’” 68  
 This happened three times, and then all was drawn up again into 69  
 the heavens. At that moment three men, who had been sent from 70  
 Caesarea to see me, came up to the house in which we were. The 71  
 Spirit told me to go with them without hesitation. These six Broth- 72  
 ers also went with me. And, when we came into the man’s house, 73  
 he told us how he had seen the angel standing in his house, and 74  
 how the angel had said to him — ‘Send to Jaffa and fetch the Simon, 75  
 who is also known as Peter; for he will tell you truths, which will 76  
 prove the means of Salvation to you and all your household.’ I had 77  
 but just begun to speak,” continued Peter, “when the Holy Spirit fell 78  
 on them, exactly as on us at the first; and I recalled the saying of the 79

## Acts 12

Master — ‘John baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with  
17 the Holy Spirit.’ Since then, God had given them the very same gift  
as he gave us when we became believers in Jesus Christ the Master  
18 — who was I that I could thwart God?” On hearing this statement,  
they said no more, but broke out into praise of God. “So even to the  
Gentiles,” they exclaimed, “God has granted the repentance which  
19 leads to Life!” Now those who had been scattered in different di-  
rections, in consequence of the persecution that followed upon the  
death of Stephen, went as far as Phoenicia, Cyprus, and Antioch,  
20 telling the Message — but only to Jews. Some of them, however, who  
were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, on coming to Antioch, addressed  
themselves also to the Jews of foreign birth, telling them the Good  
21 News about that Lord Jesus. The power of the Lord was with them,  
so that a great number who had learned to believe came over to the  
22 Lord’s side. The news about them reached the ears of the Church at  
23 Jerusalem, and they sent Barnabas to Antioch. On coming there he  
saw to his great joy these tokens of the loving-kindness of God, and  
encouraged them all to make up their minds to be faithful to the  
24 Lord — For Barnabas was a good man and full of the Holy Spirit  
and of faith — and a large number of people took their stand on the  
25 Lord’s side. Afterwards Barnabas left for Tarsus to look for Saul;  
26 and, when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. And so  
it came about that, for a whole year, they attended the meetings of  
the Church there, and taught a large number of people; and it was  
27 in Antioch that the disciples were first called ‘Christians.’ During  
28 this time, some Prophets came to Antioch from Jerusalem. One of  
them, named Agabus, came forward and, under the influence of the  
Spirit, foretold a great famine that was to spread over all the world  
29 — a famine which occurred in the reign of Claudius. So the disci-  
ples, without exception, determined, in proportion to their means,  
30 to send something to help the Brethren living in Judea. And this  
they did, sending it to the Officers of the Church by the hands of  
12 Barnabas and Saul.

It was at that time that King Herod began to ill-treat some of the  
 members of the Church. He had James, the brother of John, be- 2  
 headed; and, when he saw that the Jews were pleased with this, he 3  
 proceeded to arrest Peter also. (This was during the Festival of the  
 Unleavened Bread.) After seizing Peter, Herod put him in prison, 4  
 and entrusted him to the keeping of four Guards of four soldiers  
 each, intending, after the Passover, to bring him up before the peo-  
 ple. So Peter was kept in prison, but meanwhile the prayers of the 5  
 Church were being earnestly offered to God on his behalf. Just when 6  
 Herod was intending to bring him before the people, on that very  
 night Peter was asleep between two soldiers, chained to them both,  
 while there were sentries in front of the door, guarding the prison.  
 Suddenly an angel of the Lord stood by him, and a light shone in 7  
 the cell. The angel struck Peter on the side, and roused him with  
 the words: "Get up quickly." The chains dropped from his wrists, 8  
 and then the angel said: "Put on your girdle and sandals." When  
 Peter had done so, the angel added: "Throw your cloak round you  
 and follow me." Peter followed him out, not knowing that what was 9  
 happening under the angel's guidance was real, but thinking that  
 he was seeing a vision. Passing the first Guard, and then the sec- 10  
 ond, they came to the iron gate leading into the city, which opened  
 to them of itself; and, when they had passed through that, and had  
 walked along one street, all at once the angel left him. Then Peter 11  
 came to himself and said: "Now I know beyond all doubt that the  
 Lord has sent his angel, and has rescued me from Herod's hands  
 and from all that the Jewish people have been expecting." As soon 12  
 as he realized what had happened, he went to the house of Mary,  
 the mother of John who was also known as Mark, where a number  
 of people were gathered together, praying. On his knocking at the 13  
 door in the gate, a maidservant, named Rhoda, came to answer it.  
 She recognized Peter's voice, but in her joy left the gate unopened, 14  
 and ran in, and told them that Peter was standing outside. "You are 15  
 mad!" they exclaimed. But, when she persisted that it was so, they  
 said: "It must be his spirit!" Meanwhile Peter went on knocking, 16  
 and, when they opened the gate and saw him, they were amazed.

17 Peter signed to them with his hand to be silent, and then told them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison, adding: "Tell James and the Brethren all this." Then he left the house, and went away to another place. In the morning there was a great stir among the soldiers — what could have become of Peter! And, when Herod had made further search for him and failed to find him, he closely questioned the Guard, and ordered them away to execution. Then he went down from Judea to stay at Caesarea. It happened that Herod was deeply offended with the people of Tyre and Sidon, but they went in a body to him, and, having succeeded in winning over Blas-tus, the Chamberlain, they begged Herod for a reconciliation, because their country was dependent on the King's for its food-supply.

21 On an appointed day Herod, wearing his state-robcs, seated himself on his throne, and delivered an oration. The people kept shouting: "It is the voice of God, and not of a man!" Instantly an angel of the Lord struck him, because he did not give God the glory; and he was attacked with worms, and died. Meanwhile the Lord's Message kept extending, and spreading far and wide. When Barnabas and Saul had carried out their mission, they returned to Jerusalem, and took

13 with them John, who was also known as Mark.

Among the members of the Church at Antioch there were several Prophets and Teachers — Barnabas, Simeon who was known by the name of 'Black', Lucius of Cyrene, Manaen, foster-brother of Prince Herod, and Saul. While they were engaged in the worship of the Lord and were fasting, the Holy Spirit said: "Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul, for the work to which I have called them."

2 Accordingly, after fasting and prayer, they placed their hands on them and dismissed them. Barnabas and Saul, sent on this mission, as they were, by the Holy Spirit, went down to Seleucia, and from there sailed to Cyprus. On reaching Salamis, they began to tell the Message of God in the Jewish Synagogues; and they had John with them as an assistant. After passing through the whole island, they reached Paphos, where they found an astrologer who pretended to be a Prophet — a Jew by birth, whose name was Barjoshua. He was at the court of the Governor, Sergius Paulus, a man of intelligence,

who sent for Barnabas and Saul and asked to be told God's Message.  
 But Elymas, the astrologer (for that is the meaning of the word), op- 8  
 posed them, eager to divert the Governor's attention from the Faith.  
 However, Saul (who is the same as Paul), full of the Holy Spirit, fixed 9  
 his eyes on him and said: "You incarnation of deceit and all fraud! 10  
 You son of the Devil! You opponent of all that is good! Will you never  
 cease to divert 'the straight paths of the Lord'? Listen! The hand of 11  
 the Lord is upon you even now, and you will be blind for a time and  
 unable to see the sun." Immediately a mist and darkness fell upon 12  
 him, and he went feeling about for some one to guide him. When the  
 Governor saw what had happened, he became a believer in Christ, 13  
 being greatly impressed by the teaching about the Lord. After this,  
 Paul and his companions set sail from Paphos and went to Perga 14  
 in Pamphylia, where John left them and returned to Jerusalem. The  
 others went on from Perga and arrived at Antioch in Pisidia. There  
 they went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath and took their seats.  
 After the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the President of the 15  
 Synagogue sent them this message — "Brothers, if you have any  
 helpful words to address to the people, now is the time to speak."  
 So Paul rose and, motioning with his hand, spoke as follows: "Men 16  
 of Israel and all here who reverence God, hear what I have to say.  
 The God of this people Israel chose our ancestors, and during their 17  
 stay in Egypt increased the prosperity of the people, and then 'with  
 uplifted arm brought them out from that land.' For about forty years 18  
 'he bore with them in the Desert'; then, after destroying seven hea- 19  
 then nations in Canaan, he allotted their land to this people — For 20  
 about four hundred and fifty years. In later times he gave them  
 Judges, of whom the Prophet Samuel was the last. And, when they 21  
 demanded a king, God gave them Saul the son of Kish, a man of the  
 tribe of Benjamin, who reigned for forty years. After removing him, 22  
 he raised David to the throne, and bore this testimony to him — 'In  
 David, the son of Jesse, I have found a man after my own heart, who  
 will carry out all my purposes.' It was from this man's descendants 23  
 that God, in accordance with his promise, gave Israel a Savior — Je- 24  
 sus; John having first proclaimed, before the appearance of Jesus, a

25 baptism upon repentance for all the people of Israel. As John was drawing towards the end of his career, he said what do you suppose that I am? I am not the Christ. But there is "One Coming" after me, whose very sandal I am not worthy to untie.' Brothers, descendants of Abraham, and all those among you who reverence God, it was to us that the Message of this Salvation was sent. The people of Jerusalem and their leading men, failing to recognize Jesus, and not understanding the utterances of the Prophets that are read every Sabbath, fulfilled them by condemning him. They found no ground at all for putting him to death, and yet demanded his execution from Pilate; and, after carrying out everything written about him, they took Jesus down from the cross, and laid him in a tomb. But God raised him from the dead; and he appeared for many days to those who had gone up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, and who are now witnesses for him to the people. We also have good news to tell you, about the promise made to our ancestors — That our children have had this promise completely fulfilled to them by God, by his raising Jesus. That is just what is said in the second Psalm — 'Thou art my Son; this day I have become thy Father.' As to his raising Jesus from the dead, never again to return to corruption, this is what is said — 'I will give to you the sacred promises made to David;' And, therefore, in another Psalm it is said — 'Thou wilt not give up the Holy One to undergo corruption.' David, after obediently doing God's will in his own time, 'fell asleep and was laid by the side of his ancestors, and did undergo corruption; but Jesus, whom God raised from the dead, did not undergo corruption. I would, therefore, have you know, brothers, that through Jesus forgiveness of sins is being proclaimed to you, and that, in union with him, every one who believes in him is absolved from every sin from which under the Law of Moses you could not be absolved. Beware, therefore, that what is said in the Prophets does not come true of you — 'Look, you despisers, and wonder, and perish; for I am doing a deed in your days — a deed which, though told you in full, you will never believe.' As Paul and Barnabas were leaving the Synagogue, the people begged for a repetition of this teaching on the next Sabbath.



After the congregation had dispersed, many of the Jews, and of the converts who joined in their worship, followed Paul and Barnabas, who talked with them and urged them to continue to rely upon the loving-kindness of God. On the following Sabbath, almost all the city gathered to hear God's Message. But the sight of the crowds of people filled the minds of the Jews with jealousy, and they kept contradicting Paul's statements in violent language. Then Paul and Barnabas spoke out fearlessly, and said: "It was necessary that the Message of God should be told to you first; but, since you reject it and reckon yourselves not worthy of the Immortal Life — we turn to the Gentiles! For this is the Lord's command to us — 'I have destined thee for a Light to the Gentiles, a means of Salvation to the ends of the earth'." On hearing this, the Gentiles were glad and extolled God's Message; and all those who had been enrolled for Immortal Life became believers in Christ; and the Lord's Message was carried throughout that district. But the Jews incited the women of position who worshiped with them, and the leading men of the town, and started a persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and drove them out of their neighborhood. They, however, shook the dust off their feet in protest, and went to Iconium, leaving the disciples full of joy and of the Holy Spirit. **14**

The same thing occurred in Iconium, where Paul and Barnabas went into the Jewish Synagogue, and spoke in such a way that a great number of both Jews and Greeks believed in Christ. But the Jews who refused to believe stirred up the Gentiles, and poisoned their minds against the Brethren. Therefore Paul and Barnabas spent a long time there, and spoke out fearlessly, relying upon the Lord, who confirmed the Message of his Love by permitting signs and wonders to take place at their hands. But the townspeople were divided, some siding with the Jews, some with the Apostles; and, when there was an attempt on the part of both Gentiles and Jews, with their leading men, to resort to violence and to stone them, the Apostles heard of it, and took refuge in Lystra and Derbe, towns in Lycaonia, and in the district round, and there they continued to tell the Good News. In the streets of Lystra there used to sit a man who

9 had no power in his feet; he had been lame from his birth, and had  
 never walked. This man was listening to Paul speaking, when Paul,  
 fixing his eyes on him, and seeing that he had the faith to be healed,  
 10 said loudly: "Stand upright on your feet." The man leaped up, and  
 11 began walking about, and the crowd, seeing what Paul had done,  
 called out in the Lycaonian language: "The Gods have made them-  
 12 selves like men and have come down to us." So they called Barn-  
 abas 'Zeus,' and Paul 'Hermes,' because he took the lead in speak-  
 13 ing; and the priest of Zeus-beyond-the-Walls, accompanied by the  
 crowd, brought bullocks and garlands to the gates, with the inten-  
 14 tion of offering sacrifices. But, when the Apostles Barnabas and Paul  
 heard of it, they tore their clothes and rushed out into the crowd.  
 15 "Friends, why are you doing this?" they shouted. "We are only men  
 like yourselves, and we have come with the Good News that you  
 should turn away from these follies to a living God, 'who made the  
 16 heavens, the earth, the sea, and everything that is in them.' In by-  
 17 gone times he permitted all the nations to go their own ways. Yet he  
 has not failed to give you, in the good he does, some revelation of  
 himself — sending you from heaven rain and fruitful seasons, and  
 18 gladdening your hearts with plenty and good cheer." Even with this  
 appeal they could hardly restrain the people from offering sacrifice  
 19 to them. Presently, however, there came some Jews from Antioch,  
 and Iconium who, after they had won over the people, stoned Paul,  
 20 and dragged him out of the town, thinking him to be dead. But,  
 when the disciples had gathered round him, he got up and went  
 back into the town; the next day he went with Barnabas to Derbe.  
 21 After telling the Good News throughout that town, and making a  
 number of converts, they returned to Lystra, Iconium, and Antioch,  
 22 reassuring the minds of the disciples, urging them to remain true  
 to the Faith, and showing that it is only through many troubles that  
 23 we can enter the Kingdom of God. They also appointed Officers for  
 them in every Church, and, after prayer and fasting, commended  
 24 them to the Lord in whom they had learned to believe. Paul and  
 25 Barnabas then went through Pisidia, and came into Pamphylia, and,  
 26 after telling the Message at Perga, went down to Attaleia. From there

they sailed to Antioch — the place where they had been committed to the gracious care of God for the work which they had now finished. After their arrival, they gathered the Church together, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do, and especially how he had opened to the Gentiles the door of faith; and at Antioch they stayed with the disciples for a considerable time. 15

But certain persons came down from Judea, and began to teach the Brethren that, unless they were circumcised, in accordance with the custom enjoined by Moses, they could not be saved. This gave rise to a serious dispute, and much discussion, between Paul and Barnabas and these men, and it was therefore settled that Paul and Barnabas and others of their number should go up to Jerusalem, to consult the Apostles and Officers of the Church about the matter under discussion. The Church, therefore, sent them on their journey, and they made their way through Phoenicia and Samaria, telling the story of the conversion of the Gentiles, to the great joy of all the Brethren. On their arrival at Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the Church, as well as by the Apostles and the Officers, and gave an account of all that God had helped them to do. Some of the Pharisees' party, however, who had become believers in Christ, came forward and declared that they were bound to circumcise converts and to direct them to observe the Law of Moses. The Apostles and the Officers of the Church held a meeting to consider this question. After much discussion, Peter rose and said: "You, my Brothers, know well that long ago God singled me out — that through my lips the Gentiles should hear the Message of the Good News, and become believers in Christ. Now God, who reads all hearts, declared his acceptance of the Gentiles, by giving them the Holy Spirit, just as he did to us. He made no distinction between them and us, when he purified their hearts by their faith. Why, then, do you now provoke God, by putting on the necks of these disciples a yoke which neither our ancestors nor we were able to bear? No, it is through the loving-kindness of the Lord Jesus that we, just as they do, believe that we have been saved."

12 Every voice in the assembly was hushed, as they listened to Barnabas and Paul, while they gave an account of all the signs and wonders which God had shown among the Gentiles through them. After they had finished speaking, James addressed the Council. “Brothers,” he began, “hear what I have to say. Simon has described the manner in which God first visited the Gentiles, in order to take from among them a people to bear his Name. And that is in harmony with the words of the Prophets, where they say — “‘After this I will return; and I will rebuild the House of David which has fallen — its very ruins I will rebuild, and will set it up once more; that so the rest of mankind may earnestly seek the Lord — even all the Gentiles on whom my Name has been bestowed.’ Says the Lord, as he does these things, foreknown from of old.’ In my judgment, therefore, we should not add to the difficulties of those Gentiles who are turning to God, but we should write to them to abstain from food that has been polluted by being sacrificed to idols, from impurity, from eating the flesh of strangled animals, and from blood. For in every town, for generations past, there have been those who preach Moses, read as he is in the Synagogues every Sabbath.” It was then decided by the Apostles and the Officers, with the assent of the whole Church, to choose some of their number, and send them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas. Those chosen were Judas (called Barsabas) and Silas, who were leading men among the Brethren. They were bearers of the following letter — ‘The Apostles, and the Brothers who are the Officers of the Church, send their greetings to the Brethren of Gentile birth in Antioch, Syria, and Cilicia. As we had heard that some of our number had upset you by their assertions, and unsettled your minds — without instructions from us — We met and decided to choose certain men and send them to you with our dear brothers Barnabas and Paul, who have sacrificed themselves for the Name of our Lord, Jesus Christ. We are accordingly sending Judas and Silas, and they will tell you by word of mouth what we are now writing. We have, therefore, decided, under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, to lay no further burden upon you

beyond these necessary conditions — That you abstain from food offered to idols, from blood, from eating the flesh of strangled animals, and from impurity. If you guard yourselves against such things, it will be well with you. Farewell.’ So the bearers of this letter were sent on their way, and went down to Antioch. There they called a meeting of all the brethren, and delivered the letter, the reading of which caused great rejoicing by its encouraging contents. Judas and Silas, who were themselves Prophets, further encouraged the Brethren by many an address, and strengthened their faith. After some stay, they were dismissed with kind farewells from the Brethren, and returned to those who had sent them. Paul and Barnabas, however, remained in Antioch, where they taught and, with the help of many others, told the Good News of the Lord’s Message. Some time after this, Paul said to Barnabas: “Let us go back and visit the Brethren in every town in which we have told the Lord’s Message, and see how they are prospering.” Barnabas wished to take with them John, whose other name was Mark; but Paul felt that they ought not to take with them the man who had deserted them in Pamphylia, and had not gone on with them to their work. This caused such unpleasant feeling between them that they parted, Barnabas taking Mark and sailing for Cyprus, while Paul chose Silas for his companion and, after he had been committed by the Brethren to the gracious care of the Lord, started on his journey and went through Syria and Cilicia, strengthening the Churches in the faith. 16

Among other places Paul went to Derbe and Lystra. At the latter place they found a disciple, named Timothy, whose mother was a Jewess who had become a believer in Christ, while his father was a Greek, and who was well spoken of by the Brethren in Lystra and Iconium. Wishing to take this man with him on his journey, Paul caused him to be circumcised on account of the Jews in that neighborhood, for they all knew that his father had been a Greek. As they traveled from town to town, they gave the Brethren the decisions which had been reached by the Apostles and Officers of the Church at Jerusalem, for them to observe. So the Churches grew stronger in the Faith, and increased in numbers from day to day. They next went

through the Phrygian district of Galatia, but were restrained by the  
7 Holy Spirit from delivering the Message in Roman Asia. When they  
reached the borders of Mysia, they attempted to go into Bithynia,  
8 but the Spirit of Jesus did not permit them. Passing through Mysia,  
9 they went down to Troas; and there one night Paul saw a vision. A  
Macedonian was standing and appealing to him — ‘Come over to  
10 Macedonia and help us.’ So, immediately after Paul had seen the  
vision, we looked for an opportunity to cross over to Macedonia,  
concluding that God had summoned us to tell the Good News to  
11 the people there. Accordingly we set sail from Troas, and ran be-  
12 fore the wind to Samothrace, reaching Neapolis the next day. From  
there we made our way to Philippi, which is the principal city of  
that part of Macedonia, and also a Roman Settlement. In that city  
13 we spent several days. On the Sabbath we went outside the gate to  
the river-side, where we supposed there would be a Place of Prayer;  
and we sat down and talked to the women who were gathered there.  
14 Among them was a woman, named Lydia, belonging to Thyatira, a  
dealer in purple cloth, who was accustomed to join in the worship  
of God. The Lord touched this woman’s heart, so that she gave at-  
15 tention to the Message delivered by Paul, and, when she and her  
household had been baptized, she urged us to become her guests.  
“Since you have shown your conviction,” she said, “that I really am a  
believer in the Lord, come and stay in my house.” And she insisted  
16 on our doing so. One day, as we were on our way to the Place of  
Prayer, we were met by a girl possessed by a divining spirit, who  
17 made large profits for her masters by fortune-telling. This girl fol-  
lowed Paul and the rest of us, calling: “These men are servants of  
the most high God, and they are bringing you news of a way to Sal-  
18 vation.” She had been doing this for several days, when Paul, much  
vexed, turned and said to the spirit within her: “In the Name of Jesus  
Christ I command you to leave her.” That very moment the spirit left  
19 her. When her masters saw that there was no hope of further profit  
from her, they seized Paul and Silas, dragged them into the pub-  
20 lic square to the authorities, and took them before the Magistrates.

“These men are causing a great disturbance in our town,” they com- 21  
 plained; “They are Jews, and they are teaching customs which it is 22  
 not right for us, as Romans, to sanction or adopt.” On this the mob  
 rose as one man against them, and the Magistrates stripped them of 23  
 their clothing and ordered them to be beaten with rods. After beat-  
 ing them severely, the Magistrates put them in prison, with orders 24  
 to the Governor of the Jail to keep them in safe custody. On receiving  
 so strict an order, the Governor put them into the inner cell, and se- 25  
 cured their feet in the stocks. About midnight, while Paul and Silas  
 were praying and singing hymns to God, and while the prisoners 26  
 were listening to them, suddenly there was an earthquake of such  
 violence that the Jail was shaken to its foundations; all the doors 27  
 flew open, and all the prisoners’ chains were loosened. Roused from  
 his sleep, and seeing the prison doors open, the Governor drew his  
 sword intending to kill himself, in the belief that the prisoners had 28  
 escaped. But Paul called out loudly: “Do not harm yourself; we are 29  
 all here.” Calling for a light, the Governor rushed in, and flung him-  
 self trembling at the feet of Paul and Silas. Then he led them out, 30  
 and said: “What must I do to be saved?” “Believe in Jesus, our Lord,” 31  
 they replied, “and you shall be saved, you and your household too.”  
 Then they spoke to him of God’s Message, and to all his household 32  
 as well. And that very hour of the night he took them and washed 33  
 their wounds, and he himself and every one belonging to him were  
 baptized without delay. Afterwards he took them up to his house 34  
 and set before them something to eat, rejoicing that he, with all his  
 household, had come to believe in God. In the morning the Mag- 35  
 istrates sent the police with an order for the men to be discharged.  
 The Governor of the Jail told Paul of his instructions. “The Magis- 36  
 trates have sent an order for your discharge,” he said, “so you had  
 better leave the place at once and go quietly away.” But Paul’s an- 37  
 swer to them was: “They have flogged us in public without trial,  
 though we are Roman citizens, and they have put us in prison, and  
 now they are for sending us out secretly! No, indeed! Let them come 38  
 and take us out themselves.” The police reported his words to the

Magistrates, who, on hearing that Paul and Silas were Roman citizens, were alarmed, and went to the prison, and did their best to conciliate them. Then they took them out, and begged them to leave the city. When Paul and Silas left the prison, they went to Lydia's house, and, after they had seen the Brethren, and encouraged them, they left the place.

After passing through Amphipolis and Apollonia, Paul and Silas came to Thessalonica. Here the Jews had a Synagogue; and, following his usual custom, Paul joined them, and for three Sabbaths addressed them, drawing his arguments from the Scriptures. He laid before them and explained that the Christ must undergo suffering and rise from the dead; and "It is this man," he declared, "who is the Christ — this Jesus about whom I am telling you." Some of the people were convinced, and threw in their lot with Paul and Silas, as did also a large body of Greeks who were accustomed to join in the Jewish services, and a great number of women belonging to the leading families. But the Jews, becoming jealous, engaged some worthless fellows from the streets, and, getting a mob together, kept the city in an uproar. They attacked Jason's house, with the intention of bringing Paul and Silas before the Popular Assembly; and, not finding them there, they proceeded to drag Jason and some of the Brethren before the City Magistrates, shouting out: "These men, who have turned the world upside down, have now come here, and have been harbored by Jason! They say that some one else is king — a man called Jesus!" On hearing this, the people and the City Magistrates were much concerned; and, before letting them go, they took bail from Jason and the others. That very night the Brethren sent Paul and Silas off to Beroea; and on reaching that place, they went to the Jewish Synagogue. These Jews of Beroea were better disposed than those in Thessalonica, for they welcomed the Message with great readiness, and daily examined the Scriptures to see if what was said was true. As a consequence, many of them became believers in Christ, besides a considerable number of Greek women of position, and of men also. But, when the Jews of Thessalonica found out that God's Message had been delivered by Paul at Beroea,



they came there too, exciting and disturbing the minds of the people. Immediately upon that, the Brethren sent Paul off on his way to the sea coast, but both Silas and Timothy stayed behind in Beroea. The friends who escorted Paul took him as far as Athens, and, after receiving a message for Silas and Timothy to join him as quickly as possible, they started on their return. While Paul was waiting for them at Athens, his heart was stirred at seeing the whole city full of idols. So he argued in the Synagogue with the Jews and with those who joined in their worship, as well as daily in the public Square with those who happened to be there. Among others, some Epicurean and Stoic Philosophers joined issue with him. Some would ask "What is this prater wanting to make out?", while others would say "He seems to be a Preacher of foreign Deities." (This was because he was telling the Good News about Jesus and the Resurrection). So they laid hold of him and took him to the Court of Areopagus. "May we hear," they asked, "what new teaching this is which you are giving? For you are bringing some strange things to our notice, and we should like to know what they mean." (All Athenians and the foreigners staying in the city found no time for anything else but telling, or listening to, the last new thing.) So Paul took his stand in the middle of the Court, and said- -"Men of Athens, on every hand I see signs of your being very devout. For as I was going about, looking at your sacred shrines, I came upon an altar with this inscription — 'To an Unknown God.' What, therefore, you worship in ignorance, that I am now proclaiming to you. The God who made the world and all things that are in it — he, Lord as he is of Heaven and Earth, does not dwell in temples made by hands, nor yet do human hands minister to his wants, as though he needed anything, since he himself gives, to all, life, and breath, and all things. He made all races of the earth's surface — fixing a time for their rise and fall, and the limits of their settlements — That they might search for God, if by any means they might feel their way to him and find him. And yet he is not really far from any one of us; for in him we live and move and are. To use the words of some of your own poets — 'His offspring, too, are we.' Therefore, as the offspring of God, we must not think

that the Deity has any resemblance to anything made of gold, or  
 30 silver, or stone — a work of human art and imagination. True, God  
 looked with indulgence on the days of men's ignorance, but now  
 he is announcing to every one everywhere the need for repentance,  
 31 because he has fixed a day on which he intends to 'judge the world  
 with justice,' by a man whom he has appointed — and of this he  
 32 has given all men a pledge by raising this man from the dead." On  
 hearing of a resurrection of the dead, some began jeering, but oth-  
 ers said that they would hear what he had to say about that another  
 33 time. And so Paul left the Court. There were, however, some men  
 who joined him, and became believers in Christ. Among them were  
 Dionysius, a member of the Court of Areopagus, a woman named  
 18 Damaris, and several others.

2 On leaving Athens, Paul next went to Corinth. There he met a Jew of  
 the name of Aquila, a native of Pontus, who, with his wife Priscilla,  
 had lately come from Italy, in consequence of the order which had  
 been issued by the Emperor Claudius for all Jews to leave Rome.  
 3 Paul paid them a visit, and, since their trade was the same as his,  
 he stayed and worked with them — their trade was tent-making.  
 4 Every Sabbath Paul gave addresses in the Synagogue, trying to con-  
 5 vince both Jews and Greeks. But, when Silas and Timothy had come  
 down from Macedonia, Paul devoted himself entirely to delivering  
 the Message, earnestly maintaining before the Jews that Jesus was  
 6 the Christ. However, as they set themselves against him and became  
 abusive, Paul shook his clothes in protest and said to them: "Your  
 blood be on your own heads. My conscience is clear. From this time  
 7 forward I shall go to the Gentiles." So he left, and went to the house  
 of a certain Titius Justus, who had been accustomed to join in the  
 worship of God, and whose house was next door to the Synagogue.  
 8 Crispus, the President of the Synagogue, came to believe in the Lord,  
 and so did all his household; and many of the Corinthians, as they  
 9 listened to Paul, became believers in Christ and were baptized. One  
 night the Lord said to Paul, in a vision: "Have no fear, but continue  
 10 to speak, and refuse to be silenced; for I am with you, and no one

shall do you harm, for I have many People in this city." So he settled there for a year and a half, and taught God's Message among the people. While Gallio was governor of Greece, the Jews made a combined attack on Paul, and brought him before the Governor's Bench, charging him with persuading people to worship God in a way forbidden by the Law. Just as Paul was on the point of speaking, Gallio said to the Jews: "Jews, if this were a case of misdemeanor or some serious crime, there would be some reason for my listening patiently to you; but, since it is a dispute about words, and names, and your own Law, you must see to it yourselves. I do not choose to be a judge in such matters." Saying this, he drove them back from the Bench. Then they all set upon Sosthenes, the President of the Synagogue, and beat him in front of the Bench, but Gallio did not trouble himself about any of these things. Paul remained there some time after this, and then took leave of the Brethren, and sailed to Syria with Priscilla and Aquila, but not before his head had been shaved at Cenchreae, because he was under a vow. They put into Ephesus, and there Paul, leaving his companions, went into the Synagogue and addressed the Jews. When they asked him to prolong his stay, he declined, saying however, as he took his leave, "I will come back again to you, please God," and then set sail from Ephesus. On reaching Caesarea, he went up to Jerusalem and exchanged greetings with the Church, and then went down to Antioch. After making some stay in Antioch, he set out on a tour through the Phrygian district of Galatia, strengthening the faith of all the disciples as he went. Meanwhile there had come to Ephesus an Alexandrian Jew, named Apollos, an eloquent man, who was well-versed in the Scriptures. He had been well-instructed in the Cause of the Lord, and with burning zeal he spoke of, and taught carefully, the facts about Jesus, though he knew of no baptism but John's. This man began to speak out fearlessly in the Synagogue; and when Priscilla and Aquila heard him, they took him home and explained the Cause of God to him more carefully still. When he wanted to cross to Greece, the Brethren furthered his plans, and wrote to the disciples there to welcome him. On his arrival he proved of great assistance to those

who had, through the loving-kindness of God, become believers in  
 28 Christ, for he vigorously confuted the Jews, publicly proving by the  
 19 Scriptures that Jesus was the Christ.

While Apollos was at Corinth, Paul passed through the inland districts of Roman Asia, and went to Ephesus. There he found some  
 2 disciples, of whom he asked: "Did you, when you became believers in Christ, receive the Holy Spirit?" "No," they answered, "we did  
 3 not even hear that there was a Holy Spirit." "What then was your  
 4 baptism?" Paul asked. "John's baptism was a baptism upon repentance," rejoined Paul, "and John told the people (speaking of the  
 'One Coming; after him) that they should believe in him — that is  
 5 in Jesus." On hearing this, they were baptized into the faith of the  
 6 Lord Jesus, and, after Paul had placed his hands on them, the Holy Spirit descended upon them, and they began to speak with 'tongues'  
 8 and to preach. There were about twelve of them in all. Paul went to the Synagogue there, and for three months spoke out fearlessly, giving addresses and trying to convince his hearers, about the kingdom of God. Some of them, however, hardened their hearts and refused to believe, denouncing the Cause before the people. So Paul left them and withdrew his disciples, and gave daily addresses in  
 10 the lecture-hall of Tyrannus. This went on for two years, so that all who lived in Roman Asia, Jews and Greeks alike, heard the Lord's  
 12 Message. God did miracles of no ordinary kind by Paul's hands; so that people would carry home to the sick handkerchiefs or aprons that had touched his body, and their diseases would leave them and  
 13 the wicked spirits go out of them. An attempt was made by some itinerant Jews, who were exorcists, to use the Name of the Lord Jesus over those who had wicked spirits in them. "I adjure you," they  
 14 would say, "by the Jesus, whom Paul preaches." The seven sons of Sceva, a Jewish Chief Priest, were doing this; but the wicked spirit answered them: "Jesus I acknowledge, and Paul I know, but you  
 15 — who are you?" Then the man, in whom this wicked spirit was, sprang upon them, mastered both of them, and so completely overpowered them, that they fled out of the house, stripped of their  
 17 clothes, and wounded. This incident came to the knowledge of all

the Jews and Greeks living at Ephesus; they were all awe-struck, and  
 the Name of the Lord Jesus was held in the highest honor. Many, 18  
 too, of those who had become believers in Christ came with a full  
 confession of their practices; while a number of people, who had 19  
 practiced magic, collected their books and burnt them publicly; and  
 on reckoning up the price of these, they found it amounted to five  
 thousand pounds. So irresistibly did the Lord's Message spread and 20  
 prevail. Sometime after these events Paul resolved to go through 21  
 Macedonia and Greece, and then make his way to Jerusalem. "And  
 after I have been there," he said, "I must visit Rome also." So he 22  
 sent to Macedonia two of his helpers, Timothy and Erastus, while  
 he himself stayed for some time longer in Roman Asia. Just about 23  
 that time a great disturbance arose about the Cause. A silversmith 24  
 named Demetrius, who made silver models of the shrine of Artemis,  
 and so gave a great deal of work to the artisans, got these men to- 25  
 gether, as well as the workmen engaged in similar occupations, and  
 said: "Men, you know that our prosperity depends upon this work,  
 and you see and hear that not only at Ephesus, but in almost the 26  
 whole of Roman Asia, this Paul has convinced and won over great  
 numbers of people, by his assertion that those Gods which are made  
 by hands are not Gods at all. So that not only is this business of ours 27  
 likely to fall into discredit, but there is the further danger that the  
 Temple of the great Goddess Artemis will be thought nothing of,  
 and that she herself will be deprived of her splendor — though all 28  
 Roman Asia and the whole world worship her." When they heard 29  
 this, the men were greatly enraged, and began shouting — "Great  
 is Artemis of the Ephesians!" The commotion spread through the 30  
 whole city, and the people rushed together into the amphitheater,  
 dragging with them Gaius and Aristarchus, two Macedonians who  
 were Paul's traveling companions. Paul wished to go into the am- 31  
 phitheater and face the people, but the disciples would not let him,  
 while some of the chief religious officials of the province, who were 32  
 friendly to him, sent repeated entreaties to him not to trust himself  
 inside. Meanwhile some were shouting one thing and some another,  
 for the Assembly was all in confusion, most of those present not

33 even knowing why they had met. But some of the crowd prompted Alexander, whom the Jews had pushed to the front, and he waved his hand to show that he wanted to speak in their defense to the people. However, when they recognized him as a Jew, one cry broke from them all, and they continued shouting for two hours — “Great is Artemis of the Ephesians!” When the Recorder had succeeded in quieting the crowd, he said: “Men of Ephesus, who is there, I ask you, who needs to be told that this city of Ephesus is the Warden of the Temple of the great Artemis, and of the statue which fell down from Zeus? As these are undeniable facts, you ought to keep calm and do nothing rash; for you have brought these men here, though they are neither robbers of Temples nor blasphemers of our Goddess. If, however, Demetrius and the artisans who are acting with him have a charge to make against any one, there are Court Days and there are Magistrates; let both parties take legal proceedings. But if you want anything more, it will have to be settled in the regular Assembly. For I tell you that we are in danger of being proceeded against for to-day’s riot, there being nothing to account for it; and in that case we shall be at a loss to give any reason for this disorderly gathering.” With these words he dismissed the Assembly.

**20** When the uproar had ceased, Paul sent for the disciples, and, with encouraging words, bade them goodbye, and started on his journey to Macedonia. After going through those districts and speaking many encouraging words to the disciples, he went into Greece, where he stayed three months. He was about to sail to Syria, when he learned that a plot had been laid against him by the Jews; so he decided to return by way of Macedonia. He was accompanied by Sopater the son of Pyrrhus, of Beroea, Aristarchus and Secundus from Thessalonica, Gaius of Derbe, and Timothy, as well as by Tychicus and Trophimus of Roman Asia. These men went to Troas and waited for us there; while we ourselves sailed from Philippi after the Passover, and joined them five days later at Troas, where we stayed for a week. On the first day of the week, when we had met for the Breaking of Bread, Paul, who was intending to leave the next day, began to address those who were present, and prolonged his

address till midnight. There were a good many lamps in the up- 8  
stairs room, where we had met; and a young man named Eutychus, 9  
sitting at the window, was gradually overcome with great drowsi-  
ness, as Paul continued his address. At last, quite overpowered by  
his drowsiness, he fell from the third story to the ground, and was  
picked up for dead. But Paul went down, threw himself upon him, 10  
and put his arms round him. "Do not be alarmed," he said, "he is  
still alive." Then he went upstairs; and, after breaking and partaking 11  
of the Bread, he talked with them at great length till daybreak, and  
then left. Meanwhile they had taken the lad away alive, and were 12  
greatly comforted. We started first, went on board ship, and sailed 13  
for Assos, intending to take Paul on board there. This was by his own  
arrangement, as he intended to go by land himself. So, when he met 14  
us at Assos, we took him on board and went on to Mitylene. The 15  
day after we had sailed from there, we arrived off Chios, touched  
at Samos the following day, and the next day reached Miletus; for 16  
Paul had decided to sail past Ephesus, so as to avoid spending much  
time in Roman Asia. He was making haste to reach Jerusalem, if  
possible, by the Festival at the close of the Harvest. From Miletus, 17  
however, he sent to Ephesus and invited the Officers of the Church  
to meet him; and, when they came, he spoke to them as follows: 18  
"You know well the life that I always led among you from the very  
first day that I set foot in Roman Asia, serving the Lord, as I did, in 19  
all humility, amid the tears and trials which fell to my lot through  
the plots of the Jews. I never shrank from telling you anything that 20  
could be helpful to you, or from teaching you both in public and in  
private. I earnestly pointed both Jews and Greeks to the repentance 21  
that leads to God, and to faith in Jesus, our Lord. And now, under 22  
spiritual constraint, I am here on my way to Jerusalem, not know-  
ing what will happen to me there, except that in town after town the 23  
Holy Spirit plainly declares to me that imprisonment and troubles  
await me. But I count my life of no value to myself, if only I may 24  
complete the course marked out for me, and the task that was allot-  
ted me by the Lord Jesus — which was to declare the Good News  
of the Love of God. And now, I tell you, I know that none of you 25

will ever see my face again — you among whom I have gone about  
26 proclaiming the Kingdom. Therefore I declare to you this day, that  
27 my conscience is clear in regard to the fate of any of you, for I have  
not shrunk from announcing the whole purpose of God regarding  
28 you. Be watchful over yourselves, and over the whole flock, of which  
the Holy Spirit has placed you in charge, to shepherd the Church of  
29 God, which he won for himself at the cost of his life. I know that, after  
my departure, merciless wolves will get in among you, who will  
30 not spare the flock; and from among yourselves, too, men will arise,  
who will teach perversions of truth, so as to draw away the disciples  
31 after them. Therefore, be on your guard, remembering how for three  
years, night and day, I never ceased, even with tears, to warn each  
32 one of you. And now I commend you to the Lord and to the Mes-  
sage of his Love — a Message which has the power to build up your  
characters, and to give you your place among all those who have be-  
33 come Christ's People. I have never coveted any one's gold or silver or  
34 clothing. You, yourselves, know that these hands of mine provided  
35 not only for my own wants, but for my companions also. I left nothing  
undone to show you that, laboring as I labored, you ought to  
help the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how  
36 he said himself — 'It is more blessed to give than to receive.'" When  
Paul had finished speaking, he knelt down and prayed with them  
37 all. All were in tears; and throwing their arms round Paul's neck,  
38 they kissed him again and again, grieving most of all over what he  
had said — that they would never see his face again. Then they es-  
21 corted him to the ship.

When we had torn ourselves away and had set sail, we ran before  
the wind to Cos; the next day we came to Rhodes, and from there  
2 to Patara, where we found a ship crossing to Phoenicia, and went  
3 on board and set sail. After sighting Cyprus and leaving it on the  
left, we sailed to Syria, and put into Tyre, where the ship was to dis-  
4 charge her cargo. There we found the disciples and stayed a week  
with them. Speaking under the influence of the Spirit, they warned  
5 Paul not to set foot in Jerusalem. However, when we had come to  
the end of our visit, we went on our way, all the disciples with their



wives and children escorting us out of the city. We knelt down on the beach, and prayed, and then said good-bye to one another; after which we went on board, and they returned home. After we had made the run from Tyre, we landed at Ptolemais, and exchanged greetings with the Brethren there, and spent a day with them. The next day we left, and reached Caesarea, where we went to the house of Philip, the Missionary, who was one of 'the Seven,' and stayed with him. He had four unmarried daughters, who had the gift of prophecy. During our visit, which lasted several days, a Prophet, named Agabus, came down from Judea. He came to see us, and, taking Paul's girdle, and binding his own feet and hands with it, said: "This is what the Holy Spirit says — 'The man to whom this girdle belongs will be bound like this at Jerusalem by the Jews, and they will give him up to the Gentiles'." When we heard that, we and the people of the place began to entreat Paul not to go up to Jerusalem. It was then that Paul made the reply: "Why are you weeping and breaking my heart like this? For my part, I am ready not only to be bound, but even to suffer death at Jerusalem for the Name of the Lord Jesus." So, as he would not be persuaded, we said no more to him, only adding — "The Lord's will be done." At the end of our visit, we made our preparations, and started on our way up to Jerusalem. Some of the disciples from Caesarea went with us, and brought Mnason with them, a Cypriot disciple of long standing, with whom we were to stay. On our arrival at Jerusalem, the Brethren there gave us a hearty welcome; and the next day Paul went with us to see James, and all the Officers of the Church were present. After greeting them, Paul related in detail all that God had done among the Gentiles through his efforts; and, when they had heard it, they began praising God, and said to Paul: "You see, Brother, that the Jews who have become believers in Christ may be numbered by tens of thousands, and they are all naturally earnest in upholding the Jewish Law. Now they have heard it said about you, that you teach all Jews in foreign countries to forsake Moses, for you tell them not to circumcise their children or even to observe Jewish customs. Well now, as they are certain to hear of your arrival, do what

23 we are going to suggest. We have four men here, who have of their  
 24 own accord put themselves under a vow. Join these men, share their  
 purification, and bear their expenses, so that they may shave their  
 heads; and then all will see that there is no truth in what they have  
 been told about you, but that, on the contrary, you yourself rule your  
 25 life in obedience to the Jewish Law. As to the Gentiles who have be-  
 come believers in Christ, we have sent our decision that they should  
 avoid food offered to idols, and blood, and the flesh of strangled  
 26 animals, and impurity." On this, Paul joined the men, and the next  
 day shared their purification, and went into the Temple, and gave  
 notice of the expiration of the period of purification when the usual  
 27 offering should have been made on behalf of each of them. But, just  
 as the seven days were drawing to a close, the Jews from Roman  
 Asia caught sight of Paul in the Temple, and caused great excitement  
 28 among all the people present, by seizing Paul and shouting: "Men  
 of Israel! help! This is the man who teaches every one everywhere  
 against our People, our Law, and this Place; and, what is more, he  
 has actually brought Greeks into the Temple and defiled this sacred  
 29 place." (For they had previously seen Trophimus the Ephesian in  
 Paul's company in the city, and were under the belief that Paul had  
 30 taken him into the Temple.) The whole city was stirred, and the peo-  
 ple quickly collected, seized Paul, and dragged him out of the Tem-  
 31 ple, when the doors were immediately shut. They were bent upon  
 killing him, when it was reported to the Officer commanding the  
 32 garrison, that all Jerusalem was in commotion. He instantly got to-  
 gether some officers and men, and charged down upon the crowd,  
 who, when they saw the Commanding Officer and his men, stopped  
 33 beating Paul. Then he went up to Paul, arrested him, ordered him to  
 be doubly chained, and proceeded to inquire who he was, and what  
 34 he had been doing. Some of the crowd said one thing, and some an-  
 other; and, as he could get no definite reply on account of the uproar,  
 35 he ordered Paul to be taken into the barracks. When Paul reached  
 the steps, he was actually being carried by the soldiers, owing to the  
 36 violence of the mob; for the people were following in a mass, shout-  
 37 ing out: "Kill him!" Just as he was about to be taken into the Fort,

Paul said to the Commanding Officer: "May I speak to you?" "Do you know Greek?" asked the Commanding Officer. "Are not you, then, the Egyptian who some time ago raised an insurrection and led the four thousand Bandits out into the Wilderness?" "No," said Paul, "I am a Jew of Tarsus in Cilicia, a citizen of a city of some note; and I beg you to give me permission to speak to the people." The Commanding Officer gave his permission, and Paul, standing on the steps, made signs with his hand to the people, and, when comparative silence had been obtained, he spoke to them in Hebrew, as follows:

22

"Brothers and Father, listen to the defense which I am about to make." When they heard that he was speaking to them in Hebrew, they were still more quiet; and Paul went on: "I am a Jew, a native of Tarsus in Cilicia, but I was brought up in this city under the teaching of Gamaliel, and educated in accordance with the strict system of our ancestral Law. I was as zealous in God's service as any of you who are here to-day. In my persecution of this Cause I did not stop even at the taking of life. I put in chains, and imprisoned, men and women alike — And to that the High Priest himself and all the Council can testify. For I had letters of introduction from them to our fellow Jews at Damascus, and I was on my way to that place, to bring those whom I might find there prisoners to Jerusalem for punishment. While I was still on my way, just as I was getting close to Damascus, about mid-day, suddenly there flashed from the heavens a great light all round me. I fell to the ground, and heard a voice saying to me 'Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me?' 'Who are you, Lord?' I replied. Then the voice said 'I am Jesus of Nazareth whom you are persecuting.' The men with me saw the light, but did not hear the speaker's voice. Then I said 'What am I to do, Lord?' 'Get up and go into Damascus,' The Lord said to me, 'and there you shall be told all that you have been appointed to do.' In consequence of that dazzling light I could not see, but my companions held me by the hand, till I reached Damascus. There a man named Ananias, a strict observer of our Law, well spoken of by all the Jewish

## Acts 22

13 inhabitants, came to see me. Standing close to me, he said 'Saul, my Brother, recover your sight.' And then and there I recovered my  
14 sight and looked up at him. Then he said 'The God of our ancestors has appointed you to learn his will, and to see the Righteous One,  
15 and to hear words from his lips; for you shall be a witness for him  
16 to all the world of what you have just seen and heard. And now why wait any longer: Be baptized at once, wash away your sins,  
17 and invoke his Name. After my return to Jerusalem, while I was  
18 praying one day in the Temple, I fell into a trance, and saw Jesus saying to me 'Make haste and leave Jerusalem at once, because  
19 they will not accept your testimony about me.' 'Lord,' I answered, 'these people know that I used to imprison and scourge, in  
20 Synagogue after Synagogue, those who believed in you; and, when the blood of your martyr, Stephen, was being shed, I was myself  
standing by, approving of his death, and took charge of the clothes  
21 of those who were murdering him. But Jesus said to me 'Go; for I will send you to the Gentiles far away'." Up to this point the people  
22 had been listening to Paul, but at these words they called out: "Kill him! A fellow like this ought not to have been allowed to live!" As  
23 they were shouting, tearing off their clothes, and throwing dust in the air, the Commanding Officer ordered Paul to be taken into the  
24 Fort, and directed that he should be examined under the lash, that he might find out the reason for their outcry against him. But just  
25 as they had tied him up to be scourged, Paul said to the Captain standing near: "Is it legal for you to scourge a Roman citizen,  
26 unconvicted?" On hearing this, the Captain went and reported it to the Commanding Officer. "Do you know what you are doing?" he  
27 said. "This man is a Roman citizen." So the Commanding Officer went up to Paul and said: "Tell me, are you a Roman citizen?"  
28 "Yes," replied Paul. "I had to pay a heavy price for my position as citizen," said the Officer. "I am one by birth," rejoined Paul. The  
29 men who were to have examined Paul immediately drew back, and the Officer, finding that Paul was a Roman citizen, was alarmed at  
30 having put him in chains. On the next day the Commanding Officer, wishing to find out the real reason why Paul was

denounced by the Jews, had his chains taken off, and directed the Chief Priests and the whole of the High Council to assemble, and then took Paul down and brought him before them.

23

Paul fixed his eyes upon the Council, and began: "Brothers, for my part, I have always ordered my life before God, with a clear conscience, up to this very day." At this, the High Priest Ananias ordered the men standing near to strike him on the mouth; whereupon Paul turned to him and said: "God will strike you, you white-washed wall! Are you sitting there to try me in accordance with law, and yet, in defiance of law, order me to be struck?" The people standing near said to Paul: "Do you know that you are insulting God's High Priest?" "I did not know, Brothers, that it was the High Priest," said Paul, "for Scripture says — 'Of the Ruler of thy People thou shalt speak no ill'." Noticing that some of those present were Sadducees and others Pharisees, Paul called out in the Council: "Brothers, I am a Pharisee and a son of Pharisees. It is on the question of hope for the dead and of their resurrection that I am on my trial." As soon as he said this, a dispute arose between the Pharisees and the Sadducees; and there was a sharp division of opinion among those present. (For Sadducees say there is no such thing as a resurrection, and that there is neither angel nor spirit, while Pharisees believe in both.) So a great uproar ensued, and some of the Teachers of the Law belonging to the Pharisees' party stood up and hotly protested: "We find nothing whatever wrong in this man. Suppose a spirit did speak to him, or an angel — " The dispute was becoming so violent, that the Commanding Officer, fearing that Paul would be torn in pieces between them, ordered the Guard to go down and rescue him from them, and take him into the Fort. That night the Lord came and stood by Paul, and said: "Courage! You have borne witness for me in Jerusalem and you must bear witness in Rome also." In the morning the Jews combined together, and took an oath that they would not eat or drink till they had killed Paul. There were more than forty in the plot; and they went to the Chief Priests and the Councillors, and said: "We have taken a solemn oath not to touch food till we have

15 killed Paul. So we want you now, with the consent of the Council,  
to suggest to the Commanding Officer that he should bring Paul  
down before you, as though you intended to go more fully into his  
case; but, before he comes here, we will be ready to make away  
16 with him." However, the son of Paul's sister, hearing of the plot,  
17 went to the Fort, and on being admitted, told Paul about it. Paul  
called one of the Captains of the garrison and asked him to take  
the lad to the Commanding Officer, as he had something to tell  
18 him. The Captain went with the lad to the Commanding Officer,  
and said: "The prisoner Paul called me and asked me to bring this  
19 lad to you, as he has something to tell you." The Commanding  
Officer took the lad by the hand, and, stepping aside, asked what it  
20 was he had to tell him. "The Jews have agreed," answered the lad,  
"to ask you to bring Paul down before the Council to-morrow, on  
21 the plea of your making further inquiry into his case. But do not let  
them persuade you, for more than forty of them are lying in wait  
for him, who have taken an oath that they will not eat or drink, till  
they have made away with him; and they are at this very moment  
22 in readiness, counting upon your promise." The Commanding  
Officer then dismissed the lad, cautioning him not to mention to  
23 anybody that he had given him that information. Then he called  
two Captains, and ordered them to have two hundred men ready  
to go to Caesarea, as well as seventy troopers and two hundred  
24 lancers, by nine o'clock that night, and to have horses ready for  
Paul to ride, so that they might take him safely to Felix, the  
25 Governor. To him he wrote a letter, somewhat as follows —  
26 'Claudius Lysias sends his compliments to His Excellency Felix the  
27 Governor. The man whom I send with this had been seized by the  
Jews, and was on the point of being killed by them, when I came  
upon them with the force under my command, and rescued him,  
28 as I learned that he was a Roman citizen. Wishing to ascertain  
exactly the ground of the charges they made against him, I brought  
29 him before their Council, when I found that their charges were  
connected with questions of their own Law, and that there was  
30 nothing alleged involving either death or imprisonment. Having,

however, information of a plot against the man, which was about  
 to be put into execution, I am sending him to you at once, and I  
 have also directed his accusers to prosecute him before you.' The 31  
 soldiers, in accordance with their orders, took charge of Paul and  
 conducted him by night to Antipatris; and on the next day, leaving 32  
 the troopers to go on with him, they returned to the Fort. On 33  
 arriving at Caesarea, the troopers delivered the letter to the  
 Governor, and brought Paul before him. As soon as Felix had read 34  
 the letter, he enquired to what province Paul belonged, and,  
 learning that he came from Cilicia, he said: "I will hear all you 35  
 have to say as soon as your accusers have arrived." And he ordered  
 Paul to be kept under guard in Herod's Government House. Five 24  
 days afterwards the High Priest Ananias came down with some of  
 the Councillors and a barrister named Tertullus. They laid an  
 information with the Governor against Paul; and, when the hearing 2  
 came on, Tertullus began his speech for the prosecution. "We owe 3  
 it to your Excellency," he said, "that we are enjoying profound  
 peace, and we owe it to your foresight that this nation is constantly  
 securing reforms — advantages which we very gratefully accept at  
 all times and places. But — not to be tedious — I beg you, with 4  
 your accustomed fairness, to listen to a brief statement of our case.  
 We have found this man a public pest; he is one who stirs up 5  
 disputes among the Jews all the world over, and is a ringleader of  
 the Nazarene heretics. He even attempted to desecrate the Temple 6  
 itself, but we caught him; and you will be able, by examining him 8  
 on all these points, to satisfy yourself as to the charges which we  
 are bringing against him." The Jews also joined in the attack and 9  
 bore out his statements. On a sign from the Governor, Paul made 10  
 this reply: "Knowing, as I do, for how many years you have acted  
 as Judge to this nation, it is with confidence that I undertake my  
 own defense. For you can easily ascertain that it is not more than 11  
 twelve days ago that I went up to worship at Jerusalem, where my 12  
 prosecutors never found me holding discussions with any one, or  
 causing a crowd to collect — either in the Temple, or in the  
 Synagogues, or about the city; and they cannot establish the 13

14 charges which they are now making against me. This, however, I do acknowledge to you, that it is as a believer in the Cause which they call heretical, that I worship the God of my ancestors. At the same time, I believe everything that is in accordance with the Law  
15 and that is written in the prophets; and I have a hope that rests in God — a hope which they also cherish — that there will one day  
16 be a resurrection of good and bad alike. This being so, I strive at all times to keep my conscience clear before both God and man. After  
17 some years' absence I had come to bring charitable gifts to my nation, and to make offerings; and it was while engaged in this that they found me in the Temple, after completing a period of  
18 purification, but not with any crowd or disorder. There were, however, some Jews from Roman Asia who ought to have been here before you, and to have made any charge that they may have  
19 against me — Or else let my opponents here say what they found wrong in me when I was before the Council, except as to the one  
20 sentence that I shouted out as I stood among them — 'It is about the resurrection of the dead that I am on my trial before you  
21 to-day'." Felix, however, adjourned the case — though he had a fairly accurate knowledge of all that concerned the Cause — with the promise: "When Lysias, the commanding Officer, comes down,  
22 I will give my decision in your case." So he gave orders to the Captain in charge of Paul to keep him in custody, but to relax the regulations, and not to prevent any of his personal friends from  
23 attending to his wants. Some days later Felix came with his wife Drusilla, who was herself a Jewess, and, sending for Paul, listened  
24 to what he had to say about faith in Christ Jesus. But, while Paul was speaking at length about righteousness, self-control, and the coming judgment, Felix became terrified, and interrupted him —  
25 "Go for the present, but, when I find an opportunity, I will send for you again." He was hoping, too, for a bribe from Paul, and so he used to send for him frequently and talk with him. But, after the lapse of two years, Felix was succeeded by Porcius Festus; and, wishing to gain popularity with the Jews, he left Paul a prisoner.



Three days after Festus had entered upon his province, he left Caesarea and went up to Jerusalem. There the Chief Priests and the leading men among the Jews laid an information before him against Paul, and asked a favor of him, to Paul's injury — to have Paul brought to Jerusalem. All the while they were plotting to make away with him on the road. But Festus answered that Paul was in prison at Caesarea, and that he himself would be leaving for that place shortly. "So let the influential men among you," he said, "go down with me, and if there is anything amiss in the man, charge him formally with it." After staying among them some eight or ten days, Festus went down to Caesarea. The next day he took his seat on the Bench, and ordered Paul to be brought before him. On Paul's appearance, the Jews who had come down from Jerusalem surrounded him, and made many serious charges, which they failed to establish. Paul's answer to the charge was — 'I have not committed any offence against the Jewish Law, or the Temple, or the Emperor.' But, as Festus wished to gain popularity with the Jews, he interrupted Paul with the question: "Are you willing to go up to Jerusalem and be tried on these charges before me there?" "No," replied Paul, "I am standing at the Emperor's Bar, where I ought to be tried. I have not wronged the Jews, as you yourself are well aware. If, however, I am breaking the law and have committed any offence deserving death, I do not ask to escape the penalty; but, if there is nothing in the accusations of these people, no one has the power to give me up to them. I appeal to the Emperor." Upon that, Festus, after conferring with his Council, answered: "You have appealed to the Emperor; to the Emperor you shall go." Some days later King Agrippa and Bernice came down to Caesarea, and paid a visit of congratulation to Festus; and, as they were staying there for several days, Festus laid Paul's case before the King. "There is a man here," he said, "left a prisoner by Felix, about whom, when I came to Jerusalem, the Jewish Chief Priest and the Councillors laid an information, demanding judgment against him. My answer to them was, that it was not the practice of Romans to give up any man to his accusers till the accused had met

17 them face to face, and had also had an opportunity of answering  
 the charges brought against him. So they met here, and without  
 18 loss of time I took my seat on the Bench the very next day, and  
 ordered the man to be brought before me. But, when his accusers  
 came forward, they brought no charge of wrong-doing such as I  
 19 had expected; but I found that there were certain questions in  
 dispute between them about their own religion, and about some  
 20 dead man called Jesus, whom Paul declared to be alive. And, as I  
 was at a loss how to enquire into questions of this kind, I asked  
 Paul if he were willing to go up to Jerusalem, and there be put  
 21 upon his trial. Paul, however, appealed to have his case reserved  
 for the consideration of his August Majesty, so I ordered him to be  
 22 detained in custody, until I could send him to the Emperor." "I  
 should like to hear this man myself," Agrippa said to Festus. "You  
 23 shall hear him to-morrow," Festus answered. So the next day, when  
 Agrippa and Bernice had come in full state and had entered the  
 Audience Chamber, with the superior officers and the principal  
 people of the city, by the order of Festus Paul was brought before  
 24 them. Then Festus said: "King Agrippa, and all here present, you  
 see before you the man about whom the whole Jewish people have  
 applied to me, both at Jerusalem and here, loudly asserting that he  
 25 ought not to be allowed to live. I found, however, that he had not  
 done anything deserving death; so, as he had himself appealed to  
 26 his August Majesty, I decided to send him. But I have nothing  
 definite to write about him to my Imperial Master; and for that  
 reason I have brought him before you all, and especially before  
 you, King Agrippa, that, after examining him, I may have  
 27 something to write. For it seems to me absurd to send a prisoner,  
 26 without at the same time stating the charges made against him."  
 Turning to Paul, Agrippa said: "You are at liberty to speak for your-  
 2 self." Then Paul stretched out his hand and began his defense. "I  
 have been congratulating myself, King Agrippa," he said, "that it is  
 before you that I have to make my defense to-day, with regard to  
 3 all the charges brought against me by Jews, especially as you are so  
 well-versed in all the customs and questions of the Jewish world. I

beg you therefore to give me a patient hearing. My life, then, from 4  
 youth upwards, was passed, from the very first, among my own na-  
 tion, and in Jerusalem, and is within the knowledge of all Jews; and 5  
 they have always known — if they choose to give evidence- -that, in  
 accordance with the very strictest form of our religion, I lived a true  
 Pharisee. Even now, it is because of my hope in the promise given 6  
 by God to our ancestors that I stand here on my trial — A promise 7  
 which our Twelve Tribes, by earnest service night and day, hope to  
 see fulfilled. It is for this hope, your Majesty, that I am accused —  
 and by Jews themselves! Why do you all hold it incredible that God 8  
 should raise the dead? I myself, it is true, once thought it my duty to 9  
 oppose in every way the Name of Jesus of Nazareth; and I actually 10  
 did so at Jerusalem. Acting on the authority of the Chief Priests, I  
 myself threw many of the People of Christ into prison, and, when it  
 was proposed to put them to death, I gave my vote for it. Time after 11  
 time, in every Synagogue, I tried by punishments to force them  
 to blaspheme. So frantic was I against them, that I pursued them  
 even to towns beyond our borders. It was while I was traveling to 12  
 Damascus on an errand of this kind, entrusted with full powers by  
 the Chief Priests, that at mid-day, your Majesty, I saw right in my 13  
 path, coming from the heavens, a light brighter than the glare of the  
 sun, which shone all round me and those traveling with me. We all 14  
 fell to the ground, and then I heard a voice saying to me in Hebrew  
 — ‘Saul, Saul, why are you persecuting me? By kicking against the  
 goad you are punishing yourself.’ ‘Who are you, Lord?’ I asked. And 15  
 the Lord said: “I am Jesus, whom you are persecuting; but get up 16  
 and stand upright; for I have appeared to you in order to appoint  
 you a servant and a witness of those revelations of me which you  
 have already had, and of those in which I shall yet appear to you,  
 since I am choosing you out from your own people and from the 17  
 Gentiles, to whom I now send you, to open their eyes, and to turn 18  
 them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan to God;  
 so that they may receive pardon for their sins, and a place among  
 those who have become God’s People, by faith in me.’ After that, 19

20 King Agrippa, I did not fail to obey the heavenly vision; on the contrary, first to those at Damascus and Jerusalem, and then through the whole of Judea, and to the Gentiles as well, I began to preach repentance and conversion to God, and a life befitting that repentance.

21 This is why the Jews seized me in the Temple, and made attempts  
 22 upon my life. However I have received help from God to this very day, and so stand here, and bear my testimony to high and low alike — without adding a word to what the Prophets, as well as Moses,  
 23 declared should happen — That the Christ must suffer, and that, by rising from the dead, he was destined to be the first to bring news of  
 24 Light, not only to our nation, but also to the Gentiles.” While Paul was making this defense, Festus called out loudly: “You are mad,  
 25 Paul; your great learning is driving you mad.” “I am not mad, your Excellency,” he replied; “on the contrary, the statements that I am  
 26 making are true and sober. Indeed, the King knows about these matters, so I speak before him without constraint. I am sure that there is nothing whatever of what I have been telling him that has escaped  
 27 his attention; for all this has not been done in a corner. King Agrippa, do you believe the Prophets? I know you do.” But Agrippa said to  
 28 Paul: “You are soon trying to make a Christian of me!” “Whether it is soon or late,” answered Paul, “I would to God that not only you, but all who are listening to me, might to-day become just what I  
 30 am myself — except for these chains!” Then the King rose, with the Governor and Bernice and those who had been sitting with them,  
 31 and, after retiring, discussed the case among themselves. “There is nothing,” they said, “deserving death or imprisonment in this man’s  
 32 conduct”; and, speaking to Festus, Agrippa added: “The man might  
 27 have been discharged, if he had not appealed to the Emperor.”

As it was decided that we were to sail to Italy, Paul and some other prisoners were put in charge of a Captain of the Augustan Guard,  
 2 named Julius. We went on board a ship from Adramyttium, which was on the point of sailing to the ports along the coast of Roman Asia, and put to sea. Aristarchus, a Macedonian from Thessalonica,  
 3 went with us. The next day we put in to Sidon, where Julius treated Paul in a friendly manner, and allowed him to go to see his friends

and receive their hospitality. Putting to sea again, we sailed under 4  
the lee of Cyprus, because the wind was against us; and, after cross- 5  
ing the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we reached Myra in Lycia.  
There the Roman Officer found an Alexandrian ship on her way to 6  
Italy, and put us on board of her. For several days our progress was 7  
slow, and it was only with difficulty that we arrived off Cnidus. As  
the wind was still unfavorable when we came off Cape Salmone, we  
sailed under the lee of Crete, and with difficulty, by keeping close in 8  
shore, we reached a place called 'Fair Havens,' near which was the  
town of Lasea. This had taken a considerable time, and sailing was 9  
already dangerous, for the Fast was already over; and so Paul gave  
this warning. "My friends," he said, "I see that this voyage will be 10  
attended with injury and much damage, not only to the cargo and  
the ship, but to our own lives also." The Roman Officer, however, 11  
was more influenced by the captain and the owner than by what  
was said by Paul. And, as the harbor was not a suitable one to win- 12  
ter in, the majority were in favor of continuing the voyage, in hope  
of being able to reach Phoenix, and winter there. Phoenix was a Cre-  
tan harbor, open to the north-east and south-east. So, when a light 13  
wind sprang up from the south, thinking that they had found their  
opportunity, they weighed anchor and kept along the coast of Crete,  
close in shore. But shortly afterwards a hurricane came down on us 14  
off the land — a north-easter, as it is called. The ship was caught by it 15  
and was unable to keep her head to the wind, so we had to give way  
and let her drive before it. Running under the lee of a small island 16  
called Cauda, we only just managed to secure the ship's boat, and, 17  
after hoisting it on board, the men frapped the ship. But, afraid of  
being driven on to the Syrtis Sands, they lowered the yard, and then  
drifted. So violently were we tossed about by the storm, that the next 18  
day they began throwing the cargo overboard, and, on the follow- 19  
ing day, threw out the ship's tackle with their own hands. As neither 20  
sun nor stars were visible for several days, and, as the gale still con-  
tinued severe, all hope of our being saved was at last abandoned. It 21  
was then, when they had gone a long time without food, that Paul  
came forward, and said: "My friends, you should have listened to

me, and not have sailed from Crete and so incurred this injury and  
22 damage. Yet, even as things are, I urge you not to lose courage, for  
23 there will not be a single life lost among you — only the ship. For  
last night an angel of the God to whom I belong, and whom I serve,  
24 stood by me, and said — ‘Have no fear, Paul; you must appear be-  
fore the Emperor, and God himself has given you the lives of all your  
25 fellow-voyagers.’ Therefore, courage, my friends! for I believe God,  
26 that everything will happen exactly as I have been told. We shall,  
27 however, have to be driven on some island.” It was now the four-  
teenth night of the storm, and we were drifting about in the Adri-  
atic Sea, when, about midnight, the sailors began to suspect that  
28 they were drawing near land. So they took soundings, and found  
twenty fathoms of water. After waiting a little, they took soundings  
29 again, and found fifteen fathoms. Then, as they were afraid of our  
being driven upon some rocky coast, they let go four anchors from  
30 the stern, and longed for daylight. The sailors wanted to leave the  
ship, and had lowered the boat, on pretense of running out anchors  
31 from the bows, when Paul said to the Roman Officer and his men:  
32 “Unless the sailors remain on board, you cannot be saved.” Upon  
that the soldiers cut the ropes which held the boat, and let her drift  
33 away. In the interval before daybreak Paul kept urging them all to  
take something to eat. “It is a fortnight to-day,” he said, “that, ow-  
34 ing to your anxiety, you have gone without food, taking nothing. So  
I urge you to take something to eat; your safety depends upon it, for  
35 not one of you will lose even a hair of his head.” With these words  
he took some bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving to God be-  
36 fore them all, broke it in pieces, and began to eat; and the men all  
37 felt cheered and had something to eat themselves. There were about  
38 seventy-six of us on board, all told. After satisfying their hunger,  
they further lightened the ship by throwing the grain into the sea.  
39 When daylight came, they could not make out what land it was,  
but, observing a creek in which there was a beach, they consulted  
40 as to whether they could run the ship safely into it. Then they cast  
off, and abandoned the anchors, and at the same time unlashd the  
gear of the steering oars, hoisted the foresail to the wind, and made

for the beach. They got, however, into a kind of channel, and there 41  
 ran the ship aground. The bows stuck fast and could not be moved,  
 while the stern began breaking up under the strain. The advice of 42  
 the soldiers was that the prisoners should be killed, for fear that any  
 of them should swim away and make their escape. But the Roman 43  
 Officer, anxious to save Paul, prevented their carrying out their in-  
 tention, and ordered that those who could swim should be the first  
 to jump into the sea and try to reach the shore; and that the rest 44  
 should follow, some on planks, and others on different pieces of the  
 ship. In these various ways every one managed to get safely ashore.

28

When we were all safe, we found that the island was called Malta.  
 The natives showed us marked kindness, for they lit a fire and took 2  
 us all under shelter, because it had come on to rain and was cold.  
 Paul had gathered a quantity of dry sticks and laid them on the fire, 3  
 when a viper, driven out by the heat, fastened on his hand. When 4  
 the natives saw the creature hanging from his hand, they said to one  
 another: "Evidently this man is a murderer, for though he has been  
 saved from the sea, Justice has not allowed him to live." However, 5  
 Paul shook the creature off into the fire and took no harm. The na- 6  
 tives were expecting inflammation to set in, or that he would sud-  
 denly fall dead; but, after waiting for a long time, and seeing that  
 there was nothing amiss with him, they changed their minds and  
 said that he was a God. In that neighborhood there was an estate 7  
 belonging to the Governor of the island, whose name was Publius.  
 He took us up to his house, and for three days entertained us most  
 courteously. It happened that the father of Publius was lying ill of 8  
 fever and dysentery. So Paul went to see him; and, after praying, he  
 placed his hands on him and cured him. After this, all the people in 9  
 the island who had any illness came to Paul, and were cured. They 10  
 also presented us with many gifts, and when we set sail they put  
 supplies of necessities on board. After three months, we set sail in 11  
 a ship that had wintered in the island. She was an Alexandrian ves-  
 sel, and had the Twin Sons of Zeus for her figure-head. We put in at 12  
 Syracuse and stayed there three days, and from there we worked to 13

windward and so got to Rhegium. A day later a south wind sprang  
14 up and took us to Puteoli in two days. There we found some of the  
Brethren, and were urged to stay a week with them; after which we  
15 went on to Rome. The Brethren there had heard about us, and came  
out as far as the Market of Appius and the Three Taverns to meet us.  
16 At sight of them Paul thanked God and was much cheered. On our  
reaching Rome, Paul was allowed to live by himself, except for the  
17 soldier who was in charge of him. Three days after our arrival, Paul  
invited the leading Jews to meet him; and, when they came, he spoke  
to them as follows: "Brothers, although I had done nothing hostile  
to the interests of our nation or to our ancestral customs, yet I was  
sent from Jerusalem as a prisoner, and handed over to the Romans.  
18 The Romans, when they had examined me, were ready to release  
19 me, because there was nothing in my conduct deserving death. But,  
as the Jews opposed my release, I was compelled to appeal to the  
Emperor — not, indeed, that I had any charge to make against my  
20 own nation. This, then, is my reason for urging you to come to see  
me and talk with me; because it is for the sake of the Hope of Is-  
21 rael that I am here in chains." "We," was their reply, "have not had  
any letter about you from Judea, nor have any of our fellow-Jews  
22 come and reported or said anything bad about you. But we shall be  
glad to hear from you what your views are, for, with regard to this  
23 sect, we are well aware that it is spoken against on all sides." They  
then fixed a day with him, and came to the place where he was stay-  
ing, in even larger numbers, when Paul proceeded to lay the subject  
before them. He bore his testimony to the Kingdom of God, and  
tried to convince them about Jesus, by arguments drawn from the  
Law of Moses and from the Prophets — speaking from morning till  
24 evening. Some were inclined to accept what he said; others, how-  
25 ever, rejected it. So, as they disagreed among themselves, they began  
to disperse, Paul adding only — "True, indeed, was the declaration  
made by the Holy Spirit, through the Prophet Isaiah to your ances-  
26 tors — 'Go to this nation and say — "You will hear with your ears  
without ever understanding, and, though you have eyes, you will  
27 see without ever perceiving." For the mind of this nation has grown



dense, and their ears are dull of hearing, their eyes also have they closed; lest some day they should see with their eyes, and with their ears they should hear, and in their mind they should understand, and should turn — and I should heal them.' Understand, then, that 28  
this Salvation of God was sent for the Gentiles; and they will listen." 29  
For two whole years Paul stayed in a house which he rented for him- 30  
self, welcoming all who came to see him, proclaiming the Kingdom 31  
of God, and teaching about the Lord Jesus Christ, with perfect fear-  
lessness, unmolested.



## ROMANS

## PAUL'S LETTER TO THE ROMANS

To all in Rome who are dear to God and have been called to become Christ's People, from Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, who has been called to become an Apostle, and has been set apart to tell God's Good News. This Good News God promised long ago through his Prophets in the sacred Scriptures, concerning his Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord; who, as to his human nature, was descended from David, but, as to the spirit of holiness within him, was miraculously designated Son of God by his resurrection from the dead. Through him we received the gift of the Apostolic office, to win submission to the Faith among all nations for the glory of his Name. And among these nations are you — you who have been called to belong to Jesus Christ.

May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace.

FIRST, I thank my God through Jesus Christ about you all, because the report of your faith is spreading throughout the world. God, to whom I offer the worship of my soul as I tell the Goodness of his Son, is my witness how constantly I mention you when I pray, asking that, if he be willing, I may some day at last find the way open to visit you. For I long to see you, in order to impart to you some spiritual gift and so give you fresh strength — or rather that both you and I may find encouragement in each other's faith. I want you to know, Brothers, that I have many times intended coming to see you — but until now I have been prevented — that I might find among you some fruit of my labors, as I have already among the other nations. I have a duty to both the Greek and the Barbarian, to both the cultured and the ignorant. And so, for my part, I am ready to tell the Good News to you also who are in Rome.

For I am not ashamed of the Good News; it is the power of God which brings Salvation to every one who believes in Christ, to the

## Romans

- 17 Jew first, but also to the Greek. For in it there is a revelation of the Divine Righteousness resulting from faith and leading on to faith; as Scripture says — ‘Through faith the righteous man shall find Life.’
- 18 So, too, there is a revelation from Heaven of the Divine Wrath against every form of ungodliness and wickedness on the part of
- 19 those men who, by their wicked lives, are stifling the Truth. This is so, because what can be known about God is plain to them; for
- 20 God himself has made it plain. For ever since the creation of the universe God’s invisible attributes — his everlasting power and divinity — are to be seen and studied in his works, so that men have
- 21 no excuse; because, although they learned to know God, yet they did not offer him as God either praise or thanksgiving. Their speculations about him proved futile, and their undiscerning minds were
- 22 darkened. Professing to be wise, they showed themselves fools; and they transformed the Glory of the immortal God into the likeness of mortal man, and of birds, and beasts, and reptiles.
- 23 Therefore God abandoned them to impurity, letting them follow the cravings of their hearts, till they dishonored their own bodies;
- 24 for they had substituted a lie for the truth about God, and had revered and worshiped created things more than the Creator, who is to be praised for ever. Amen. That, I say, is why God
- 25 abandoned them to degrading passions. Even the women among them perverted the natural use of their bodies to the unnatural;
- 26 while the men, disregarding that for which women were intended by nature, were consumed with passion for one another. Men indulged in vile practices with men, and incurred in their own persons the inevitable penalty for their perverseness.
- 27 Then, as they would not keep God before their minds, God abandoned them to depraved thoughts, so that they did all kinds
- 28 of shameful things. They reveled in every form of wickedness, evil, greed, vice. Their lives were full of envy, murder, quarreling,
- 29 treachery, malice. They became back-biters, slanderers, impious, insolent, boastful. They devised new sins. They disobeyed their
- 30 parents. They were undiscerning, untrustworthy, without natural affection or pity. Well aware of God’s decree, that those who do
- 31
- 32

such things deserve to die, not only are they guilty of them themselves, but they even applaud those who do them.

Therefore you have nothing to say in your own defense, whoever you are who set yourself up as a judge. In judging others you condemn yourself, for you who set yourself up as a judge do the very same things. And we know that God's judgment falls unerringly upon those who do them. You who judge those that do such things and yet are yourself guilty of them — do you suppose that you of all men will escape God's judgment? Or do you think lightly of his abundant kindness, patience, and forbearance, not realizing that his kindness is meant to lead you to repentance? Hard-hearted and impenitent as you are, you are storing up for yourself Wrath on the 'Day of Wrath,' when God's justice as a judge will be revealed; for 'he will give to every man what his actions deserve.' To those who, by perseverance in doing good, aim at glory, honor, and all that is imperishable, he will give Immortal Life; while as to those who are factious, and disobedient to Truth but obedient to Evil, wrath and anger, distress and despair, will fall upon every human being who persists in wrong-doing — upon the Jew first, but also upon the Greek. But there will be glory, honor, and peace for every one who does right — for the Jew first, but also for the Greek, since God shows no partiality. All who, when they sin, are without Law will also perish without Law; while all who, when they sin, are under Law, will be judged as being under Law. It is not those who hear the words of a Law that are righteous before God, but it is those who obey it that will be pronounced righteous. When Gentiles, who have no Law, do instinctively what the Law requires, they, though they have no Law, are a Law to themselves; for they show the demands of the Law written upon their hearts; their consciences corroborating it, while in their thoughts they argue either in self-accusation or, it may be, in self-defense — on the day when God passes judgment on men's inmost lives, as the Good News that I tell declares that he will do through Christ Jesus.

But, perhaps, you bear the name of 'Jew,' and are relying upon Law, and boast of belonging to God, and understand his will, and,

## Romans 3

having been carefully instructed from the Law, have learned to appreciate the finer moral distinctions. Perhaps you are confident that you are a guide to the blind, a light to those who are in the dark, an instructor of the unintelligent, and a teacher of the childish, because in the Law you possess the outline of all Knowledge and Truth. Why, then, you teacher of others, do not you teach yourself? Do you preach against stealing, and yet steal? Do you forbid adultery, and yet commit adultery? Do you loathe idols, and yet plunder temples? Boasting, as you do, of your Law, do you dishonor God by breaking the Law? For, as Scripture says — ‘The name of God is reviled among the Gentiles because of you!’ Circumcision has its value, if you are obeying the Law. But, if you are a breaker of the Law, your circumcision is no better than uncircumcision. If, then, an uncircumcised man pays regard to the requirements of the Law, will not he, although not circumcised, be regarded by God as if he were? Indeed, the man who, owing to his birth, remains uncircumcised, and yet scrupulously obeys the Law, will condemn you, who, for all your written Law and your circumcision, are yet a breaker of the Law. For a man who is only a Jew outwardly is not a real Jew; nor is outward bodily circumcision real circumcision. The real Jew is the man who is a Jew in soul; and the real circumcision is the circumcision of the heart, a spiritual and not a literal thing. Such a man wins praise from God, though not from men.

**3** What is the advantage, then, of being a Jew? or what is the good of circumcision? Great in every way. First of all, because the Jews were entrusted with God’s utterances. What follows then? Some, no doubt, showed a want of faith; but will their want of faith make God break faith? Heaven forbid! God must prove true, though every man prove a liar! As Scripture says of God — ‘That thou mayest be pronounced righteous in what thou sayest, and gain thy cause when men would judge thee.’

**5** But what if our wrong-doing makes God’s righteousness all the clearer? Will God be wrong in inflicting punishment? (I can but speak as a man.) Heaven forbid! Otherwise how can God judge the world?

But, if my falsehood redounds to the glory of God, by making his truthfulness more apparent, why am I like others, still condemned as a sinner? Why should we not say — as some people slanderously assert that we do say — ‘Let us do evil that good may come’? The condemnation of such men is indeed just!

What follows, then? Are we Jews in any way superior to others? Not at all. Our indictment against both Jews and Greeks was that all alike were in subjection to sin. As Scripture says — ‘There is not even one who is righteous, not one who understands, not one who is searching for God! They have all gone astray; they have one and all become depraved; there is no one who is doing good — no, not one!’ ‘Their throats are like opened graves; they deceive with their tongues.’ ‘The venom of serpents lies behind their lips,’ ‘And their mouths are full of bitter curses.’ ‘Swift are their feet to shed blood. Distress and trouble dog their steps, and the path of peace they do not know.’ ‘The fear of God is not before their eyes.’ Now we know that everything said in the Law is addressed to those who are under its authority, in order that every mouth may be closed, and the whole world become liable to the judgment of God. For ‘no human being will be pronounced righteous before God’ as the result of obedience to Law; for it is Law that shows what sin is.

But now, quite apart from Law, the Divine Righteousness stands revealed, and to it the Law and the Prophets bear witness — the Divine Righteousness which is bestowed, through faith in Jesus Christ, upon all, without distinction, who believe in him. For all have sinned, and all fall short of God’s glorious ideal, but, in his loving-kindness, are being freely pronounced righteous through the deliverance found in Christ Jesus. For God set him before the world, to be, by the shedding of his blood, a means of reconciliation through faith. And this God did to prove his righteousness, and because, in his forbearance, he had passed over the sins that men had previously committed; as a proof, I repeat, at the present time, of his own righteousness, that he might be righteous in our eyes, and might pronounce righteous the man who takes his stand on faith in Jesus.

## Romans 4

27 What, then, becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what sort of Law? A Law requiring obedience? No, a Law requiring faith.

28 For we conclude that a man is pronounced righteous on the  
29 ground of faith, quite apart from obedience to Law. Or can it be  
30 that God is the God only of the Jews? Is not he also the God of the  
Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also, since there is only one God, and  
he will pronounce those who are circumcised righteous as the  
result of faith, and also those who are uncircumcised on their  
showing the same faith.

31 Do we, then, use this faith to abolish Law? Heaven forbid! No, we  
establish Law.

4 What then, it may be asked, are we to say about Abraham, the an-  
2 cestor of our nation? If he was pronounced righteous as the result  
of obedience, then he has something to boast of. Yes, but not be-  
3 fore God. For what are the words of Scripture? 'Abraham had faith  
4 in God, and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.' Now  
wages are regarded as due to the man who works, not as a favor, but  
5 as a debt; while, as for the man who does not rely upon his obedi-  
ence, but has faith in him who can pronounce the godless righteous,  
his faith is regarded by God as righteousness.

6 In precisely the same way David speaks of the blessing  
pronounced upon the man who is regarded by God as righteous  
7 apart from actions — 'Blessed are those whose wrong-doings have  
8 been forgiven and over whose sins a veil has been drawn! Blessed  
9 the man whom the Lord will never regard as sinful!' Is this  
blessing, then, pronounced upon the circumcised only or upon the  
uncircumcised as well? We say that — 'Abraham's faith was  
10 regarded by God as righteousness.' Under what circumstances,  
11 then, did this take place? After his circumcision or before it? Not  
after, but before. And it was as a sign of this that he received the  
rite of circumcision — to attest the righteousness due to the faith of  
an uncircumcised man — in order that he might be the father of all  
who have faith in God even when uncircumcised, that they also  
12 may be regarded by God as righteous; as well as father of the  
circumcised — to those who are not only circumcised, but who



also follow our father Abraham in that faith which he had while still uncircumcised. For the promise that he should inherit the world did not come to Abraham or his descendants through Law, but through the righteousness due to faith. If those who take their stand on Law are to inherit the world, then faith is robbed of its meaning and the promise comes to nothing! Law entails punishment; but, where no Law exists, no breach of it is possible. That is why all is made to depend upon faith, that all may be God's gift, and in order that the fulfillment of the promise may be made certain for all Abraham's descendants — not only for those who take their stand on the Law, but also for those who take their stand on the faith of Abraham. (He is the Father of us all; as Scripture says — 'I have made thee the Father of many nations.') And this they do in the sight of that God in whom Abraham had faith, and who gives life to the dead, and speaks of what does not yet exist as if it did. With no ground for hope, Abraham, sustained by hope, put faith in God; in order that, in fulfillment of the words — 'So many shall thy descendants be,' he might become 'the Father of many nations.' Though he was nearly a hundred years old, yet his faith did not fail him, even when he thought of his own body, then utterly worn out, and remembered that Sarah was past bearing children. He was not led by want of faith to doubt God's promise. On the contrary, his faith gave him strength; and he praised God, in the firm conviction that what God has promised he is also able to carry out. And therefore his faith 'was regarded as righteousness.' Now these words — 'it was regarded as righteousness' — were not written with reference to Abraham only; but also with reference to us. Our faith, too, will be regarded by God in the same light, if we have faith in him who raised Jesus, our Lord, from the dead; for Jesus 'was given up to death to atone for our offences,' and was raised to life that we might be pronounced righteous.

Therefore, having been pronounced righteous as the result of faith, let us enjoy peace with God through Jesus Christ, our Lord. It is through him that, by reason of our faith, we have obtained admission to that place in God's favor in which we now stand. So let

## Romans 5

3 us exult in our hope of attaining God's glorious ideal. And not only  
4 that, but let us also exult in our troubles; for we know that trouble develops endurance, and endurance strength of character, and  
5 strength of character hope, and that 'hope never disappoints.' For the love of God has filled our hearts through the Holy Spirit which  
6 was given us; seeing that, while we were still powerless, Christ, in  
7 God's good time, died on behalf of the godless. Even for an upright man scarcely any one will die. For a really good man perhaps some  
8 one might even dare to die. But God puts his love for us beyond all doubt by the fact that Christ died on our behalf while we were  
9 still sinners. Much more, then, now that we have been pronounced righteous by virtue of the shedding of his blood, shall we be saved  
10 through him from the Wrath of God. For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, much more, now that we have become reconciled, shall we be saved  
11 by virtue of Christ's Life. And not only that, but we exult in God, through Jesus Christ, our Lord, through whom we have now obtained this reconciliation.

12 Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and through sin came death; so, also, death spread to all mankind, because all men had sinned. Even before the time of the Law there was sin in the world; but sin cannot be charged against a man where no  
13 Law exists. Yet, from Adam to Moses, Death reigned even over those whose sin was not a breach of a law, as Adam's was. And Adam foreshadows the One to come. But there is a contrast between Adam's Offence and God's gracious Gift. For, if by reason of the offence of the one man the whole race died, far more were the loving-kindness of God, and the gift given in the loving-kindness of the one man, Jesus  
14 Christ, lavished upon the whole race. There is a contrast, too, between the gift and the results of the one man's sin. The judgment, which followed upon the one man's sin, resulted in condemnation, but God's gracious Gift, which followed upon many offences, resulted in a decree of righteousness. For if, by reason of the offence  
15 of the one man, Death reigned through that one man, far more will

those, upon whom God's loving-kindness and his gift of righteousness are lavished, find Life, and reign through the one man, Jesus Christ. Briefly then, just as a single offence resulted for all mankind in condemnation, so, too, a single decree of righteousness resulted for all mankind in that declaration of righteousness which brings Life. For, as through the disobedience of the one man the whole race was rendered sinful, so, too, through the obedience of the one, the whole race will be rendered righteous. Law was introduced in order that offences might be multiplied. But, where sins were multiplied, the loving-kindness of God was lavished the more, in order than, just as Sin had reigned in the realm of Death, so, too, might Loving-kindness reign through righteousness, and result in Immortal Life, through Jesus Christ, our Lord.

What are we to say, then? Are we to continue to sin, in order that God's loving-kindness may be multiplied? Heaven forbid! We became dead to sin, and how can we go on living in it? Or can it be that you do not know that all of us, who were baptized into union with Christ Jesus, in our baptism shared his death? Consequently, through sharing his death in our baptism, we were buried with him; that, just as Christ was raised from the dead by a manifestation of the Father's power, so we also may live a new Life. If we have become united with him by the act symbolic of his death, surely we shall also become united with him by the act symbolic of his resurrection. We recognize the truth that our old self was crucified with Christ, in order that the body, the stronghold of Sin, might be rendered powerless, so that we should no longer be slaves to Sin. For the man who has so died has been pronounced righteous and released from Sin. And our belief is, that, as we have shared Christ's Death, we shall also share his Life. We know, indeed, that Christ, having once risen from the dead, will not die again. Death has power over him no longer. For the death that he died was a death to sin, once and for all. But the Life that he now lives, he lives for God. So let it be with you — regard yourselves as dead to sin, but as living for God, through union with Christ Jesus. Therefore do not let Sin reign in your mortal bodies and compel you to obey its cravings. Do not

offer any part of your bodies to Sin, in the cause of unrighteousness, but once for all offer yourselves to God (as those who, though once dead, now have Life), and devote every part of your bodies to the  
 14 cause of righteousness. For Sin shall not lord it over you. You are living under the reign, not of Law, but of Love.

15 What follows, then? Are we to sin because we are living under  
 16 the reign of Love and not of Law? Heaven forbid! Surely you know that, when you offer yourselves as servants, to obey any one, you are the servants of the person whom you obey, whether the service be that of Sin which leads to Death, or that of Duty which leads  
 17 to Righteousness. God be thanked that, though you were once servants of Sin, yet you learned to give hearty obedience to that form  
 18 of doctrine under which you were placed. Set free from the control of Sin, you became servants to Righteousness. I can but speak as  
 19 men do because of the weakness of your earthly nature. Once you offered every part of your bodies to the service of impurity, and of wickedness, which leads to further wickedness. Now, in the same way, offer them to the service of Righteousness, which leads to ho-  
 20 liness. While you were still servants of Sin, you were free as regards  
 21 Righteousness. But what were the fruits that you reaped from those things of which you are now ashamed? For the end of such things  
 22 is Death. But now that you have been set free from the control of Sin, and have become servants to God, the fruit that you reap is an  
 23 ever-increasing holiness, and the end Immortal Life. The wages of Sin are Death, but the gift of God is Immortal Life, through union with Christ Jesus, our Lord.

7 Surely, Brothers, you know (for I am speaking to men who know what Law means) that Law has power over a man only as long as  
 2 he lives. For example, by law a married woman is bound to her husband while he is living; but, if her husband dies, she is set free from  
 3 the law that bound her to him. If, then, during her husband's life-time, she unites herself to another man, she will be called an adulteress; but, if her husband dies, the law has no further hold on her,  
 4 nor, if she unites herself to another man, is she an adulteress. And

so with you, my Brothers; as far as the Law was concerned, you underwent death in the crucified body of the Christ, so that you might be united to another, to him who was raised from the dead, in order that our lives might bear fruit for God. When we were living merely earthly lives, our sinful passions, aroused by the Law, were active in every part of our bodies, with the result that our lives bore fruit for Death. But now we are set free from the Law, because we are dead to that which once kept us under restraint; and so we serve under new, spiritual conditions, and not under old, written regulations.

What are we to say, then? That Law and sin are the same thing? Heaven forbid! On the contrary, I should not have learned what sin is, had not it been for Law. If the Law did not say 'Thou shalt not covet,' I should not know what it is to covet. But sin took advantage of the Commandment to arouse in me every form of covetousness, for where there is no consciousness of Law sin shows no sign of life. There was a time when I myself, unconscious of Law, was alive; but when the Commandment was brought home to me, sin sprang into life, while I died! The very Commandment that should have meant Life I found to result in Death! Sin took advantage of the Commandment to deceive me, and used it to bring about my Death. And so the Law is holy, and each Commandment is also holy, and just, and good. Did, then, a thing, which in itself was good, involve Death in my case? Heaven forbid! It was sin that involved Death; so that, by its use of what I regarded as good to bring about my Death, its true nature might appear; and in this way the Commandment showed how intensely sinful sin is. We know that the Law is spiritual, but I am earthly — sold into slavery to Sin. I do not understand my own actions. For I am so far from habitually doing what I want to do, that I find myself doing the very thing that I hate. But when I do what I want not to do, I am admitting that the Law is right. This being so, the action is no longer my own, but that of Sin which is within me. I know that there is nothing good in me — I mean in my earthly nature. For, although it is easy for me to want to do right, to act rightly is not easy. I fail to do the good thing that I want to do, but the bad thing that I want not to do — that I habitually do.

## Romans 8

20 But, when I do the very thing that I want not to do, the action is  
21 no longer my own, but that of Sin which is within me. This, then,  
is the law that I find — when I want to do right, wrong presents it-  
22 self! At heart I delight in the Law of God; but throughout my body  
I see a different law, one which is in conflict with the law accepted  
by my reason, and which endeavors to make me a prisoner to that  
23 law of Sin which exists throughout my body. Miserable man that I  
am! Who will deliver me from the body that is bringing me to this  
24 Death? Thank God, there is deliverance through Jesus Christ, our  
Lord! Well then, for myself, with my reason I serve the Law of God,  
25 but with my earthly nature the Law of Sin.

8 There is, therefore, now no condemnation for those who are in  
2 union with Christ Jesus; for through your union with Christ Jesus,  
the Law of the life-giving Spirit has set you free from the Law of  
3 Sin and Death. What Law could not do, in so far as our earthly  
nature weakened its action, God did, by sending his own Son, with  
a nature resembling our sinful nature, to atone for sin. He  
4 condemned sin in that earthly nature, so that the requirements of  
the Law might be satisfied in us who live now in obedience, not to  
5 our earthly nature, but to the Spirit. They who follow their earthly  
nature are earthly-minded, while they who follow the Spirit are  
6 spiritually minded. To be earthly-minded means Death, to be  
7 spiritually minded means Life and Peace; because to be  
earthly-minded is to be an enemy to God, for such a mind does not  
8 submit to the Law of God, nor indeed can it do so. They who are  
9 earthly cannot please God. You, however, are not earthly but  
spiritual, since the Spirit of God lives within you. Unless a man has  
10 the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Christ; but, if Christ is  
within you, then, though the body is dead as a consequence of sin,  
11 the spirit is Life as a consequence of righteousness. And, if the  
Spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead lives within you, he  
who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will give Life even to your  
mortal bodies, through his Spirit living within you.

12 So then, Brothers, we owe nothing to our earthly nature, that we  
13 should live in obedience to it. If you live in obedience to your earthly

nature, you will inevitably die; but if, by the power of the Spirit, you put an end to the evil habits of the body, you will live. All who are guided by the Spirit of God are Sons of God. For you did not receive the spirit of a slave, to fill you once more with fear, but the spirit of a son which leads us to cry 'Abba, Our Father.' The Spirit himself unites with our spirits in bearing witness to our being God's children, and if children, then heirs — heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ, since we share Christ's sufferings in order that we may also share his Glory.

I do not count the sufferings of our present life worthy of mention when compared with the Glory that is to be revealed and bestowed upon us. All Nature awaits with eager expectation the appearing of the Sons of God. For Nature was made subject to imperfection — not by its own choice, but owing to him who made it so — yet not without the hope that some day Nature, also, will be set free from enslavement to decay, and will attain to the freedom which will mark the Glory of the Children of God. We know, indeed, that all Nature alike has been groaning in the pains of labor to this very hour. And not Nature only; but we ourselves also, though we have already a first gift of the Spirit — we ourselves are inwardly groaning, while we eagerly await our full adoption as Sons — the redemption of our bodies. By our hope we were saved. But the thing hoped for is no longer an object of hope when it is before our eyes; for who hopes for what is before his eyes? But when we hope for what is not before our eyes, then we wait for it with patience.

So, also, the Spirit supports us in our weakness. We do not even know how to pray as we should; but the Spirit himself pleads for us in sighs that can find no utterance. Yet he who searches all our hearts knows what the Spirit's meaning is, because the pleadings of the Spirit for Christ's People are in accordance with his will. But we do know that God causes all things to work together for the good of those who love him — those who have received the Call in accordance with his purpose. For those whom God chose from the first he also destined from the first to be transformed into likeness to his Son, so that his Son might be the eldest among many Brothers. And

those whom God destined for this he also called; and those whom he called he also pronounced righteous; and those whom he pronounced righteous he also brought to Glory.

- 31 What are we to say, then, in the light of all this?  
If God is on our side, who can there be against us?
- 32 God did not withhold his own Son, but gave him up on behalf of us all; will he not, then, with him, freely give us all things?
- 33 Who will bring a charge against any of God's People? He who pronounces them righteous is God!
- 34 Who is there to condemn them? He who died for us is Christ Jesus! — or, rather, it was he who was raised from the dead, and who is now at God's right hand and is even pleading on our behalf!
- 35 Who is there to separate us from the love of the Christ? Will trouble, or difficulty, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or danger, or the sword?
- 36 Scripture says — 'For thy sake we are being killed all the day long,  
37 We are regarded as sheep to be slaughtered.' Yet amidst all these  
38 things we more than conquer through him who loved us! For I am persuaded that neither Death, nor Life, nor Angels, nor Archangels,  
39 nor the Present, nor the Future, nor any Powers, nor Height, nor Depth, nor any other created thing, will be able to separate us from the love of God revealed in Christ Jesus, our Lord!
- 9 I am speaking the truth as one in union with Christ; it is no lie;  
2 and my conscience, enlightened by the Holy Spirit, bears me out when I say that there is a great weight of sorrow upon me and that  
3 my heart is never free from pain. I could wish that I were myself accursed and severed from the Christ, for the sake of my Brothers  
4 — my own countrymen. For they are Israelites, and theirs are the adoption as Sons, the visible Presence, the Covenants, the revealed  
5 Law, the Temple worship, and the Promises. They are descended from the Patriarchs; and, as far as his human nature was concerned, from them came the Christ — he who is supreme over all things, God for ever blessed. Amen.



Not that God's Word has failed. For it is not all who are descended 6  
 from Israel who are true Israelites; nor, because they are Abraham's 7  
 descendants, are they all his Children; but — 'It is Isaac's children 8  
 who will be called thy descendants.' This means that it is not the 8  
 children born in the course of nature who are God's Children, but 9  
 it is the children born in fulfillment of the Promise who are to be 9  
 regarded as Abraham's descendants. For these words are the words 9  
 of a promise — 'About this time I will come, and Sarah shall have 10  
 a son.' Nor is that all. There is also the case of Rebecca, when she 10  
 was about to bear children to our ancestor Isaac. For in order that 11  
 the purpose of God, working through selection, might not fail — a 11  
 selection depending, not on obedience, but on his Call — Rebecca 12  
 was told, before her children were born and before they had done 12  
 anything either right or wrong, that 'the elder would be a servant 12  
 to the younger.' The words of Scripture are — 'I loved Jacob, but I 13  
 hated Esau.'

What are we to say, then? Is God guilty of injustice? Heaven 14  
 forbid! For his words to Moses are — 'I will take pity on whom I 15  
 take pity, and be merciful to whom I am merciful.' So, then, all 16  
 depends, not on human wishes or human efforts, but on God's 17  
 mercy. In Scripture, again, it is said to Pharaoh — 'It was for this 17  
 very purpose that I raised thee to the throne, to show my power by 18  
 my dealings with thee, and to make my name known throughout 18  
 the world.' So, then, where God wills, he takes pity, and where he 19  
 wills, he hardens the heart. Perhaps you will say to me — 'How 19  
 can any one still be blamed? For who withstands his purpose?' I 20  
 might rather ask 'Who are you who are arguing with God?' Does a 20  
 thing which a man has molded say to him who has molded it 'Why 21  
 did you make me like this?' Has not the potter absolute power over 21  
 his clay, so that out of the same lump he makes one thing for better, 22  
 and another for common, use? And what if God, intending to 22  
 reveal his displeasure and make his power known, bore most 23  
 patiently with the objects of his displeasure, though they were fit 23  
 only to be destroyed, so as to make known his surpassing glory in 23  
 dealing with the objects of his mercy, whom he prepared

24 beforehand for glory, and whom he called — even us — Not only  
 25 from among the Jews but from among the Gentiles also! This,  
 indeed, is what he says in the Book of Hosea — ‘I will call those  
 my People who were not my People, and her my beloved who was  
 26 not beloved. And in the very place where it was said to them —  
 “Ye are not my People”, they shall be called Sons of the Living  
 27 God.’ And Isaiah cries aloud over Israel — ‘Though the Sons of  
 Israel are like the sand of the sea in number, only a remnant of  
 28 them shall escape! For the Lord will execute his sentence upon the  
 29 world, fully and without delay.’ It is as Isaiah foretold — ‘Had not  
 the Lord of Hosts spared some few of our race to us, we should  
 have become like Sodom and been made to resemble Gomorrah.’

30 What are we to say, then? Why, that Gentiles, who were not in  
 search of righteousness, secured it — a righteousness which was  
 31 the result of faith; while Israel, which was in search of a Law which  
 32 would ensure righteousness, failed to discover one. And why? Be-  
 cause they looked to obedience, and not to faith, to secure it. They  
 33 stumbled over ‘the Stumbling-block.’ As Scripture says — ‘See, I  
 place a Stumbling-block in Zion — a Rock which shall prove a hin-  
 drance; and he who believes in him shall have no cause for shame.’

10 Brothers, my heart’s desire and prayer to God for my People is  
 2 for their Salvation. I can testify that they are zealous for the honor  
 3 of God; but they are not guided by true insight, for, in their igno-  
 rance of the Divine Righteousness, and in their eagerness to set up  
 a righteousness of their own, they refused to accept with submis-  
 4 sion the Divine Righteousness. For Christ has brought Law to an  
 end, so that righteousness may be obtained by every one who be-  
 5 lieves in him. For Moses writes that, as for the righteousness which  
 6 results from Law, ‘those who practice it will find Life through it.’ But  
 the righteousness which results from faith finds expression in these  
 words — ‘Do not say to yourself “Who will go up into heaven?”’  
 7 — which means to bring Christ down — ‘ or “Who will go down  
 into the depths below?”’ — which means to bring Christ up from  
 8 the dead. No, but what does it say? ‘The Message of Faith’ which  
 9 we proclaim. For, if with your lips you acknowledge the truth of

the Message that JESUS IS LORD, and believe in your heart that God raised him from the dead, you shall be saved. For with their hearts men believe and so attain to righteousness, while with their lips they make their Profession of Faith and so find Salvation. As the passage of Scripture says — ‘No one who believes in him shall have any cause for shame.’ For no distinction is made between the Jew and the Greek, for all have the same Lord, and he is bountiful to all who invoke him. For ‘every one who invokes the Name of the Lord shall be saved.’ But how, it may be asked, are they to invoke one in whom they have not learned to believe? And how are they to believe in one whose words they have not heard? And how are they to hear his words unless some one proclaims him? And how are men to proclaim him unless they are sent as his messengers? As Scripture says — ‘How beautiful are the feet of those who bring good news!’

Still, it may be said, every one did not give heed to the Good News. No, for Isaiah asks — ‘Lord, who has believed our teaching?’ And so we gather, faith is a result of teaching, and the teaching comes in the Message of Christ. But I ask ‘Is it possible that men have never heard?’ No, indeed, for — ‘Their voices spread through all the earth, and their Message to the very ends of the world.’ But again I ask ‘Did not the people of Israel understand? First there is Moses, who says — ‘I, the Lord, will stir you to rivalry with a nation which is no nation; Against an undiscerning nation I will arouse your anger.’ And Isaiah says boldly — ‘I was found by those who were not seeking me; I made myself known to those who were not inquiring of me. But of the people of Israel he says — ‘All day long I have stretched out my hands to a people who disobey and contradict.’

I ask, then, ‘Has God rejected his People?’ Heaven forbid! For I myself am an Israelite, a descendant of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin. God has not rejected his People, whom he chose from the first. Have you forgotten the words of Scripture in the story of Elijah — how he appeals to God against Israel? ‘Lord, they have killed thy Prophets, they have pulled down thy altars, and I only am left; and now they are eager to take my life.’ But what was the divine

response? 'I have kept for myself seven thousand men who have  
5 never bowed the knee to Baal.' And so in our own time, too, there  
6 is to be found a remnant of our nation selected by God in love. But  
if in love, then no longer as a result of obedience. Otherwise love  
7 would cease to be love. What follows from this? Why, that Israel  
as a nation failed to secure what it was seeking, while those whom  
8 God selected did secure it. The rest grew callous; as Scripture says —  
'God has given them a deadness of mind — eyes that are not to see  
9 and ears that are not to hear — and it is so to this very day.' David,  
too, says — 'May their feasts prove a snare and a trap to them —  
10 a hindrance and a retribution; may their eyes be darkened, so that  
11 they cannot see; and do thou always make their backs to bend.' I ask  
then — 'Was their stumbling to result in their fall?' Heaven forbid!  
On the contrary, through their falling away Salvation has reached  
12 the Gentiles, to stir the rivalry of Israel. And, if their falling away  
has enriched the world, and their failure has enriched the Gentiles,  
how much more will result from their full restoration!

13 But I am speaking to you who were Gentiles. Being myself an  
Apostle to the Gentiles, I exalt my office, in the hope that I may stir  
15 my countrymen to rivalry, and so save some of them. For, if their be-  
ing cast aside has meant the reconciliation of the world, what will  
16 their reception mean, but Life from the dead? If the first handful of  
dough is holy, so is the whole mass; and if the root is holy, so are the  
17 branches. Some, however, of the branches were broken off, and you,  
who were only a wild olive, were grafted in among them, and came  
to share with them the root which is the source of the richness of  
18 the cultivated olive. Yet do not exult over the other branches. But, if  
you do exult over them, remember that you do not support the root,  
19 but that the root supports you. But branches, you will say, were bro-  
20 ken off, so that I might be grafted in. True; it was because of their  
want of faith that they were broken off, and it is because of your  
faith that you are standing. Do not think too highly of yourself, but  
21 beware. For, if God did not spare the natural branches, neither will  
22 he spare you. See, then, both the goodness and the severity of God  
— his severity towards those who fell, and his goodness towards

you, provided that you continue to confide in that goodness; otherwise you, also, will be cut off. And they, too, if they do not continue in their unbelief, will be grafted in; for God has it in his power to graft them in again. If you were cut off from your natural stock — a wild olive — and were grafted, contrary to the course of nature, upon a good olive, much more will they — the natural branches — be grafted back into their parent tree.

Brothers, for fear that you should think too highly of yourselves, I want you to recognize the truth, hitherto hidden, that the callousness which has come over Israel is only partial, and will continue only till the whole Gentile world has been gathered in. And then all Israel shall be saved. As Scripture says — ‘From Zion will come the Deliverer; he will banish ungodliness from Jacob. And they shall see the fulfillment of my Covenant, when I have taken away their sins.’ From the stand-point of the Good News, the Jews are God’s enemies on your account; but from the stand-point of God’s selection, they are dear to him on account of the Patriarchs. For God never regrets his gifts or his Call. Just as you at one time were disobedient to him, but have now found mercy in the day of their disobedience; so, too, they have now become disobedient in your day of mercy, in order that they also in their turn may now find mercy. For God has given all alike over to disobedience, that to all alike he may show mercy. Oh! the unfathomable wisdom and knowledge of God! How inscrutable are his judgments, how untraceable his ways! Yes — ‘Who has ever comprehended the mind of the Lord? Who has ever become his counselor? Or who has first given to him, so that he may claim a recompense?’ For all things are from him, through him, and for him. And to him be all glory for ever and ever! Amen.

I entreat you, then, Brothers, by the mercies of God, to offer your bodies as a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, for this is your rational worship. Do not conform to the fashion of this world; but be transformed by the complete change that has come over your minds, so that you may discern what God’s will is — all that is good, acceptable, and perfect.

- 3 In fulfillment of the charge with which I have been entrusted, I bid  
every one of you not to think more highly of himself than he ought  
to think, but to think till he learns to think soberly — in accordance  
4 with the measure of faith that God has allotted to each. For, just as  
in the human body there is a union of many parts, and each part has  
5 its own function, so we, by our union in Christ, many though we are,  
form but one body, and individually we are related one to another  
6 as its parts. Since our gifts differ in accordance with the particular  
charge entrusted to us, if our gift is to preach, let our preaching cor-  
7 respond to our faith; if it is to minister to others, let us devote our-  
8 selves to our ministry; the teacher to his teaching, the speaker to his  
exhortation. Let the man who gives in charity do so with a generous  
heart; let him who is in authority exercise due diligence; let him who  
9 shows kindness do so in a cheerful spirit. Let your love be sincere.  
10 Hate the wrong; cling to the right. In brotherly love, be affection-  
ate to one another; in showing respect, set an example of deference  
11 to one another; never flagging in zeal; fervent in spirit; serving the  
12 Master; rejoicing in your hope; steadfast under persecution; perse-  
13 vering in prayer; relieving the wants of Christ's People; devoted to  
14 hospitality. Bless your persecutors — bless and never curse. Rejoice  
with those who are rejoicing, and weep with those who are weep-  
16 ing. Let the same spirit of sympathy animate you all, not a spirit of  
pride; be glad to associate with the lowly. Do not think too highly  
17 of yourselves. Never return injury for injury. Aim at doing what all  
18 men will recognize as honorable. If it is possible, as far as rests with  
19 you, live peaceably with every one. Never avenge yourselves, dear  
friends, but make way for the Wrath of God; for Scripture declares  
20 — “‘It is for me to avenge, I will requite,’ says the Lord.’ Rather —  
‘If your enemy is hungry, feed him; if he is thirsty, give him to drink.  
21 By doing this you will heap coals of fire upon his head.’ Never be  
conquered by evil, but conquer evil with good.
- 13 Let every one obey the supreme Authorities. For no Authority  
exists except by the will of God, and the existing Authorities have  
2 been appointed by God. Therefore he who sets himself against the  
authorities is resisting God's appointment, and those who resist will

bring a judgment upon themselves. A good action has nothing to 3  
 fear from Rulers; a bad action has. Do you want to have no reason  
 to fear the Authorities? Then do what is good, and you will win  
 their praise. For they are God's servants appointed for your good. 4  
 But, if you do what is wrong, you may well be afraid; for the sword  
 they carry is not without meaning! They are God's servants to inflict  
 his punishments on those who do wrong. You are bound, therefore, 5  
 to obey, not only through fear of God's punishments, but also as a  
 matter of conscience. This, too, is the reason for your paying taxes; 6  
 for the officials are God's officers, devoting themselves to this special  
 work. In all cases pay what is due from you — tribute where tribute 7  
 is due, taxes where taxes are due, respect where respect is due, and  
 honor where honor is due.

Owe nothing to any one except brotherly love; for he who loves 8  
 his fellow men has satisfied the Law. The commandments, 'Thou 9  
 shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal,  
 Thou shalt not covet,' and whatever other commandment there is,  
 are all summed up in the words — 'Thou shalt love thy neighbor  
 as thou dost thyself.' Love never wrongs a neighbor. Therefore Love 10  
 fully satisfies the Law. This I say, because you know the crisis that 11  
 we have reached, for the time has already come for you to rouse  
 yourselves from sleep; our Salvation is nearer now than when we  
 accepted the Faith.

The night is almost gone; the day is near. Therefore let us have 12  
 done with the deeds of Darkness, and arm ourselves with the  
 weapons of Light. Being in the light of Day, let us live becomingly, 13  
 not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lust and licentiousness, not  
 in quarreling and jealousy. No! Arm yourselves with the spirit of 14  
 the Lord Jesus Christ, and spend no thought on your earthly  
 nature, to satisfy its cravings.

As for those whose faith is weak, always receive them as friends, 14  
 but not for the purpose of passing judgment on their scruples. One 2  
 man's faith permits of his eating food of all kinds, while another  
 whose faith is weak eats only vegetable food. The man who eats 3  
 meat must not despise the man who abstains from it; nor must the

man who abstains from eating meat pass judgment on the one who  
4 eats it, for God himself has received him. Who are you, that you  
should pass judgment on the servant of another? His standing or  
falling concerns his own master. And stand he will, for his Master  
5 can enable him to stand. Again, one man considers some days to  
be more sacred than others, while another considers all days to be  
6 alike. Every one ought to be fully convinced in his own mind. He  
who observes a day, observes it to the Master's honor. He, again,  
who eats meat eats it to the Master's honor, for he gives thanks to  
God; while he who abstains from it abstains from it to the Master's  
7 honor, and also gives thanks to God. There is not one of us whose  
life concerns himself alone, and not one of us whose death concerns  
8 himself alone; for, if we live, our life is for the Master, and, if we  
die, our death is for the Master. Whether, then, we live or die we  
9 belong to the Master. The very purpose for which Christ died and  
came back to life was this — that he might be Lord over both the  
10 dead and the living. I would ask the one man 'Why do you judge  
your Brother?' And I would ask the other 'Why do you despise your  
11 Brother?' For we shall all stand before the Bar of God. For Scripture  
says — "'As surely as I live," says the Lord, "every knee shall bend  
before me; and every tongue shall make acknowledgment to God."'  
12 So, then, each one of us will have to render account of himself to  
God.

13 Let us, then, cease to judge one another. Rather let this be your  
resolve — never to place a stumbling-block or an obstacle in a  
14 Brother's way. Through my union with the Lord Jesus, I know and  
am persuaded that nothing is 'defiling in itself.' A thing is  
15 'defiling' only to him who holds it to be so. If, for the sake of what  
you eat, you wound your Brother's feelings, your life has ceased to  
be ruled by love. Do not, by what you eat, ruin a man for whom  
16 Christ died! Do not let what is right for you become a matter of  
reproach. For the Kingdom of God does not consist of eating and  
17 drinking, but of righteousness and peace and gladness through the  
presence of the Holy Spirit. He who serves the Christ in this way  
18 pleases God, and wins the approval of his fellow men. Therefore  
19



our efforts should be directed towards all that makes for peace and the mutual building up of character. Do not undo God's work for the sake of what you eat. Though everything is 'clean,' yet, if a man eats so as to put a stumbling-block in the way of others, he does wrong. The right course is to abstain from meat or wine or, indeed, anything that is a stumbling-block to your Brother. As for yourself — keep this faith of yours to yourself, as in the presence of God. Happy is he who never has to condemn himself in regard to the very thing which he thinks right! He, however, who has misgivings stands condemned if he still eats, because his doing so is not the result of faith. And anything not done as the result of faith is a sin.

We, the strong, ought to take on our own shoulders the weaknesses of those who are not strong, and not merely to please ourselves. Let each of us please his neighbor for his neighbor's good, to help in the building up of his character. Even the Christ did not please himself! On the contrary, as Scripture says of him — 'The reproaches of those who were reproaching thee fell upon me.' Whatever was written in the Scriptures in days gone by was written for our instruction, so that, through patient endurance, and through the encouragement drawn from the Scriptures, we might hold fast to our hope. And may God, the giver of this patience and this encouragement, grant you to be united in sympathy in Christ, so that with one heart and one voice you may praise the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore always receive one another as friends, just as the Christ himself received us, to the glory of God. For I tell you that Christ, in vindication of God's truthfulness, has become a minister of the Covenant of Circumcision, so that he may fulfil the promises made to our ancestors, and that the Gentiles also may praise God for his mercy. As Scripture says — 'Therefore will I make acknowledgment to thee among the Gentiles and sing in honor of thy Name.' And again it says — 'Rejoice, ye Gentiles, with God's People.' And yet again — 'Praise the Lord, all ye Gentiles, and let all Peoples sing his praises.' Again, Isaiah says — 'There shall be a Scion of the house of Jesse, One who is to arise to rule the Gentiles; on him

- 13 shall the Gentiles rest their hopes.' May God, who inspires our hope, grant you perfect happiness and peace in your faith, till you are filled with this hope by the power of the Holy Spirit.
- 14 I am persuaded, my Brothers — yes, I Paul, with regard to you — that you are yourselves full of kindness, furnished with all Christian
- 15 learning, and well able to give advice to one another. But in parts of this letter I have expressed myself somewhat boldly — by way of
- 16 refreshing your memories — because of the charge with which God has entrusted me, that I should be a minister of Christ Jesus to go to the Gentiles — that I should act as a priest of God's Good News, so that the offering up of the Gentiles may be an acceptable sacrifice,
- 17 consecrated by the Holy Spirit. It is, then, through my union with
- 18 Christ Jesus that I have a proud confidence in my work for God. For I will not dare to speak of anything but what Christ has done through
- 19 me to win the obedience of the Gentiles — by my words and actions, through the power displayed in signs and marvels, and through the power of the Holy Spirit. And so, starting from Jerusalem and its neighborhood, and going as far as Illyria, I have told in full the Good
- 20 News of the Christ; yet always with the ambition to tell the Good News where Christ's name had not previously been heard, so as to
- 21 avoid building upon another man's foundations. But as Scripture says — 'They to whom he had never been proclaimed shall see; and they who have never heard shall understand!'
- 22 That is why I have so often been prevented from coming to you.
- 23 But now there are no further openings for me in these parts, and I have for several years been longing to come to you whenever I may
- 24 be going to Spain. For my hope is to visit you on my journey, and then to be sent on my way by you, after I have first partly satisfied
- 25 myself by seeing something of you. Just now, however, I am on my
- 26 way to Jerusalem, to take help to Christ's People there. For Macedonia and Greece have been glad to make a collection for the poor
- 27 among Christ's People at Jerusalem. Yes, they were glad to do so; and indeed it is a duty which they owe to them. For the Gentile converts who have shared their spiritual blessings are in duty bound to
- 28 minister to them in the things of this world. When I have settled this

matter, and have secured to the poor at Jerusalem the enjoyment of these benefits, I shall go, by way of you, to Spain. And I know that, 29  
when I come to you, it will be with a full measure of blessing from Christ.

I beg you, then, Brothers, by Jesus Christ, our Lord, and by the 30  
love inspired by the Spirit, to join me in earnest prayer to God on my behalf. Pray that I may be rescued from those in Judea who reject the 31  
Faith, and that the help which I am taking to Jerusalem may prove acceptable to Christ's People; so that, God willing, I may be able to 32  
come to you with a joyful heart, and enjoy some rest among you. May God, the giver of peace, be with you all. Amen. 33

I commend to your care our Sister, Phoebe, who helps in the work 16  
of the Church at Cenchreae; and I ask you to give her a Christian 2  
welcome — one worthy of Christ's People — and to aid her in any matter in which she may need your assistance. She has proved herself a staunch friend to me and to many others.

Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, my fellow-workers in the 3  
Cause of Christ Jesus, who risked their own lives to save mine. It is 4  
not I alone who thank them, but all the Churches among the Gentiles thank them also. Give my greeting, also, to the Church 5  
that meets at their house, as well as to my dear friend Epaenetus, one of the first in Roman Asia to believe in Christ; to Mary, who 6  
worked hard for you; to Andronicus and Junias, my countrymen 7  
and once my fellow-prisoners, who are men of note among the Apostles, and who became Christians before I did; to my dear 8  
Christian friend Ampliatus; to Urban, our fellow-worker in the 9  
Cause of Christ, and to my dear friend Stachys; to that proved 10  
Christian Apelles; to the household of Aristobulus; to my 11  
countryman Herodion; to the Christians in the household of Narcissus; to Tryphaena and Tryphosa, who have worked hard for 12  
the Master; to my dear friend Persis, for she has done much hard work for the Master; to that eminent Christian, Rufus, and to his 13  
mother, who has been a mother to me also; to Asyncritus, Phlegon, 14  
Hermes, Patrobas, Hermas, and the Brothers with them; also to 15  
Philologus and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and to

- 16 all Christ's People who are with them. Greet one another with a sacred kiss. All the Churches of the Christ send you greetings.
- 17 I urge you, Brothers, to be on your guard against people who, by disregarding the teaching which you received, cause divisions and
- 18 create difficulties; dissociate yourselves from them. For such persons are not serving Christ, our Master, but are slaves to their own appetites; and, by their smooth words and flattery, they deceive simple-minded people. Every one has heard of your ready obedience.
- 19 It is true that I am very happy about you, but I want you to be well versed in all that is good, and innocent of all that is bad. And God,
- 20 the giver of peace, will before long crush Satan under your feet. May the blessing of Jesus, our Lord, be with you.
- 21 Timothy, my fellow-worker, sends you his greetings, and Lucius, Jason, and Sosipater, my countrymen, send theirs.
- 22 I Tertius, who am writing this letter, send you my Christian greeting.
- 23 My host Gaius, who extends his hospitality to the whole Church, sends you his greeting; and Erastus, the City Treasurer, and Quartus, our Brother, add theirs.
- 25 Now to him who is able to strengthen you, as promised in the Good News entrusted to me and in the proclamation of Jesus Christ, in accordance with the revelation of that hidden purpose, which in
- 26 past ages was kept secret but now has been revealed and, in obedience to the command of the Immortal God, made known through the writings of the Prophets to all nations, to secure submission
- 27 to the Faith — to him, I say, the wise and only God, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, all glory for ever and ever. Amen.

## 1 CORINTHIANS

## PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

To the Church of God in Corinth, to those who have been consecrated by union with Christ Jesus and called to become his People, and also to all, wherever they may be, who invoke the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ-their Master and ours, from Paul, who has  
 2 been called to be an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, And from Sosthenes, our Brother. May God, our Father, and the Lord Je-  
 3 sus Christ bless you and give you peace. I always thank God about  
 4 you for the blessing bestowed upon you in Christ Jesus. For through  
 5 union with him you were enriched in every way-in your power to  
 6 preach, and in your knowledge of the Truth; and so became your-  
 7 selves a confirmation of my testimony to the Christ. And thus there  
 8 is no gift in which you are deficient, while waiting for the Appear-  
 9 ing of our Lord Jesus Christ. And God himself will strengthen you  
 10 to the end, so that at the Day of our Lord Jesus Christ you may be  
 11 found blameless. God will not fail you, and it is he who called you  
 12 into communion with his Son, Jesus Christ, our Lord. But I appeal  
 13 to you, Brothers, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to agree in  
 14 what you profess, and not to allow divisions to exist among you,  
 15 but to be united-of one mind and of one opinion. For I have been  
 16 informed, my Brothers, by the members of Chloe's household, that  
 17 party feeling exists among you. I mean this, that every one of you  
 18 says either 'I follow Paul,' or 'I Apollos,' or 'I Kephas,' or 'I Christ.'

You have rent the Christ in pieces! Was it Paul who was crucified  
 for you? or were you baptized into the Faith of Paul? I am thank-  
 ful that I did not baptize any of you except Crispus and Gaius, so  
 that no one can say that you were baptized into my Faith. I baptized  
 also the household of Stephanas. I do not know that I baptized any  
 one else. My mission from Christ was not to baptize, but to tell the  
 Good News; not, however, in the language of philosophy, lest the  
 cross of the Christ should be robbed of its meaning. The Message of

## 1 Corinthians 2

the Cross is indeed mere folly to those who are in the path to Ruin, but to us who are in the path of Salvation it is the very power of  
19 God. For Scripture says-‘I will bring the philosophy of the philosophers to nought, and the shrewdness of the shrewd I will make of no  
20 account.’ Where is the Philosopher? where the Teacher of the Law? where the Disputant of to-day? Has not God shown the world’s philosophy to be folly? For since the world, in God’s wisdom, did not by  
21 its philosophy learn to know God, God saw fit, by the ‘folly’ of our proclamation, to save those who believe in Christ! While Jews ask for  
22 miraculous signs, and Greeks study philosophy, we are proclaiming Christ crucified!-to the Jews an obstacle, to the Gentiles mere folly,  
23 but to those who have received the Call, whether Jews or Greeks, Christ, the Power of God and the Wisdom of God! For God’s ‘folly’  
24 is wiser than men, and God’s ‘weakness’ is stronger than men. Look at the facts of your Call, Brothers. There are not many among you who are wise, as men reckon wisdom, not many who are influential,  
25 not many who are high-born; but God chose what the world counts foolish to put its wise men to shame, and God chose what the world counts weak to put its strong things to shame, and God chose what the world counts poor and insignificant — things that to  
26 it are unreal-to bring its ‘realities’ to nothing, so that in his presence no human being should boast. But you, by your union with Christ Jesus, belong to God; and Christ, by God’s will, became not only our  
27 Wisdom, but also our Righteousness, Holiness, and Deliverance, so that-in the words of Scripture-‘Let him who boasts make his boast  
28 of the Lord!’

For my own part, Brothers, when I came to you, it was with no display of eloquence or philosophy that I came to tell the hidden  
2 purpose of God; for I had determined that, while with you, I would know nothing but Jesus Christ-and him crucified! Indeed, when I came among you, I was weak, and full of fears, and in great  
3 anxiety. My Message and my Proclamation were not delivered in the persuasive language of philosophy, but were accompanied by  
4 the manifestation of spiritual power, so that your faith should be based, not on the philosophy of man, but on the power of God. Yet  
5  
6

there is a philosophy that we teach to those whose faith is  
 matured, but it is not the philosophy of to-day, nor that of the  
 leaders of to-day-men whose downfall is at hand. No, it is a divine  
 philosophy that we teach, one concerned with the hidden purpose  
 of God-that long-hidden philosophy which God, before time  
 began, destined for our glory. This philosophy is not known to any  
 of the leaders of to-day; for, had they known it, they would not  
 have crucified our glorified Lord. It is what Scripture speaks of  
 as-'What eye never saw, nor ear ever heard, what never entered the  
 mind of man-even all that God has prepared for those who love  
 him.' Yet to us God revealed it through his Spirit; for the Spirit  
 fathoms all things, even the inmost depths of God's being. For  
 what man is there who knows what a man is, except the man's  
 own spirit within him? So, also, no one comprehends what God is,  
 except the Spirit of God. And as for us, it is not the Spirit of the  
 World that we have received, but the Spirit that comes from God,  
 that we may realize the blessings given to us by him. And we  
 speak of these gifts, not in language taught by human philosophy,  
 but in language taught by the Spirit, explaining spiritual things in  
 spiritual words. The merely intellectual man rejects the teaching of  
 the Spirit of God; for to him it is mere folly; he cannot grasp it,  
 because it is to be understood only by spiritual insight. But the  
 man with spiritual insight is able to understand everything,  
 although he himself is understood by no one. For 'who has so  
 comprehended the mind of the Lord as to be able to instruct him?'  
 We, however, have the very mind of Christ.

But I, Brothers, could not speak to you as men with spiritual insight,  
 but only as worldly-minded-mere infants in the Faith of Christ. I  
 fed you with milk, not with solid food, for you were not then able  
 to take it. No, and even now you are not able; you are still worldly.  
 While there exist among you jealousy and party feeling, is it not  
 true that you are worldly, and are acting merely as other men do?  
 When one says 'I follow Paul,' and another 'I follow Apollos,' are  
 not you like other men? What, I ask, is Apollos? or what is Paul?  
 Servants through whom you were led to accept the Faith; and that

## 1 Corinthians 4

6 only as the Lord helped each of you. I planted, and Apollos watered,  
7 but it was God who caused the growth. Therefore neither the man  
who plants, nor the man who waters, is of any account, but only  
8 God who causes the growth. In this the man who plants and the  
man who waters are one; yet each will receive his own reward in  
9 proportion to his own labor. For we are God's fellow workers; you  
10 are God's harvest field, God's building. In fulfillment of the charge  
which God had entrusted to me, I laid the foundation like a skillful  
master-builder; but another man is now building upon it. Let every  
11 one take care how he builds; for no man can lay any other founda-  
12 tion than the one already laid-Jesus Christ. Whatever is used by  
those who build upon this foundation, whether gold, silver, costly  
13 stones, wood, hay, or straw, the quality of each man's work will be-  
come known, for the Day will make it plain; because that Day is  
to be ushered in with fire, and the fire itself will test the quality of  
14 every man's work. If any man's work, which he has built upon that  
15 foundation, still remains, he will gain a reward. If any man's work is  
burnt up, he will suffer loss; though he himself will escape, but only  
16 as one who has passed through fire. Do not you know that you are  
17 God's Temple, and that God's Spirit has his home in you? If any one  
destroys the Temple of God, God will destroy him; for the Temple  
18 of God is sacred, and so also are you. Let no one deceive himself.  
If any one among you imagines that, as regards this world, he is a  
19 wise man, let him become a 'fool,' that he may become wise. For in  
God's sight this world's wisdom is folly. Scripture tells of-'One who  
20 catches the wise in their own craftiness,' And it says again-'The Lord  
21 sees how fruitless are the deliberations of the wise.' Therefore let no  
22 one boast about men; for all things are yours — Whether Paul, or  
Apollos, or Kephas, or the world, or life, or death, or the present,  
23 or the future—all things are yours! But you are Christ's and Christ is  
4 God's.

Let men look upon us as Christ's servants, and as stewards of the  
2 hidden truths of God. Now what we look for in stewards is that  
3 they should be trustworthy. But it weighs very little with me that  
I am judged by you or by any human tribunal. No, I do not even



judge myself; for, though I am conscious of nothing against myself, 4  
 that does not prove me innocent. It is the Lord who is my judge.  
 Therefore do not pass judgment before the time, but wait till the 5  
 Lord comes. He will throw light upon what is now dark and ob-  
 scure, and will reveal the motives in men's minds; and then every  
 one will receive due praise from God. All this, Brothers, I have, for 6  
 your sakes, applied to Apollos and myself, so that, from our exam-  
 ple, you may learn to observe the precept-'Keep to what is written,'  
 that none of you may speak boastfully of one teacher to the dispar-  
 agement of another. For who makes any one of you superior to oth- 7  
 ers? And what have you that was not given you? But if you received  
 it as a gift, why do you boast as if you had not? Are you all so soon 8  
 satisfied? Are you so soon rich? Have you begun to reign without  
 us? Would indeed that you had, so that we also might reign with  
 you! For, as it seems to me, God has exhibited us, the Apostles, last 9  
 of all, as men doomed to death. We are made a spectacle to the uni-  
 verse, both to angels and to men! We, for Christ's sake, are 'fools,' 10  
 but you, by your union with Christ, are men of discernment. We are  
 weak, but you are strong. You are honored, but we are despised. To 11  
 this very hour we go hungry, thirsty, and naked; we are beaten; we  
 are homeless; we work hard, toiling with our own hands. We meet 12  
 abuse with blessings, we meet persecution with endurance, we meet  
 slander with gentle appeals. We have been treated as the scum of the 13  
 earth, the vilest of the vile, to this very hour. It is with no wish to 14  
 shame you that I am writing like this; but to warn you as my own  
 dear children. Though you may have thousands of instructors in the 15  
 Faith of Christ, yet you have not many fathers. It was I who, through  
 union with Christ Jesus, became your father by means of the Good  
 News. Therefore I entreat you-Follow my example. This is my reason 16  
 for sending Timothy to you. He is my own dear faithful child in the  
 Master's service, and he will remind you of my methods of teach-  
 ing the Faith of Christ Jesus-methods which I follow everywhere in  
 every Church. Some, I hear, are puffed up with pride, thinking that 18  
 I am not coming to you. But come to you I will, and that soon, if 19  
 it please the Lord; and then I shall find out, not what words these

## 1 Corinthians 5

20 men use who are so puffed up, but what power they possess; for  
21 the Kingdom of God is based, not on words, but on power. What do  
you wish? Am I to come to you with a rod, or in a loving and gentle  
5 spirit?

There is a wide-spread report respecting a case of immorality  
among you, and that, too, of a kind that does not occur even  
among the Gentiles-a man, I hear, is living with his father's wife!  
2 Instead of grieving over it and taking steps for the expulsion of the  
man who has done this thing, is it possible that you are still puffed  
3 up? For I myself, though absent in body, have been present with  
you in spirit, and in the name of our Lord Jesus I have already  
passed judgment, just as if I had been present, upon the man who  
4 has acted in this way. I have decided-having been present in spirit  
at your meetings, when the power of the Lord Jesus was with us-  
5 To deliver such a man as this over to Satan, that what is sensual in  
him may be destroyed, so that his spirit may be saved at the Day of  
6 the Lord. Your boasting is unseemly. Do not you know that even a  
7 little leaven leavens all the dough? Get rid entirely of the old  
leaven, so that you may be like new dough-free from leaven, as in  
truth you are. For our Passover Lamb is already sacrificed-Christ  
8 himself; therefore let us keep our festival, not with the leaven of  
former days, nor with the leaven of vice and wickedness, but with  
9 the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth. I told you, in my letter,  
10 not to associate with immoral people- - Not, of course, meaning  
men of the world who are in immoral, or who are covetous and  
grasping, or who worship idols; for then you would have to leave  
11 the world altogether. But, as things are, I say that you are not to  
associate with any one who, although a Brother in name, is  
immoral, or covetous, or an idolater, or abusive, or a drunkard, or  
12 grasping-no, not even to sit at table with such people. What have I  
to do with judging those outside the Church? Is it not for you to  
13 judge those who are within the Church, while God judges those  
6 who are outside? 'Put away the wicked man from among you.'

Can it be that, when one of you has a dispute with another, he dares  
to have his case tried before the heathen, instead of before Christ's

People? Do not you know that Christ's People will try the world? 2  
 And if the world is to be tried by you, are you unfit to try the most  
 trivial cases? Do not you know that we are to try angels-to say nothing 3  
 of the affairs of this life? Why, then, if you have cases relating 4  
 to the affairs of this life, do you set to try them men who carry no  
 weight with the Church? To your shame I ask it. Can it be that there 5  
 is not one man among you wise enough to decide between two of  
 his Brothers? Must Brother go to law with Brother, and that, too, 6  
 before unbelievers? To begin with, it is undoubtedly a loss to you 7  
 to have lawsuits with one another. Why not rather let yourselves be  
 wronged? Why not rather let yourselves be cheated? Instead of this, 8  
 you wrong and cheat others yourselves-yes, even your Brothers! Do 9  
 not you know that wrong-doers will have no share in God's Kingdom?  
 Do not be deceived. No one who is immoral, or an idolater, or an 10  
 adulterer, or licentious, or a sodomite, or a thief, or covetous,  
 or a drunkard, or abusive, or grasping, will have any share in God's 11  
 Kingdom. Such some of you used to be; but you washed yourselves  
 clean. You became Christ's People! you were pronounced righteous 12  
 through the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and through the Spirit  
 of our God! Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but everything is 13  
 not profitable. Everything is allowable for me! Yes, but for my part, I  
 will not let myself be enslaved by anything. Food exists for the stomach, 14  
 and the stomach for food; but God will put an end to both the  
 one and the other. The body, however, exists, not for immorality, but 15  
 for the Lord, and the Lord for the body; and, as God has raised the  
 Lord, so he will raise up us also by the exercise of his power. Do 16  
 not you know that your bodies are Christ's members? Am I, then,  
 to take the members that belong to the Christ and make them the  
 members of a prostitute? Heaven forbid! Or do not you know that a 17  
 man who unites himself with a prostitute is one with her in body (for  
 'the two,' it is said, 'will become one'); while a man who is united 18  
 with the Lord is one with him in spirit? Shun all immorality. Every  
 other sin that men commit is something outside the body; but an 19  
 immoral man sins against his own body. Again, do not you know  
 that your body is a shrine of the Holy Spirit that is within you-the

## 1 Corinthians 7

20 Spirit which you have from God? Moreover, you are not your own masters; you were bought, and the price was paid. Therefore, honor  
7 God in your bodies.

With reference to the subjects about which you wrote to me: It would  
2 be well for a man to remain single. But, owing to the prevalence  
of immorality, I advise every man to have his own wife, and every  
3 woman her husband. A husband should give his wife her due, and  
4 a wife her husband. It is not the wife, but the husband, who exercises power over her body; and so, too, it is not the husband, but the  
5 wife, who exercises power over his body. Do not deprive each other of what is due-unless it is only for a time and by mutual consent, so that your minds may be free for prayer till you again live as man and wife-lest Satan should take advantage of your want of self-control  
6 and tempt you. I say this, however, as a concession, not as a command. I should wish every one to be just what I am myself. But every  
7 one has his own gift from God-one in one way, and one in another.  
8 My advice, then, to those who are not married, and to widows, is  
9 this: It would be well for them to remain as I am myself. But, if they cannot control themselves, let them marry, for it is better to marry  
10 than to be consumed with passion. To those who are married my direction is-yet it is not mine, but the Master's-that a woman is not to  
11 leave her husband (If she has done so, let her remain as she is, or else be reconciled to her husband) and also that a man is not to divorce  
12 his wife. To all others I say-I, not the Master-If a Brother is married to a woman, who is an unbeliever but willing to live with him, he  
13 should not divorce her; and a woman who is married to a man, who is an unbeliever but willing to live with her, should not divorce her  
14 husband. For, through his wife, the husband who is an unbeliever has become associated with Christ's People; and the wife who is an unbeliever has become associated with Christ's People through our Brother whom she has married. Otherwise your children would be  
15 'defiled,' but, as it is, they belong to Christ's People. However, if the unbeliever wishes to be separated, let him be so. Under such circumstances neither the Brother nor the Sister is bound; God has called  
16 you to live in peace. How can you tell, wife, whether you may not

save your husband? and how can you tell, husband, whether you  
 may not save your wife? In any case, a man should continue to live 17  
 in the condition which the Lord has allotted to him, and in which he  
 was when God called him. This is the rule that I lay down in every  
 Church. Was a man already circumcised when he was called? Then 18  
 he should not efface his circumcision. Has a man been called when  
 uncircumcised? Then he should not be circumcised. Circumcision is 19  
 nothing; the want of it is nothing; but to keep the commands of God  
 is everything. Let every one remain in that condition of life in which 20  
 he was when the Call came to him. Were you a slave when you were 21  
 called? Do not let that trouble you. No, even if you are able to gain  
 your freedom, still do your best. For the man who was a slave when 22  
 he was called to the master's service is the Master's freed-man; so,  
 too, the man who was free when called is Christ's slave. You were 23  
 bought, and the price was paid. Do not let yourselves become slaves  
 to men. Brothers, let every one remain in the condition in which he 24  
 was when he was called, in close communion with God. With regard 25  
 to unmarried women, I have no command from the Master to give  
 you, but I tell you my opinion, and it is that of a man whom the Mas-  
 ter in his mercy has made worthy to be trusted. I think, then, that, in 26  
 view of the time of suffering that has now come upon us, what I have  
 already said is best-that a man should remain as he is. Are you mar- 27  
 ried to a wife? Then do not seek to be separated. Are you separated  
 from a wife? Then do not seek for a wife. still, if you should marry, 28  
 that is not wrong; nor, if a young woman marries, is that wrong. But  
 those who marry will have much trouble to bear, and my wish is to  
 spare you. What I mean, Brothers, is this-The time is short. Mean- 29  
 while, let those who have wives live as if they had none, those who 30  
 are weeping as if not weeping, those who are rejoicing as if not re-  
 joicing, those who buy as if not possessing, and those who use the 31  
 good things of the world as using them sparingly; for this world as  
 we see it is passing away. I want you to be free from anxiety. The un- 32  
 married man is anxious about the Master's Cause, desiring to please  
 him; while the married man is anxious about worldly matters, de- 33  
 siring to please his wife; and so his interests are divided. Again, the 34

unmarried woman, whether she is old or young, is anxious about the Master's Cause, striving to be pure both in body and in spirit, while the married woman is anxious about worldly matters, desiring to please her husband. I say this for your own benefit, not with any intention of putting a halter round your necks, but in order to secure for the Master seemly and constant devotion, free from all distraction. If, however, a father thinks that he is not acting fairly by his unmarried daughter, when she is past her youth, and if under these circumstances her marriage ought to take place, let him act as he thinks right. He is doing nothing wrong-let the marriage take place. On the other hand, a father, who has definitely made up his mind, and is under no compulsion, but is free to carry out his own wishes, and who has come to the decision, in his own mind, to keep his unmarried daughter at home will be doing right. In short, the one who consents to his daughter's marriage is doing right, and yet the other will be doing better. A wife is bound to her husband as long as he lives; but, if the husband should pass to his rest, the widow is free to marry any one she wishes, provided he is a believer. Yet she will be happier if she remains as she is-in my opinion, for I think that I also have the Spirit of God.

With reference to food that has been offered in sacrifice to idols-We are aware that all of us have knowledge! Knowledge breeds conceit, while love builds up character. If a man thinks that he knows anything, he has not yet reached that knowledge which he ought to have reached. On the other hand, if a man loves God, he is known by God. With reference, then, to eating food that has been offered to idols-we are aware that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is no God but one. Even supposing that there are so-called 'gods' either in Heaven or on earth-and there are many such 'gods' and 'lords'- Yet for us there is only one God, the Father, from whom all things come (and for him we live), and one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things come (and through him we live). Still, it is not every one that has this knowledge. Some people, because of their association with idols, continued down to the present time, eat the food as food offered to an idol; and their consciences, while still

weak, are dulled. What we eat, however, will not bring us nearer to 8  
 God. We lose nothing by not eating this food, and we gain nothing 9  
 by eating it. But take care that this right of yours does not become in 10  
 any way a stumbling-block to the weak. For if some one should see 11  
 you who possess this knowledge, feasting in an idol's temple, will 12  
 not his conscience, if he is a weak man, become so hardened that he, 13  
 too, will eat food offered to idols? And so, through this knowledge 9  
 of yours, the weak man is ruined-your Brother for whose sake Christ 10  
 died! In this way, by sinning against your Brothers and injuring their 11  
 consciences, while still weak, you sin against Christ. Therefore, if 12  
 what I eat makes my Brother fall, rather than make my Brother fall, 13  
 I will never eat meat again.

Am I not free? Am I not an Apostle? Have I not seen our Lord Jesus? 9  
 Are not you yourselves my work achieved in union with the Lord? 10  
 If I am not an Apostle to others, yet at least I am to you; for you 11  
 are the seal that stamps me as an Apostle in union with the Lord. 12  
 The defense that I make to my critics is this: Have not we a right to 13  
 food and drink? Have not we a right to take a wife with us, if she 14  
 is a Christian, as the other Apostles and the Master's brothers and 15  
 Kephass all do? Or is it only Barnabas and I who have no right to 16  
 give up working for our bread? Does any one ever serve as a sol- 17  
 dier at his own expense? Does any one plant a vineyard and not eat 18  
 its produce? Or does any one look after a herd and not drink the 19  
 milk? Am I, in all this, speaking only from the human standpoint? 20  
 Does not the Law also say the same? For in the Law of Moses it is 21  
 said-'Thou shalt not muzzle a bullock while it is treading out the 22  
 grain.' Is it the bullocks that God is thinking of? Or is not is said 23  
 entirely for our sakes? Surely it was written for our sakes, for the 24  
 ploughman ought not to plough, nor the thrasher to thrash, with- 25  
 out expecting a share of the grain. Since we, then, sowed spiritual 26  
 seed for you, is it too much that we should reap from you an earthly 27  
 harvest? If others share in this right over you, do not we even more? 28  
 Still we did not avail ourselves of this right. No, we endure anything 29  
 rather than impede the progress of the Good News of the Christ. 30  
 Do not you know that those who do the work of the Temple live 31

on what comes from the Temple, and that those who serve at the  
14 altar share the offerings with the altar? So, too, the Master has ap-  
pointed that those who tell the Good News should get their living  
15 from the Good News. I, however, have not availed myself of any of  
these rights. I am not saying this to secure such an arrangement for  
myself; indeed, I would far rather die-Nobody shall make my boast  
16 a vain one! If I tell the Good News, I have nothing to boast of, for I  
17 can but do so. Woe is me if I do not tell it! If I do this work willingly,  
I have a reward; but, if unwillingly, I have been charged to perform  
18 a duty. What is my reward, then? To present the Good News free of  
all cost, and so make but a sparing use of the rights which it gives  
19 me. Although I was entirely free, yet, to win as many converts as  
20 possible, I made myself everyone's slave. To the Jews I became like  
a Jew, to win Jews. To those who are subject to Law I became like a  
man subject to Law-though I was not myself subject to Law-to win  
21 those who are subject to Law. To those who have no Law I became  
like a man who has no Law- -not that I am free from God's Law; no,  
22 for I am under Christ's Law-to win those who have no law. To the  
weak I became weak, to win the weak. I have become all things to  
23 all men, so as at all costs to save some. And I do everything for the  
sake of the Good News, that with them I may share in its blessings.  
24 Do not you know that on a race-course, though all run, yet only one  
25 wins the prize? Run in such a way that you may win. Every athlete  
exercises self-restraint in everything; they, indeed, for a crown that  
26 fades, we for one that is unfading. I, therefore, run with no uncer-  
tain aim. I box-not like a man hitting the air. No, I bruise my body  
27 and make it my slave, lest I, who have called others to the contest,  
10 should myself be rejected.

I want you to bear in mind, Brothers, that all our ancestors were  
2 beneath the cloud, and all passed through the sea; that in the cloud  
3 and in the sea they all underwent baptism as followers of Moses; and  
4 that they all ate the same supernatural food, and all drank the same  
supernatural water, for they used to drink from a supernatural rock  
5 which followed them, and that rock was the Christ. Yet with most of  
them God was displeased; for they were 'struck down in the desert.'



Now these things happened as warnings to us, to teach us not to  
 long for evil things as our forefathers longed. Do not become idol-  
 aters, as some of them became. Scripture says-‘The people sat down  
 to eat and drink, and stood up to dance.’ Nor let us act immorally,  
 as some of them acted, with the result that twenty-three thousand  
 of them fell dead in a single day. Nor let us try the patience of the  
 Lord too far, as some of them tried it, with the result that they ‘were,  
 one after another, destroyed by the snakes.’ And do not murmur,  
 as some of them murmured, and so ‘were destroyed by the Angel  
 of Death.’ These things happened to them by way of warning, and  
 were recorded to serve as a caution to us, in whose days the close of  
 the ages has come. Therefore let the man who thinks that he stands  
 take care that he does not fall. No temptation has come upon you  
 that is not common to all mankind. God will not fail you, and he  
 will not allow you to be tempted beyond your strength; but, when  
 he sends the temptation, he will also provide the way of escape, so  
 that you may have strength to endure. Therefore, my dear friends,  
 shun the worship of idols. I speak to you as man of discernment;  
 form your own judgment about what I am saying. In the Cup of  
 Blessing which we bless, is not there a sharing in the blood of the  
 Christ? And in the Bread which we break, is not there a sharing in  
 the Body of the Christ? The Bread is one, and we, though many, are  
 one body; for we all partake of that one Bread. Look at the people  
 of Israel. Do not those who eat the sacrifices share with the altar?  
 What do I mean? you ask. Than an offering made to an idol, or the  
 idol itself, is anything? No; what I say is that the sacrifices offered by  
 the Gentiles ‘are offered to demons and to a Being who is no God,’  
 and I do not want you to share with demons. You cannot drink both  
 the Cup of the Lord and the cup of demons. You cannot partake at  
 the Table of the Lord and at the table of demons. Or ‘are we to rouse  
 the jealousy of the Lord’? Are we stronger than he? Everything is  
 allowable! Yes, but everything is not profitable. Everything is allow-  
 able! Yes, but everything does not build up character. A man must  
 not study his own interests, but the interests of others. Eat anything  
 that is sold in the market, without making inquiries to satisfy your

## 1 Corinthians 11

26 scruples; for 'the earth, with all that is in it, belongs to the Lord.'  
27 If an unbeliever invites you to his house and you consent to go, eat  
anything that is put before you, without making inquiries to satisfy  
28 your scruples. But, if any one should say to you 'This has been offered in sacrifice to an idol,' then, for the sake of the speaker and  
29 his scruples, do not eat it. I do not say 'your' scruples, but 'his.' For why should the freedom that I claim be condemned by the scruples  
30 of another? If, for my part, I take the food thankfully, why should  
31 I be abused for eating that for which I give thanks? Whether, then, you eat or drink or whatever you do, do everything to the honor of  
32 God. Do not cause offence either to Jews or Greeks or to the Church  
33 of God; for I, also, try to please everybody in everything, not seeking my own advantage, but that of men in general, that they may be  
11 saved.

2 Imitate me, as I myself imitate Christ. I praise you, indeed, because you never forget me, and are keeping my injunctions in mind, exactly as I laid them upon you. But I am anxious that you should understand that the Christ is the Head of every man, that man is the  
4 Head of woman, and that God is the Head of the Christ. Any man who keeps his head covered, when praying or preaching in public,  
5 dishonors him who is his Head; while any woman, who prays or preaches in public bare-headed, dishonors him who is her Head; for that is to make herself like one of the shameless women who shave  
6 their heads. Indeed, if a woman does not keep her head covered, she may as well cut her hair short. But, since to cut her hair short, or shave it off, marks her as one of the shameless women, let her keep  
7 her head covered. A man ought not to have his head covered, for he has been from the beginning 'the likeness of God' and the reflection  
8 of his glory, but woman is the reflection of man's glory. For it was not man who was taken from woman, but woman who was taken  
9 from man. Besides, man was not created for the sake of woman, but  
10 woman for the sake of man. And, therefore, a woman ought to wear on her head a symbol of her subjection, because of the presence of  
11 the angels. Still, when in union with the Lord, woman is not independent of man, or man of woman; for just as woman came from

man, so man comes by means of woman; and all things come from  
 God. Judge for yourselves. Is it fitting that a woman should pray 13  
 to God in public with her head uncovered? Does not nature herself 14  
 teach us that, while for a man to wear his hair long is degrading to  
 him, a woman's long hair is her glory? Her hair has been given her to 15  
 serve as a covering. If, however, any one still thinks it right to contest 16  
 the point—well, we have no such custom, nor have the Churches of  
 God. In giving directions on the next subject, I cannot praise you; be- 17  
 cause your meetings do more harm than good. To begin with, I hear 18  
 you and, to some extent, I believe it. Indeed, there must be actual 19  
 parties among you, for so only will the men of real worth become  
 known. When you meet together, as I understand, it is not possible 20  
 to eat the Lord's Supper; for, as you eat, each of you tries to secure 21  
 his own supper first, with the result that one has too little to eat,  
 and another has too much to drink! Have you no houses in which 22  
 you can eat and drink? Or are you trying to show your contempt  
 for the Church of God, and to humiliate the poor? What can I say to  
 you? Shall I praise you? In this matter I cannot praise you. For I my- 23  
 self received from the Lord the account which I have in turn given to  
 you—how the Lord Jesus, on the very night of his betrayal, took some  
 bread, and, after saying the thanksgiving, broke it and said "This is 24  
 my own body given on your behalf. Do this in memory of me." And 25  
 in the same way with the cup, after supper, saying "This cup is the  
 new Covenant made by my blood. Do this, whenever you drink it,  
 in memory of me." For whenever you eat this bread and drink the 26  
 cup, you proclaim the Lord's death—till he comes. Therefore, who- 27  
 ever eats the bread, or drinks the Lord's cup, in an irreverent spirit,  
 will have to answer for an offence against the Lord's body and blood.  
 Let each man look into his own heart, and only then eat of the bread 28  
 and drink from the cup. For the man who eats and drinks brings a 29  
 judgment upon himself by his eating and drinking, when he does  
 not discern the body. That is why so many among you are weak and 30  
 ill, and why some are sleeping. But, if we judged ourselves rightly, 31  
 we should not be judged. Yet, in being judged by the Lord, we are 32  
 undergoing discipline, so that we may not have judgment passed

33 upon us with the rest of the world. Therefore, my Brothers, when  
 34 you meet together to eat the Supper, wait for one another. If a man  
 is hungry, let him eat at home, so that your meetings may not bring  
 12 a judgment upon you. The other details I will settle when I come.  
 In the next place, Brothers, I do not want you to be ignorant about  
 2 spiritual gifts. You know that there was a time when you were Gen-  
 tiles, going astray after idols that could not speak, just as you hap-  
 3 pened to be led. Therefore I tell you plainly that no one who speaks  
 under the influence of the Spirit of God says 'JESUS IS ACCURSED,'  
 and that no one can say 'JESUS IS LORD,' except under the influence  
 4 of the Holy Spirit. Gifts differ, but the Spirit is the same; ways of  
 6 serving differ, yet the Master is the same; results differ, yet the God  
 7 who brings about every result is in every case the same. To each man  
 8 there is given spiritual illumination for the general good. To one is  
 given the power to speak with wisdom through the Spirit; to an-  
 9 other the power to speak with knowledge, due to the same Spirit; to  
 another faith by the same Spirit; to another power to cure diseases  
 10 by the one Spirit; to another supernatural powers; to another the gift  
 of preaching; to another the gift of distinguishing between true and  
 false inspiration; to another varieties of the gift of 'tongues'; to an-  
 11 other the power to interpret 'tongues.' All these result from one and  
 the same Spirit, who distributes his gifts to each individually as he  
 12 wills. For just as the human body is one whole, and yet has many  
 parts, and all its parts, many though they are, form but one body,  
 13 so it is with the Christ; for it was by one Spirit that we were all bap-  
 tized to form one Body, whether Jews or Greeks, slaves or free men,  
 14 and were all imbued with one Spirit. The human body, I repeat, con-  
 15 sists not of one part, but of many. If the foot says 'Since I am not a  
 hand, I do not belong to the body,' it does not on that account cease  
 16 to belong to the body. Or if the ear says 'Since I am not an eye, I do  
 not belong to the body,' it does not on that account cease to belong  
 17 to the body. If all the body were an eye, where would the hearing  
 18 be? If it were all hearing, where would the sense of smell be? But  
 in fact God has placed each individual part just where he thought  
 19 fit in the body. If, however, they all made up only one part, where

would the body be? But in fact, although it has many parts, there is only one body. The eye cannot say to the hand 'I do not need you,' nor, again, the head to the feet 'I do not need you.' No! Those parts of the body that seem naturally the weaker are indispensable; and those parts which we deem less honorable we surround with special honor; and our ungraceful parts receive a special grace which our graceful parts do not require. Yes, God has so constructed the body —by giving a special honor to the part that lacks it- As to secure that there should be no disunion in the body, but that the parts should show the same care for one another. If one part suffers, all the others suffer with it, and if one part has honor done it, all the others share its joy. Together you are the Body of Christ, and individually its parts. In the Church God has appointed, first, Apostles, secondly Preachers, thirdly Teachers; then he has given supernatural powers, then power to cure diseases, aptness for helping others, capacity to govern, varieties of the gift of 'tongues.' Can every one be an Apostle? can every one be a Preacher? can every one be a Teacher? can every one have supernatural powers? Can every one have power to cure diseases? can every one speak in 'tongues'? can every one interpret them? Strive for the greater gifts. Yet I can still show you a way beyond all comparison the best. **13**

Though I speak in the 'tongues' of men, or even of angels, yet have not Love, I have become mere echoing brass, or a clanging cymbal! Even though I have the gift of preaching, and fathom all hidden truths and all the depths of knowledge; even though I have such faith as might move mountains, yet have not Love, I am nothing! Even though I dole my substance to the poor, even though I sacrifice my body, that I may boast, yet have not Love, it avails me nothing! Love is long-suffering, and kind; Love is never envious, never boastful, never conceited, never behaves unbecomingly; love is never self-seeking, never provoked, never reckons up her wrongs; love never rejoices at evil, but rejoices in the triumph of Truth; love bears with all things, every trustful, ever hopeful, ever patient. Love never fails. But, whether it be the gift of preaching, it will be done with; whether it be the gift of 'tongues,' it will cease; whether it be

9 knowledge, it, too, will be done with. For our knowledge is incom-  
 10 plete, and our preaching is incomplete, but, when the Perfect has  
 11 come, that which is incomplete will be done with. When I was a  
 child, I talked as a child, I felt as a child, I reasoned as a child; now  
 12 that I am a man, I have done with childish ways. As yet we see, in  
 a mirror, dimly, but then-face to face! As yet my knowledge is in-  
 complete, but then I shall know in full, as I have been fully known.  
 13 Meanwhile Faith, Hope, and Love endure-these three, but the great-  
 14 est of these is Love.

Seek this Love earnestly, and strive for spiritual gifts, above all for  
 2 the gift of preaching. He who, when speaking, uses the gift of  
 'tongues' is speaking, not to men, but to God, for no one  
 3 understands him; yet in spirit he is speaking of hidden truths. But  
 he who preaches is speaking to his fellow men words that will  
 4 build up faith, and give them comfort and encouragement. He  
 who, when speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues' builds up his own  
 faith, while he who preaches builds up the faith of the Church.  
 5 Now I want you all to speak in 'tongues,' but much more I wish  
 that you should preach. A Preacher is of more account than he  
 who speaks in 'tongues,' unless he interprets his words, so that the  
 6 faith of the Church may be built up. This being so, Brothers, what  
 good shall I do you, if I come to you and speak in 'tongues,' unless  
 my words convey some revelation, or knowledge, or take the form  
 7 of preaching or teaching? Even with inanimate things, such as a  
 flute or a harp, though they produce sounds, yet unless the notes  
 are quite distinct, how can the tune played on the flute or the harp  
 8 be recognized? If the bugle sounds a doubtful call, who will  
 9 prepare for battle? And so with you; unless, in using the gift of  
 'tongues,' you utter intelligible words, how can what you say be  
 10 understood? You will be speaking to the winds! There is, for  
 instance, a certain number of different languages in the world, and  
 11 not one of them fails to convey meaning. If, however, I do not  
 happen to know the language, I shall be a foreigner to those who  
 12 speak it, and they will be foreigners to me. And so with you; since  
 your are striving for spiritual gifts, be eager to excel in such as will

build up the faith of the Church. Therefore let him who, when 13  
 speaking, uses the gift of 'tongues' pray for ability to interpret  
 them. If, when praying, I use the gift of 'tongues,' my spirit indeed 14  
 prays, but my mind is a blank. What, then, is my conclusion? 15  
 Simply this-I will pray with my spirit, but with my mind as well; I  
 will sing with my spirit, but with my mind as well. If you bless 16  
 God with your spirit only, how can the man in the congregation  
 who is without your gift say 'Amen' to your thanksgiving? He  
 does not know what you are saying! Your thanksgiving may be 17  
 excellent, but the other is not helped by it. Thank God, I use the gift 18  
 of 'tongues' more than any of you. But at a meeting of the Church I 19  
 would rather speak five words with my mind, and so teach others,  
 than ten thousand words when using the gift of 'tongues.'  
 Brothers, do not show yourselves children in understanding. In 20  
 wickedness be infants, but in understanding show yourselves men.  
 It is said in the Law-'In strange tongues and by the lips of strangers 21  
 will I speak to this people, but even then they will not listen to me,  
 says the Lord.' Therefore the gift of the 'tongues' is intended as a 22  
 sign, not for those who believe in Christ, but for those who do not,  
 while the gift of preaching is intended as a sign, not for those who  
 do not believe in Christ, but for those who do. So, when the whole 23  
 Church meets, if all present use the gift of 'tongues,' and some men  
 who are without the gift, or who are unbelievers, come in, will not  
 they say that you are mad? While, if all those present use the gift of 24  
 preaching, and an unbeliever, or a man without the gift, comes in,  
 he is convinced of his sinfulness by them all, he is called to account  
 by them all; the secrets of his heart are revealed, and then, 25  
 throwing himself on his face, he will worship God, and declare  
 'God is indeed among you!' What do I suggest, then, Brothers? 26  
 Whenever you meet for worship, each of you comes, either with a  
 hymn, or a lesson, or a revelation, or the gift of 'tongues,' or the  
 interpretation of them; let everything be directed to the building  
 up of faith. If any of you use the gift of 'tongues,' not more than 27  
 two, or at the most three, should do so-each speaking in his  
 turn-and some one should interpret them. If there is no one able to 28

interpret what is said, they should remain silent at the meeting of  
29 the Church, and speak to themselves and to God. Of preachers two  
or three should speak, and the rest should weigh well what is said.  
30 But, if some revelation is made to another person as he sits there,  
31 the first speaker should stop. For you can all preach in turn, so that  
32 all may learn some lesson and all receive encouragement. (The  
33 spirit that moves the preachers is within the preachers' control; for  
God is not a God of disorder, but of peace.) This custom prevails in  
34 all the Churches of Christ's People. At the meetings of the Church  
married women should remain silent, for they are not allowed to  
speak in public; they should take a subordinate place, as the Law  
35 itself directs. If they want information on any point, they should  
ask their husbands about it at home; for it is unbecoming for a  
36 married woman to speak at a meeting of the Church. What! did  
God's Message to the world originate with you? or did it find its  
37 way to none but you? If any one thinks that he has the gift of  
preaching or any other spiritual gift, let him recognize that what I  
38 am now saying to you is a command from the Lord. Any one who  
39 ignores it may be ignored. Therefore, my Brothers, strive for the  
40 gift of preaching, and yet do not forbid speaking in 'tongues.' Let  
15 everything be done in a proper and orderly manner.

Next, Brothers, I would remind you of the Good News which I told  
you, and which you received-the Good News on which you have  
2 taken your stand, and by means of which you are being saved. I  
would remind you of the very words that I used in telling it to you,  
since you are still holding fast to it, and since it was not in vain that  
3 you became believers in Christ. For at the very beginning of my  
teaching I gave you the account which I had myself received-that  
4 Christ died for our sins (as the Scriptures had foretold), that he was  
buried, that on the third day he was raised (as the Scriptures had  
5 foretold), and that he appeared to Kephaz, and then to the Twelve.  
6 After that, he appeared to more than five hundred of our Brothers  
at one time, most of whom are still alive, though some have gone to



their rest. After that, he appeared to James, and then to all the Apostles. Last of all, he appeared even to me, who am, as it were, the abortion. For I am the meanest of the Apostles, I who am unworthy of the name of 'Apostle,' because I persecuted the Church of God. But it is through the love of God that I am what I am, and the love that he showed me has not been wasted. No, I have toiled harder than any of them, and yet it was not I, but the love of God working with me. Whether, then, it was I or whether it was they, this we proclaim, and this you believed. Now, if it is proclaimed of Christ that he has been raised from the dead, how is it that some of you say that there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead? But, if there is no such thing as a resurrection of the dead, then even Christ has not been raised; and, if Christ has not been raised, then our proclamation is without meaning, and our faith without meaning also! Yes, and we are being proved to have borne false testimony about God; for we testified of God that he raised the Christ, whom he did not raise, if, indeed, the dead do not rise! For, if the dead do not rise, then even Christ himself has not been raised, and, if Christ has not been raised, your faith is folly-your sins are on you still! Yes, and they, who have passed to their rest in union with Christ, perished! If all that we have done has been to place our hope in Christ for this life, then we of all men are the most to be pitied. But, in truth, Christ has been raised from the dead, the first-fruits of those who are at rest. For, since through a man there is death, so, too, through a man there is a resurrection of the dead. For, as through union with Adam all men die, so through union with the Christ will all be made to live. But each in his proper order-Christ the first-fruits; afterwards, at his Coming, those who belong to the Christ. Then will come the end-when he surrenders the Kingdom to his God and Father, having overthrown all other rule and all other authority and power. For he must reign until God 'has put all his enemies under his feet.' The last enemy to be overthrown is death; for God has placed all things under Christ's feet. (But, when it is said that all things have been placed under Christ, it is plain that God is excepted who placed everything under him.) And, when everything has been placed under him, the Son will

place himself under God who placed everything under him, that  
29 God may be all in all! Again, what good will they be doing who are  
baptized on behalf of the dead? If it is true that the dead do not rise,  
30 why are people baptized on their behalf? Why, too, do we risk our  
31 lives every hour? Daily I face death-I swear it, Brothers, by the pride  
32 in you that I feel through my union with Christ Jesus, our Lord. If  
with only human hopes I had fought in the arena at Ephesus, what  
should I have gained by it? If the dead do not rise, then-'Let us eat  
33 and drink, for to-morrow we shall die'! Do not be deceived. 'Good  
34 character is marred by evil company.' Awake to a righteous life, and  
cease to sin. There are some who have no true knowledge of God. I  
35 speak in this way to shame you. Some one, however, may ask 'How  
36 do the dead rise? and in what body will they come?' You foolish  
man! The seed you yourself sow does not come to life, unless it dies!  
37 And when you sow, you sow not the body that will be, but a mere  
38 grain-perhaps of wheat, or something else. God gives it the body  
39 that he pleases-to each seed its special body. All forms of life are not  
the same; there is one for men, another for beasts, another for birds,  
40 and another for fishes. There are heavenly bodies, and earthly bod-  
ies; but the beauty of the heavenly bodies is not the beauty of the  
41 earthly. There is a beauty of the sun, and a beauty of the moon, and  
42 a beauty of the stars; for even star differs from star in beauty. It is  
the same with the resurrection of the dead. Sown a mortal body,  
43 it rises immortal; sown disfigured, it rises beautiful; sown weak, it  
44 rises strong; sown a human body, it rises a spiritual body. As surely  
45 as there is a human body, there is also a spiritual body. That is what  
is meant by the words-'Adam, the first man, became a human be-  
46 ing'; the last Adam became a Life-giving spirit. That which comes  
first is not the spiritual, but the human; afterwards comes the spir-  
47 itual; the first man was from the dust of the earth; the second man  
48 from Heaven. Those who are of the dust are like him who came from  
the dust; and those who are of Heaven are like him who came from  
49 Heaven. And as we have borne the likeness of him who came from  
the dust, so let us bear the likeness of him who came from Heaven.

This I say, Brothers-Flesh and blood can have no share in the Kingdom of God, nor can the perishable share the imperishable. Listen, I will tell you God's hidden purpose! We shall not all have passed to our rest, but we shall all be transformed-in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet-call; for the trumpet will sound, and the dead will rise immortal, and we, also, shall be transformed. For this perishable body of ours must put on an imperishable form, and this dying body a deathless form. And, when this dying body has put on its deathless form, then indeed will the words of Scripture come true- 'Death has been swallowed up in victory! Where, O Death, is thy victory? Where, O Death, is thy sting?' It is sin that gives death its sting, and it is the Law that gives sin its power. But thanks be to God, who gives us the victory, through Jesus Christ, our Lord. Therefore, my dear Brothers, stand firm, unshaken, always diligent in the Lord's work, for you know that, in union with him, your toil is not in vain. 16

With reference to the Collection for Christ's People, I want you to follow the instructions that I gave to the Churches in Galatia. On the first day of every week each of you should put by what he can afford, so that no collections need be made after I have come. On my arrival, I will send any persons, whom you may authorize by letter, to carry your gift to Jerusalem; and, if it appears to be worth while for me to go also, they shall go with me. I will come to you as soon as I have been through Macedonia- -for I am going through Macedonia- And I shall probably make some stay with you or, perhaps, remain for the winter, so that you may yourselves send me on my way, wherever I may be going. I do not propose to pay you a visit in passing now, for I hope to stay with you for some time, if the Lord permits. I intend, however, staying at Ephesus till the Festival at the close of the Harvest; for a great opening for active work has presented itself, and there are many opponents. If Timothy comes, take care that he has no cause for feeling anxious while he is with you. He is doing the Master's work no less than I am. No one, therefore, should slight him. See him safely on his way to me, for I am expecting him with some of our Brothers. As for our Brother Apollos, I

have often urged him to go to you with the others. He has, however, been very unwilling to do so as yet; but he will go as soon as  
13 he finds a good opportunity. Be watchful; stand firm in your faith;  
14 show yourselves men; be strong. Let everything you do be done  
15 in a loving spirit. I have another request to make of you, Brothers.  
You remember Stephanas and his household, and that they were  
the first-fruits gathered in from Greece, and set themselves to serve  
16 Christ's People. I want you, on your part, to show deference to such  
men as these, as well as to every fellow laborer and earnest worker.  
17 I am glad Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus have come, for  
18 they have made up for your absence; they have cheered my heart,  
19 and your hearts also. Recognize the worth of such men as these. The  
Churches in Roman Asia send you their greetings. Aquila and Prisca  
and the Church that meets at their house send you many Christian  
20 greetings. All our brothers send you greetings. Greet one another  
21 with a sacred kiss. I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwrit-  
22 ing. Accursed be any one who has no love for the Lord. **THE LORD**  
23 **IS COMING.** May the blessing of the Lord Jesus be with you. My  
love to all of you who are in union with Christ Jesus.

## 2 CORINTHIANS

## PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO THE CORINTHIANS

To the Church of God in Corinth, and to all Christ's People throughout Greece, from Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, and from Timothy, a Brother. May God, our Father, and the Lord 2  
 Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace. Blessed is the God and 3  
 Father of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all-merciful Father, the God ever ready to console, who consoles us in all our troubles, so that we may 4  
 be able to console those who are in any trouble with the consolation that we ourselves receive from him. It is true that we have our full 5  
 share of the sufferings of the Christ, but through the Christ we have also our full share of consolation. If we meet with trouble, it is for the 6  
 sake of your consolation and salvation; and, if we find consolation, it is for the sake of the consolation that you will experience when you are called to endure the very sufferings that we ourselves are enduring; and our hope for you remains unshaken. We know that, as you 7  
 are sharing our sufferings, you will also share our consolation. We 8  
 want you, Brothers, to know that, in the troubles which befell us in Roman Asia, we were burdened altogether beyond our strength, so much so that we even despaired of life. Indeed, we had the presentiment that we must die, so that we might rely, not on ourselves, but on God who raises the dead. And from so imminent a death God delivered us, and will deliver us again; for in him we have placed our hopes of future deliverance, while you, also, help us by your prayers. And then many lips will give thanks on our behalf for the blessing 11  
 granted us in answer to many prayers. Indeed, our main ground for satisfaction is this — Our conscience tells us that our conduct in the world, and still more in our relations with you, was marked by a purity of motive and a sincerity that were inspired by God, and was based, not on worldly policy, but on the help of God. We never write 13  
 anything to you other than what you will acknowledge to the very end — And, indeed, you have already partly acknowledged it about 14

## 2 Corinthians 2

us — that you have a right to be proud of us, as we shall be proud of  
15 you, on the Day of our Lord Jesus. With this conviction in my mind,  
I planned to come to see you first, so that your pleasure might be  
16 doubled — To visit you both on my way to Macedonia, and to come  
to you again on my return from Macedonia, and then to get you to  
17 send me on my way into Judea. As this was my plan, where, pray,  
did I show any fickleness of purpose? Or do you think that my plans  
are formed on mere impulse, so that in the same breath I say 'Yes'  
18 and 'No'? As God is true, the Message that we brought you does not  
19 waver between 'Yes' and 'No'! The Son of God, Christ Jesus, whom  
we — Silas, Timothy, and I -proclaimed among you, never wavered  
20 between 'Yes' and 'No.' With him it has always been 'Yes.' For, many  
as were the promises of God, in Christ is the 'Yes' that fulfils them.  
Therefore, through Christ again, let the 'Amen' rise, through us, to  
21 the glory of God. God who brings us, with you, into close union  
22 with Christ, and who consecrated us, also set his seal upon us, and  
23 gave us his Spirit in our hearts as a pledge of future blessings. But,  
as my life shall answer for it, I call God to witness that it was to spare  
24 you that I deferred my visit to Corinth. I do not mean that we are  
to dictate to you with regard to your faith; on the contrary, we work  
with you for your true happiness; indeed, it is through your faith  
2 that you are standing firm.

For my own sake, as well, I decided not to pay you another painful  
2 visit. If it is I who cause you pain, why, who is there to cheer me,  
3 except the very person whom I am paining? So I wrote as I did, for  
fear that, if I had come, I should have been pained by those who  
ought to have made me glad; for I felt sure that it was true of you  
4 all that my joy was in every case yours also. I wrote to you in sore  
trouble and distress of heart and with many tears, not to give you  
5 pain, but to let you see how intense a love I have for you. Now who-  
ever has caused the pain has not so much pained me, as he has, to  
6 some extent — not to be too severe — pained every one of you. The  
man to whom I refer has been sufficiently punished by the penalty  
7 inflicted by the majority of you; so that now you must take the op-  
posite course, and forgive and encourage him, or else he may be

overwhelmed by the intensity of his pain. So I entreat you to assure 8  
 him of your love. I had this further object, also, in what I wrote — to 9  
 ascertain whether you might be relied upon to be obedient in every-  
 thing. When you forgive a man anything, I forgive him, too. Indeed, 10  
 for my part, whatever I have forgiven (if I have had to forgive any-  
 thing), I have forgiven for your sakes, in the presence of Christ, so 11  
 as to prevent Satan from taking advantage of us; for we are not ig-  
 norant of his devices. When I went to the district round Troas to tell 12  
 the Good News of the Christ, even though there was an opening for  
 serving the Master, I could get no peace of mind because I failed to 13  
 find Titus, my Brother; so I took leave of the people there, and went  
 on to Macedonia. All thanks to God, who, through our union with 14  
 the Christ, leads us in one continual triumph, and uses us to spread  
 the sweet odor of the knowledge of him in every place. For we are 15  
 the fragrance of Christ ascending to God — both among those who  
 are in the path of Salvation and among those who are in the path  
 to Ruin. To the latter we are an odor which arises from death and 16  
 tells of Death; to the former an odor which arises from life and tells  
 of Life. But who is equal to such a task? Unlike many people, we 17  
 are not in the habit of making profit out of God's Message; but in  
 all sincerity, and bearing God's commission, we speak before him  
 in union with Christ. 3

Are we beginning to commend ourselves again? Or are we like some 2  
 who need letters of commendation to you, or from you? You your-  
 selves are our letter — a letter written on our hearts, and one which 3  
 everybody can read and understand. All can see that you are a letter  
 from Christ delivered by us, a letter written, not with ink, but with 4  
 the Spirit of the Living God, not on 'tablets of stone,' but on 'tablets  
 of human hearts.' This, then, is the confidence in regard to God that 5  
 we have gained through the Christ. I do not mean that we are fit 6  
 to form any judgment by ourselves, as if on our own authority; our  
 fitness comes from God, who himself made us fit to be ministers of  
 a New Covenant, of which the substance is, not a written Law, but  
 a Spirit. For the written Law means Death, but the Spirit gives Life.

## 2 Corinthians 4

7 If the system of religion which involved Death, embodied in a written Law and engraved on stones, began amid such glory, that the Israelites were unable to gaze at the face of Moses on account of its  
8 glory, though it was but a passing glory, will not the religion that  
9 confers the Spirit have still greater glory? For, if there was a glory in the religion that involved condemnation, far greater is the glory  
10 of the religion that confers righteousness! Indeed, that which then had glory has lost its glory, because of the glory which surpasses it.  
11 And, if that which was to pass away was attended with glory, far  
12 more will that which is to endure be surrounded with glory! With  
13 such a hope as this, we speak with all plainness; unlike Moses, who covered his face with a veil, to prevent the Israelites from gazing at  
14 the disappearance of what was passing away. But their minds were slow to learn. Indeed, to this very day, at the public reading of the Old Covenant, the same veil remains unlifted; only for those who  
15 are in union with Christ does it pass away. But, even to this day,  
16 whenever Moses is read, a veil lies on their hearts. 'Yet, whenever  
17 a man turns to the Lord, the veil is removed.' And the 'Lord' is the  
18 Spirit, and, where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom. And all of us, with faces from which the veil is lifted, seeing, as if reflected in a mirror, the glory of the Lord, are being transformed into his  
4 likeness, from glory to glory, as it is given by the Lord, the Spirit.  
Therefore, since it is by God's mercy that we are engaged in this  
2 ministry, we do not lose heart. No, we have renounced the secrecy prompted by shame, refusing to adopt crafty ways, or to tamper with God's Message, and commending ourselves to every man's  
3 conscience, in the sight of God, by our exhibition of the Truth. And, even if the Good News that we bring is veiled, it is veiled only in  
4 the case of those who are on the path to Ruin — Men whose minds have been blinded by the God of this Age, unbelievers as they are, so that the light from the Good News of the glory of the Christ, who is  
5 the very incarnation of God, should not shine for them. (For it is not ourselves that we proclaim, but Christ Jesus, as Lord, and ourselves  
6 as your servants for Jesus' sake.) Indeed, the same God who said 'Out of darkness light shall shine,' has shone in upon our hearts, so



that we should bring out into the light the knowledge of the glory of God, seen in the face of Christ. This treasure we have in these earthen vessels, that its all- prevailing power may be seen to come from God, and not to be our own. Though hard pressed on every side, we are never hemmed in; through perplexed, never driven to despair; though pursued, never abandoned; though struck down, never killed! We always bear on our bodies the marks of the death that Jesus died, so that the Life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our bodies. Indeed, we who still live are continually being given over to death for Jesus' sake, so that the Life also of Jesus may be exhibited in our mortal nature. And so, while death is at work within us, Life is at work within you. But, in the same spirit of faith as that expressed in the words — 'I believed, and therefore I spoke,' we, also believe, and therefore speak. For we know that he who raised the Lord Jesus will raise us also with him, and will bring us, with you, into his presence. For all this is for your sakes, that the loving-kindness of God, spreading from heart to heart, may cause yet more hearts to overflow with thanksgiving, to his glory. Therefore, as I said, we do not lose heart. No, even though outwardly we are wasting away, yet inwardly we are being renewed day by day. The light burden of our momentary trouble is preparing for us, in measure transcending thought, a weight of imperishable glory; we, all the while, gazing not on what is seen, but on what is unseen; for what is seen is transient, but what is unseen is imperishable. 5

For we know that if our tent — that earthly body which is now our home — is taken down, we have a house of God's building, a home not made by hands, imperishable, in Heaven. Even while in our present body we sigh, longing to put over it our heavenly dwelling, sure that, when we have put it on, we shall never be found discarnate. For we who are in this 'tent' sigh under our burden, unwilling to take it off, yet wishing to put our heavenly body over it, so that all that is mortal may be absorbed in Life. And he who has prepared us for this change is God, who has also given us his Spirit as a pledge. Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, while our home is in the body, we are absent from our home with the Lord. For we 7

## 2 Corinthians 6

8 guide our lives by faith, and not by what we see. And in this confidence we would gladly leave our home in the body, and make our  
9 home with the Lord. Therefore, whether in our home or absent from  
10 our home, our one ambition is to please him. For at the Bar of the Christ we must all appear in our true characters, that each may reap the results of the life which he has lived in the body, in accordance  
11 with his actions — whether good or worthless. Therefore, because we know the fear inspired by the Lord, it is true that we are trying to win men, but our motives are plain to God; and I hope that in your  
12 inmost hearts they are plain to you also. We are not “commending ourselves” again to you, but rather are giving you cause for pride in us, so that you may have an answer ready for those who pride themselves on appearances and not on character. For, if we were “beside ourselves,” it was in God’s service! If we are not in our senses, it  
14 is in yours! It is the love of the Christ which compels us, when we  
15 reflect that, as one died for all, therefore all died; and that he died for all, so that the living should no longer live for themselves, but  
16 for him who died and rose for them. For ourselves, then, from this time forward, we refuse to regard any one from the world’s standpoint. Even if we once thought of Christ from the standpoint of the  
17 world, yet now we do so no longer. Therefore, if any one is in union with Christ, he is a new being! His old life has passed away; a new  
18 life has begun! But all this is the work of God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ, and gave us the Ministry of Reconciliation —  
19 To proclaim that God, in Christ, was reconciling the world to himself, not reckoning men’s offenses against them, and that he had  
20 entrusted us with the Message of this reconciliation. It is, then, on Christ’s behalf that we are acting as ambassadors, God, as it were, appealing to you through us. We implore you on Christ’s behalf —  
21 Be reconciled to God. Him who never knew sin God made to be Sin, on our behalf; so that we, through union with him, might become  
6 the Righteousness of God.

Therefore, as God’s fellow-workers, we also appeal to you not to receive his loving-kindness in vain. For he says — ‘At the time for acceptance I listened to thee, And on the day of deliverance I helped

thee.' Now is the time for acceptance! Now is the day of deliver-  
 ance! Never do we put an obstacle in any one's way, that no fault 3  
 may be found with our ministry. No, we are trying to commend 4  
 ourselves under all circumstances, as God's ministers should — in  
 many an hour of endurance, in troubles, in hardships, in difficulties,  
 in floggings, in imprisonments, in riots, in toils, in sleepless nights, 5  
 in fastings; by purity, by knowledge, by patience, by kindness, by 6  
 holiness of spirit, by unfeigned love; by the Message of Truth, and 7  
 by the power of God; by the weapons of righteousness in the right  
 hand and in the left; amid honor and disrepute, amid slander and 8  
 praise; regarded as deceivers, yet proved to be true; as unknown, yet 9  
 well-known; as at death's door, yet, see, we are living; as chastised,  
 yet not killed; as saddened, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet enrich- 10  
 ing many; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things! We have 11  
 been speaking freely to you, men of Corinth; we have opened our  
 heart; there is room there for you, yet there is not room, in your 12  
 love, for us. Can you not in return — I appeal to you as I should to 13  
 children — open your hearts to us? Do not enter into inconsistent 14  
 relations with those who reject the Faith. For what partnership can  
 there be between righteousness and lawlessness? or what has light  
 to do with darkness? What harmony can there be between Christ 15  
 and Belial? or what can those who accept the Faith have in common  
 with those who reject it? What agreement can there be between a 16  
 temple of God and idols? And we are a temple of the Living God.  
 That is what God meant when he said — 'I will dwell among them,  
 and walk among them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my  
 people. Therefore "Come out from among the nations, and separate 17  
 yourselves from them," says the Lord, "and touch nothing impure;  
 And I will welcome you; and I will be a father to you, and you shall 18  
 be my sons and daughters," says the Lord, the Ruler of all.' 7  
 With these promises, dear friends, let us purify ourselves from  
 everything that pollutes either body or spirit, and, in deepest  
 reverence for God, aim at perfect holiness. Make room for us in 2  
 your hearts. In no instance have we ever wronged, or harmed, or  
 taken advantage of, any one. I am not saying this to condemn you. 3

Indeed, I have already said that you are in our very heart, to live  
 4 and die together. I have the utmost confidence in you; I am always  
 boasting about you. I am full of encouragement and, in spite of all  
 5 our troubles, my heart is overflowing with happiness. Ever since  
 we reached Macedonia, we have had no rest in body or mind; on  
 every side there have been troubles — conflicts without, anxieties  
 6 within. But God, who encourages the downcast, has encouraged  
 7 us by the arrival of Titus. And it is not only by his arrival that we  
 are encouraged, but also by the encouragement which he received  
 from you; for he tells us of your strong affection, your penitence,  
 8 and your zeal on my behalf — so that I am happier still. For,  
 though I caused you sorrow by my letter, I do not regret it. Even if I  
 were inclined to regret it — for I see that my letter did cause you  
 9 sorrow though only for a time — I am glad now; not because of the  
 sorrow it caused you, but because your sorrow brought you to  
 repentance. For it was God's will that you should feel sorrow, in  
 10 order that you should not suffer loss in any way at our hands. For,  
 when sorrow is in accordance with God's will, it results in a  
 repentance leading to Salvation, and which will never be regretted.  
 11 The sure result of the sorrow that the world knows is Death. For  
 see what results that other sorrow — sorrow in accordance with  
 God's will — has had in your case. What earnestness it produced!  
 what explanations! what strong feeling! what alarm! what longing!  
 what eagerness! what readiness to punish! You have proved  
 12 yourselves altogether free from guilt in that matter. So, then, even  
 though I did write to you, it was not for the sake of the wrong-doer,  
 or of the man who was wronged, but to make you conscious, in the  
 sight of God, of your own earnest care for us. And it is this that has  
 13 encouraged us. In addition to the encouragement that this gave us,  
 we were made far happier still by the happiness of Titus for his  
 14 heart has been cheered by you all. Although I have been boasting a  
 little to him about you, you did not put me to shame; but, just as  
 every thing we had said to you was true, so our boasting to Titus  
 15 about you has also proved to be the truth. And his affection for you  
 is all the greater, as he remembers the deference that you all

showed him, and recalls how you received him with anxious care. I am glad that I can feel perfect confidence in you.

816

We would remind you, Brothers, of the love that God has shown to the Churches in Macedonia — How, tired though they were by many a trouble, their overflowing happiness, and even their deep poverty, resulted in a flood of generosity. I can bear witness that to the full extent of their power, and even beyond their power, spontaneously, and with many an appeal to us for permission, they showed their love, and contributed their share towards the fund for their fellow-Christians. And that, not only in the way we had expected; but first they gave themselves to the Lord, and to us also, in accordance with God's will. And this led us to urge upon Titus that, as he had started the work for you, he should also see to the completion of this expression of your love. And, remembering how you excel in everything — in faith, in teaching, in knowledge, in unfailing earnestness, and in the affection that we have awakened in you — I ask you to excel also in this expression of your love. I am not laying a command upon you, but I am making use of the earnestness shown by others to test the genuineness of your affection. For you do not forget the loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ — how that for your sakes, although he was rich, he became poor, so that you also might become rich through his poverty. I am only making suggestions on this matter; for this is the best course for you, since you were a year before others, not only in taking action, but also in showing your readiness to do so. And now I want you to complete the work, so that its completion may correspond with your willing readiness — in proportion, of course, to your means. For, where there is willingness, a man's gift is valued by its comparison with what he has, and not with what he has not. For our object is not to give relief to others and bring distress on you, but, by equalizing matters, to secure that, on the present occasion, what you can spare may supply their need, so that at another time what they can spare may supply your need, and thus matters may be equalized. As Scripture says — 'The man who had much had nothing over, and the man who had little did not lack!' I thank God for inspiring Titus with the same keen interest in

16

17 your welfare that I have; for Titus has responded to my appeals and, in his great earnestness, is starting to go to you of his own accord.  
 18 We are sending with him the Brother whose fame in the service of  
 19 the Good News has spread through all the Churches; and not only that, but he has been elected by the Churches to accompany us on our journey, in Keynesian with this expression of your love, which we are personally administering to the honor of the Lord, and to  
 20 show our deep interest. What we are specially guarding against is that any fault should be found with us in regard to our administration of this charitable fund; for we are trying to make arrangements which shall be right, not only in the eyes of the Lord, but also in the  
 21 eyes of men. We are also sending with them another of our Brothers, whose earnestness we have many a time proved in many ways, and whom we now find made even more earnest by his great confidence  
 22 in you. If I must say anything about Titus, he is my intimate companion, and he shares my work for you; if it is our Brothers, they are  
 23 delegates of the Churches, an honor to Christ. Show them, therefore — so that the Churches may see it — the proof of your affection, and  
 24 the ground for our boasting to them about you.

With reference, indeed, to the Fund for your fellow-Christians, it is  
 2 quite superfluous for me to say anything to you. I know, of course, your willingness to help, and I am always boasting of it to the Macedonians. I tell them that you in Greece have been ready for a year  
 3 past; and it was really your zeal that stimulated most of them. So my reason for sending our Brothers is to prevent what we said about you from proving, in this particular matter, an empty boast, and to enable you to be as well prepared as I have been saying that you are.  
 4 Otherwise, if any Macedonians were to come with me, and find you unprepared, we — to say nothing of you — should feel ashamed  
 5 of our present confidence. Therefore I think it necessary to urge the Brothers to go to you in advance, and to complete the arrangements for the gift, which you have already promised, so that it may be ready, as a gift, before I come, and not look as if it were being given  
 6 under pressure. Remember the saying — ‘Scanty sowing, scanty  
 7 harvest; plentiful sowing, plentiful harvest.’ Let every one give as he

has determined before hand, not grudgingly or under compulsion; for God loves 'a cheerful giver.' God has power to shower all kinds of blessings upon you, so that, having, under all circumstances and on all occasions, all that you can need, you may be able to shower all kinds of benefits upon others. (As Scripture says — 'He scattered broadcast, he gave to the poor; His righteousness continues for ever.' And he who supplies 'seed to the sower, and bread for eating,' will supply you with seed, and cause it to increase, and will multiply 'the fruits of your righteousness'). Rich in all things yourselves, you will be able to show liberality to all, which, with our help, will cause thanksgiving to be offered to God. For the rendering of a public service such as this, not only relieves the needs of your fellow-Christians, but also results in the offering to God of many a thanksgiving. Through the evidence afforded by the service thus rendered, you cause men to praise God for your fidelity to your profession of faith in the Good News of the Christ, as well as for the liberality of your contributions for them and for all others. And they also, in their prayers for you, express their longing to see you, because of the surpassing love of God displayed toward you. All thanks to God for his inestimable gift!

Now, I, Paul, make a personal appeal to you by the meekness and gentleness of the Christ — I who, "in your presence, am humble in my bearing towards you, but, when absent, am bold in my language to you" — I implore you not to drive me to "show my boldness," when I do come, by the confident tone which I expect to have to adopt towards some of you, who are expecting to find us influenced in our conduct by earthly motives. For, though we live an earthly life, we do not wage an earthly war. The weapons for our warfare are not earthly, but, under God, are powerful enough to pull down strongholds. We are engaged in confuting arguments and pulling down every barrier raised against the knowledge of God. We are taking captive every hostile thought, to bring it into submission to the Christ, and are fully prepared to punish every act of rebellion, when once your submission is complete. You look at the outward appearance of things! Let any one, who is confident that he belongs

to Christ, reflect, for himself, again upon the fact — that we belong  
8 to Christ no less than he does. Even if I boast extravagantly about  
our authority — which the Lord gave us for building up your faith  
and not for overthrowing it — still I have no reason to be ashamed.  
9 I say this, that it may not seem as if I were trying to overawe you  
10 by my letters. For people say “His letters are impressive and vig-  
orous, but his personal appearance is insignificant and his speak-  
11 ing contemptible.” Let such a man be assured of this — that our  
words in our letters show us to be, when absent, just what our deeds  
12 will show us to be, when present. We have not indeed the audacity  
to class or compare ourselves with some of those who indulge in  
self-commendation! But, when such persons measure themselves by  
themselves, and compare themselves with themselves, they show a  
13 want of wisdom. We, however, will not give way to unlimited boast-  
ing, but will confine ourselves to the limits of the sphere to which  
14 God limited us, when he permitted us to come as far as Corinth. For  
it is not the case, as it would be if we were not in the habit of coming  
to you, that we are exceeding our bounds! Why, we were the very  
15 first to reach you with the Good News of the Christ! Our boasting,  
therefore, is not unlimited, nor does it extend to the labors of others;  
but our hope is that, as your faith grows, our influence among you  
may be very greatly increased — though still confined to our sphere  
16 — So that we shall be able to tell the Good News in the districts be-  
yond you, without trespassing on the sphere assigned to others, or  
17 boasting of what has been already done. ‘Let him who boasts make  
18 his boast of the Lord.’ For it is not the man who commends himself  
11 that stands the test, but the man who is commended by the Lord.  
I could wish that you would tolerate a little folly in me! But in-  
2 deed you do tolerate me. I am jealous over you with the jealousy  
of God. For I betrothed you to one husband, that I might present  
3 you to the Christ a pure bride. Yet I fear that it may turn out that,  
just as the Serpent by his craftiness deceived Eve, so your minds may  
4 have lost the loyalty and purity due from you to the Christ. For, if  
some new-comer is proclaiming a Jesus other than him whom we  
proclaimed, or if you are receiving a Spirit different from the Spirit



which you received, or a Good News different from that which you  
 welcomed, then you are marvelously tolerant! I do not regard my- 5  
 self as in any way inferior to the most eminent Apostles! Though I 6  
 am no trained orator, yet I am not without knowledge; indeed we  
 made this perfectly clear to you in every way. Perhaps you say that I 7  
 did wrong in humbling myself that you might be exalted — I mean  
 because I told you God's Good News without payment. I robbed 8  
 other churches by taking pay from them, so that I might serve you!  
 And, when I was with you in need, I did not become a burden to 9  
 any of you; for our Brothers, on coming from Macedonia, supplied  
 my needs. I kept myself, and will keep myself from being an ex-  
 pense to you in any way. As surely as I know anything of the Truth 10  
 of Christ, this boast, as far as I am concerned, shall not be stopped  
 in any part of Greece. Why? Because I do not love you? God knows 11  
 that I do! What I am doing now I shall continue to do, that I may 12  
 cut away the ground from under those who are wishing for some  
 ground for attacking me, so that as regards the thing of which they  
 boast they may appear in their true characters, just as we do. Men of 13  
 this stamp are false apostles, treacherous workers, disguising them-  
 selves as Apostles of Christ! And no wonder; for even Satan dis- 14  
 guises himself as an angel of Light. It is not surprising, therefore, if 15  
 his servants also disguise themselves as servants of Righteousness.  
 But their end will be in accordance with their actions. I say again — 16  
 Let no one think me a fool! Yet, if you do, at least welcome me as  
 you would a fool, that I, too may indulge in a little boasting. When 17  
 I speak thus, I am not speaking as the Master would, but as a fool  
 might, in boasting so confidently. As so many are boasting of earthly 18  
 things, I, too, will boast. For all your cleverness, you tolerate fools 19  
 willingly enough! You tolerate a man even when he enslaves you, 20  
 when he plunders you, when he gets you into his power, when he  
 puts on airs of superiority, when he strikes you in the face! I admit, 21  
 to my shame, that we have been weak. But whatever the subject on  
 which others are not afraid to boast — though it is foolish to say so  
 — I am not afraid either! Are they Hebrews? So am I! Are they Is- 22  
 raelites? So am I! Are they descendants of Abraham? So am I! Are 23

they ‘Servants of Christ’? Though it is madness to talk like this, I am more so than they! I have had more of toil, more of imprisonment! I have been flogged times without number. I have been often  
 24 at death’s door. Five times I received at the hands of the Jews forty  
 25 lashes, all but one. Three times I was beaten with rods. Once I was stoned. Three times I was shipwrecked. I have spent a whole day  
 26 and night in the deep. My journeys have been many. I have been through dangers from rivers, dangers from robbers, dangers from my own people, dangers from the Gentiles, dangers in towns, dangers in the country, dangers on the sea, dangers among false Brothers. I have been through toil and hardship. I have passed many a sleepless night; I have endured hunger and thirst; I have often been  
 28 without food; I have known cold and nakedness. And, not to speak of other things, there is my daily burden of anxiety about all the  
 29 Churches. Who is weak without my being weak? Who is led astray without my burning with indignation? If I must boast, I will boast  
 30 of things which show my weakness! The God and Father of the Lord Jesus — he who is for ever blessed — knows that I am speaking the  
 32 truth. When I was in Damascus, the Governor under King Aretas  
 33 had the gates of that city guarded, so as to arrest me, but I was let down in a basket through a window in the wall, and so escaped his  
 12 hands.

I must boast! It is unprofitable; but I will pass to visions and revelations given by the Lord. I know a man in union with Christ, who, fourteen years ago — whether in the body or out of the body I do not know; God knows — was caught up (this man of whom I am speaking) to the third Heaven. And I know that this man — whether in the  
 4 body or separated from the body I do not know; God knows — Was caught up into Paradise, and heard unspeakable things of which no human being may tell. About such a man I will boast, but about myself I will not boast except as regards my weaknesses. Yet if I choose to boast, I shall not be a fool; for I shall be speaking no more than the truth. But I refrain, lest any one should credit me with more than he can see in me or hear from me, and because of the marvelous character of the revelations. It was for this reason, and to prevent my

thinking too highly of myself, that a thorn was sent to pierce my  
 flesh — an instrument of Satan to discipline me — so that I should  
 not think too highly of myself. About this I three times entreated the 8  
 Lord, praying that it might leave me. But his reply has been — ‘My 9  
 help is enough for you; for my strength attains its perfection in the  
 midst of weakness.’ Most gladly, then, will I boast all the more of my  
 weaknesses, so that the strength of the Christ may overshadow me.  
 That is why I delight in weakness, ill-treatment, hardship, persecu- 10  
 tion, and difficulties, when borne for Christ. For, when I am weak,  
 then it is that I am strong! I have been “playing the fool!” It is you 11  
 who drove me to it. For it is you who ought to have been commend-  
 ing me! Although I am nobody, in no respect did I prove inferior  
 to the most eminent Apostles. The marks of the true Apostle were 12  
 exhibited among you in constant endurance, as well as by signs, by  
 marvels, and by miracles. In what respect, I ask, were you treated 13  
 worse than the other Churches, unless it was that, for my part, I re-  
 fused to become a burden to you? Forgive me the wrong I thus did  
 you! Remember, this is the third time that I have made every prepara- 14  
 tion to come to see you, and I shall refuse to be a burden to you;  
 I want, not your money, but you. It is not the duty of children to  
 put by for their parents, but of parents to put by for their children.  
 For my part, I will most gladly spend, and be spent, for your wel- 15  
 fare. Can it be that the more intensely I love you the less I am to be  
 loved? You will admit that I was not a burden to you but you say 16  
 that I was “crafty” and caught you “by a trick”! Do you assert that 17  
 I took advantage of you through any of those whom I have sent to  
 you? I urged Titus to go, and I sent our Brother with him. Did Titus 18  
 take any advantage of you? Did not we live in the same Spirit, and  
 tread in the same footsteps? Have you all this time been fancying 19  
 that it is to you that we are making our defense? No, it is in the sight  
 of God, and in union with Christ, that we are speaking. And all this,  
 dear friends, is to build up your characters; for I am afraid that per- 20  
 haps, when I come, I may find that you are not what I want you to  
 be, and, on the other hand, that you may find that I am what you do  
 not want me to be. I am afraid that I may find quarreling, jealousy,

ill-feeling, rivalry, slandering, back-biting, self-assertion, and disorder. I am afraid lest, on my next visit, my God may humble me in regard to you, and that I may have to mourn over many who have long been sinning, and have not repented of the impurity, immorality, and sensuality, in which they have indulged.

For the third time I am coming to see you. 'By the word of two or three witnesses each statement shall be established.' I have said it, and I say it again before I come, just as if I were with you on my second visit, though for the moment absent, I say to those who have been long sinning, as well as to all others — that if I come again, I shall spare no one. And that will be the proof, which you are looking for, that the Christ speaks through me. There is no weakness in his dealings with you. No, he shows his power among you. For though his crucifixion was due to weakness, his life is due to the power of God. And we, also, are weak in his weakness, but with him we shall live for you through the power of God. Put yourselves to the proof, to see whether you are holding to the Faith. Test yourselves. Surely you recognize this fact about yourselves — that Jesus Christ is in you! Unless indeed you cannot stand the test! But I hope that you will recognize that we can stand the test. We pray God that you may do nothing wrong, not that we may be seen to stand the test, but that you may do what is right, even though we may seem not to stand the test. We have no power at all against the Truth, but we have power in the service of the Truth. We are glad when we are weak, if you are strong. And what we pray for is that you may become perfect. This is my reason for writing as I am now doing, while I am away from you, so that, when I am with you, I may not act harshly in the exercise of the authority which the Lord gave me — and gave me for building up and not for pulling down. And now, brothers, good-bye. Aim at perfection; take courage; agree together; live in peace. And then God, the source of all love and peace, will be with you. Greet one another with a sacred kiss. All Christ's people here send you their greetings. May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion with the Holy Spirit, be with you all.

## GALATIANS

## PAUL'S LETTER TO THE GALATIANS

To the churches in Galatia, from Paul, an Apostle whose commission is not from men and is given, not by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father who raised him from the dead; and from all the Brothers here. May God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ, bless you and give you peace. For Christ, to rescue us from this present wicked age, gave himself for our sins, in accordance with the will of God and Father, to whom be ascribed all glory for ever and ever. Amen. I am astonished at your so soon deserting him, who called you through the love of Christ, for a different 'Good News,' Which is really no Good News at all. But then, I know that there are people who are harassing you, and who want to pervert the Good News of the Christ. Yet even if we — or if an angel from Heaven were to tell you any other 'Good News' than that which we told you, may he be accursed! We have said it before, and I repeat it now — If any one tells you a 'Good News' other than that which you received, may he be accursed! Is this, I ask, trying to conciliate men, or God? Am I seeking to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I should not be a servant of Christ. I would remind you, Brothers, that the Good News which I told is no mere human invention. I, at least, did not receive it from man, nor was I taught it, but it came to me through a revelation made by Jesus Christ. You heard, no doubt, of my conduct when I was devoted to Judaism — how I persecuted the Church of God to an extent beyond belief, and made havoc of it, and how, in my devotion to Judaism, I surpassed many of my contemporaries among my own people in my intense earnestness in upholding the traditions of my ancestors. But when God, who had set me apart even before my birth, and who called me by his love, saw fit to reveal his Son in me, so that I might tell the Good News of him among the Gentiles, then at once, instead of consulting any human being, or even going up to Jerusalem to see those who were

## Galatians 2

Apostles before me, I went to Arabia, and came back again to Damascus. Three years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem to make the acquaintance of Peter, and I stayed a fortnight with him. I did not, however, see any other Apostle, except James, the Master's brother. (As to what I am now writing to you, I call God to witness that I am speaking the truth). Afterwards I went to the districts of Syria and Cilicia. But I was still unknown even by sight to the Christian Churches in Judea; all that they had heard was — 'The man who once persecuted us is now telling the Good News of the very Faith of which he once made havoc.' And they praised God on my account.

Fourteen years afterwards I went up to Jerusalem again with Barnabas, and I took Titus also with me. It was in obedience to a revelation that I went; and I laid before the Apostles the Good News that I am proclaiming among the Gentiles. I did this privately before those who are thought highly of, for fear that I might possibly be taking, or might have already taken, a course which would prove useless. Yet even my companion, Titus, though a Greek, was not compelled to be circumcised. But, on account of the false Brothers who had stolen in, the men who had crept in to spy upon the liberty which we have through union with Christ Jesus, in order to bring us back to slavery — Why, we did not for a moment yield submission to them, that the Truth of the Good News might be yours always! Of those who are thought somewhat highly of — what they once were makes no difference to me; God does not recognize human distinctions — those, I say, who are thought highly of added nothing to my Message. On the contrary, they saw that I had been entrusted with the Good News for the Gentiles, just as Peter had been for the Jews. For he who gave Peter power for his mission to the Jews gave me, also, power to go to the Gentiles. Recognizing the charge entrusted to me, James, Peter, and John, who were regarded as pillars of the Church, openly acknowledged Barnabas and me as fellow-workers, agreeing that we should go to the Gentiles, and they to the Jews. Only we were to remember the poor — the very thing I was myself anxious to do. But, when Peter came to Antioch, I opposed him to

his face; for he stood self-condemned. Before certain persons came 12  
 from James, he had been in the habit of eating with the Gentile con-  
 verts; but, when they came, he began to withdraw and hold aloof,  
 for fear of offending those who still held to circumcision. The rest of 13  
 the Jewish converts were guilty of the same hypocrisy, so that even  
 Barnabas was led away by it. But, when I saw that they were not 14  
 dealing straightforwardly with the Truth of the Good News, I said  
 to Peter, before them all, "If you, who were born a Jew, adopt Gentile  
 customs, instead of Jewish, why are you trying to compel the Gentile  
 converts to adopt Jewish customs?" We, though we are Jews by birth 15  
 and not outcasts of Gentile origin, know that no one is pronounced  
 righteous as the result of obedience to Law, but only through faith in  
 Christ Jesus. So we placed our faith in Christ Jesus, in order that we 16  
 might be pronounced righteous, as the result of faith in Christ, and  
 not of obedience to Law; for such obedience 'will not result in even  
 one soul's being pronounced righteous.' If, while seeking to be pro- 17  
 nounced righteous through union with Christ, we were ourselves  
 seen to be outcasts, would that make Christ an agent of sin? Heaven  
 forbid! For, if I rebuild the very things that I pulled down, I prove 18  
 myself to have done wrong. I, indeed, through Law became dead 19  
 to Law, in order to live for God. I have been crucified with Christ. 20  
 So it is no longer I that live, but it is Christ who lives in me; and, as  
 for my present earthly life, I am living it by faith in the Son of God,  
 who loved me and gave himself for me. I do not reject the love of 21  
 God. If righteousness comes through Law, then there was no need  
 for Christ to die! 3

Foolish Galatians! Who has been fascinating you — you before  
 whose very eyes Jesus Christ was depicted upon the cross? Here is 2  
 the one thing that I want to find out from you — Did you receive  
 the Spirit as the result of obedience to Law, or of your having  
 listened with faith? Can you be so foolish? After beginning with 3  
 what is spiritual, do you now end with what is external? Did you 4  
 go through so much to no purpose? — if indeed it really was to no  
 purpose! He who supplies you abundantly with his Spirit and 5  
 endows you with such powers — does he do this as the result of

### Galatians 3

obedience to Law? or as the result of your having listened with  
6 faith? It is just as it was with Abraham — ‘He had faith in God,  
7 and his faith was regarded by God as righteousness.’ You see, then,  
that those whose lives are based on faith are the Sons of Abraham.  
8 And Scripture, foreseeing that God would pronounce the Gentiles  
righteous as the result of faith, foretold the Good News to  
Abraham in the words — ‘Through thee all the Gentiles shall be  
9 blessed.’ And, therefore, those whose lives are based on faith share  
10 the blessings bestowed upon the faith of Abraham. All who rely  
upon obedience to Law are under a curse, for Scripture says —  
11 ‘Cursed is every one who does not abide by all that is written in  
the Book of the Law, and do it.’ Again, it is evident that no one is  
pronounced righteous before God through Law, for we read —  
12 ‘Through faith the righteous man shall find Life.’ But the Law is  
not based on faith; no, its words are — ‘Those who practice these  
13 precepts will find Life through them.’ Christ ransomed us from the  
curse pronounced in the Law, by taking the curse on himself for us,  
for Scripture says — ‘Cursed is any one who is hanged on a tree.’  
14 And this he did that the blessing given to Abraham might be  
extended to the Gentiles through their union with Jesus Christ;  
that so, through our faith, we also might receive the promised gift  
15 of the Spirit. To take an illustration, Brothers, from daily life — No  
one sets aside even an agreement between two men, when once it  
16 has been confirmed, nor does he add conditions to it. Now it was  
to Abraham that the promises were made, ‘and to his offspring.’ It  
was not said ‘to his offsprings,’ as if many persons were meant, but  
the words were ‘to thy offspring,’ showing that one person was  
17 meant — and that was Christ. My point is this — An agreement  
already confirmed by God cannot be canceled by the Law, which  
came four hundred and thirty years later, so as to cause the  
18 promise to be set aside. If our heritage is the result of Law, then it  
has ceased to be the result of a promise. Yet God conferred it on  
19 Abraham by a promise. What, then, you ask, was the use of the  
Law? It was a later addition, to make men conscious of their  
wrong-doings, and intended to last only till the coming of that



‘offspring’ to whom the promise had been made; and it was delivered through angels by a mediator. Now mediation implies 20  
 more than one person, but God is one only. Does that set the Law 21  
 in opposition to God’s promises? Heaven forbid! For, if a Law had  
 been given capable of bestowing Life, then righteousness would  
 have actually owed its existence to Law. But the words of Scripture 22  
 represent the whole world as being in bondage to sin, so that the  
 promised blessing, dependent, as it is, upon faith in Jesus Christ,  
 may be given to those who have faith in him. Before the coming of 23  
 faith, we were kept under the guard of the Law, in bondage,  
 awaiting the Faith that was destined to be revealed. Thus the Law 24  
 has proved a guide to lead us to Christ, in order that we may be  
 pronounced righteous as the result of faith. But now that faith has 25  
 come we no longer need a guide. For you are all Sons of God, 26  
 through your faith in Christ Jesus. For all of you who were 27  
 baptized into union with Christ clothed yourselves with Christ. All 28  
 distinctions between Jew and Greek, slave and freeman, male and  
 female, have vanished; for in union with Christ Jesus you are all  
 one. And, since you belong to Christ, it follows that you are 29  
 Abraham’s offspring and, under the promise, sharers in the  
 inheritance. 4

My point is this — As long as the heir is under age, there is no dif-  
 ference between him and a slave, though he is master of the whole  
 estate. He is subject to the control of guardians and stewards, dur- 2  
 ing the period for which his father has power to appoint them. And 3  
 so is it with us; when we were under age, as it were, we were slaves  
 to the puerile teaching of this world; but, when the full time came, 4  
 God sent his Son — born a woman’s child, born subject to Law —  
 To ransom those who were subject to Law, so that we might take our 5  
 position as sons. And it is because you are sons that God sent into 6  
 our hearts the Spirit of his Son, with the cry — ‘Abba, our Father.’  
 You, therefore, are no longer a slave, but a son; and, if a son, then an 7  
 heir also, by God’s appointment. Yet formerly, in your ignorance of 8  
 God, you became slaves to ‘gods’ which were no gods. But now that 9  
 you have found God — or, rather, have been found by him — how

## Galatians 4

is it that you are turning back to that poor and feeble puerile teaching, to which yet once again you are wanting to become slaves? You are scrupulous in keeping Days and Months and Seasons and Years! You make me fear that the labor which I have spent on you may have been wasted. I entreat you, Brothers, to become like me, as I became like you. You have never done me any wrong. You remember that it was owing to bodily infirmity that on the first occasion I told you the Good News. And as for what must have tried you in my condition, it did not inspire you with scorn or disgust, but you welcomed me as if I had been an angel of God — or Christ Jesus himself! What has become then, of your blessings? For I can bear witness that, had it been possible, you would have torn out your eyes and given them to me! Am I to think, then, that I have become your enemy by telling you the truth? Certain people are seeking your favor, but with no honorable object. No, indeed, they want to isolate you, so that you will have to seek their favor. It is always honorable to have your favor sought in an honorable cause, and not only when I am with you, my dear children — You for whom I am again enduring a mother's pains, till a likeness to Christ shall have been formed in you. But I could wish to be with you now and speak in a different tone, for I am perplexed about you. Tell me, you who want to be still subject to Law — Why do not you listen to the Law? Scripture says that Abraham had two sons, one the child of the slave-woman and the other the child of the free woman. But the child of the slave-woman was born in the course of nature, while the child of the free woman was born in fulfillment of a promise. This story may be taken as an allegory. The women stand for two Covenants. One Covenant, given from Mount Sinai, produces a race of slaves and is represented by Hagar (The word Hagar meaning in Arabia Mount Sinai) and it ranks with the Jerusalem of to-day, for she and her children are in slavery. But the Jerusalem above is free, and she it is who is our mother. For Scripture says — 'Rejoice, thou barren one, who dost never bear, Break into shouts, thou who art never in labor, For many are the children of her who is desolate — aye, more than of her who has a husband.' As for ourselves, brothers, we, like Isaac, are children

born in fulfillment of a promise. Yet at that time the child born in 29  
 the course of nature persecuted the child born by the power of the  
 Spirit; and it is the same now. But what does the passage of Scrip- 30  
 ture say? 'Send away the slave-woman and her son; for the slave's  
 son shall not be co-heir with the son of the free woman.' And so, 31  
 Brothers, we are not children of a slave, but of her who is free. 5  
 It is for freedom that Christ set us free; stand firm therefore, and do  
 not again be held under the yoke of slavery. Understand that I, Paul, 2  
 myself tell you that if you allow yourselves to be circumcised, Christ  
 will avail you nothing. I again declare to every one who receives cir- 3  
 cumcision, that he binds himself to obey the whole Law. You have 4  
 severed yourselves from Christ — you who are seeking to be pro-  
 nounced righteous through Law; you have fallen away from love.  
 For we, by the help of the Spirit, are eagerly waiting for the fulfill- 5  
 ment of our hope — that we may be pronounced righteous as the re-  
 sult of faith. If a man is in union with Christ Jesus, neither is circum- 6  
 cision nor the omission of it anything, but faith, working through  
 love, is everything. You were once making good progress! Who has 7  
 hindered you from obeying the Truth? The persuasion brought to 8  
 bear on you does not come from him who calls you. A little leaven 9  
 leavens all the dough. I, through my union with the Lord, am per- 10  
 suaded that you will learn to think with me. But the man who is  
 disturbing your minds will have to bear his punishment, whoever 11  
 he may be. If I, Brothers, am still proclaiming circumcision, why am  
 I still persecuted? It seems that the Cross has ceased to be an obsta- 12  
 cle! I could even wish that the people who are unsettling you would  
 go further still and mutilate themselves. Remember, Brothers, to you 13  
 the Call came to give you freedom. Only do not make your freedom  
 an opportunity for self-indulgence, but serve one another in a loving  
 spirit. Indeed, the whole Law has been summed up in this one pre- 14  
 cept- -'Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thou dost thyself.' But, if you 15  
 are continually wounding and preying upon one another, take care  
 that you are not destroyed by one another. This is what I have to say 16  
 — Let your steps be guided by the Spirit, and then you will never  
 gratify the cravings of your earthly nature. For these cravings of our 17

## Galatians 6

earthly nature conflict with the Spirit, and the Spirit with our earthly nature — they are two contrary principles — so that you cannot do  
18 what you wish. But, if you follow the guidance of the Spirit, you are  
19 not subject to Law. The sins of our earthly nature are unmistakable.  
20 They are sins like these — unchastity, impurity, indecency, idolatry,  
sorcery, quarrels, strife, jealousy, outbursts of passion, rivalries, dis-  
21 sensions, divisions, feelings of envy, drunkenness, revelry, and the  
like. And I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who indulge  
22 in such things will have no place in the Kingdom of God. But the  
fruit produced by the Spirit is love, joy, peace, forbearance, kindli-  
23 ness, generosity, trustfulness, gentleness, self-control. Against such  
24 things there is no law! And those who belong to Jesus, the Christ,  
have already crucified their earthly nature, with its passions and its  
25 cravings. Since our Life is due to the Spirit, let us rule our conduct  
26 also by the Spirit. Do not let us grow vain, and provoke or envy one  
6 another.

Brothers, even if a man should be caught committing a sin, you who  
are spiritually minded should, in a gentle spirit, help him to recover  
2 himself, taking care lest any one of you also should be tempted. Bear  
3 one another's burdens, and so carry out the Law of the Christ. If a  
man imagines himself to be somebody, when he is really nobody,  
4 he deceives himself. Let every one test his own work, and then his  
cause for satisfaction will be in himself and not in a comparison of  
5 himself with his neighbor; for every one must bear his own load.  
6 He, however, who is being instructed in the Message ought always  
7 to share his blessings with the man who instructs him. Do not be  
deceived. God cannot be mocked. What a man sows that he will  
8 reap. For he who sows the field of his earthly nature will from that  
earthly nature reap corruption; while he who sows the field of the  
9 spirit will from that spirit reap Immortal Life. Let us never tire of  
doing right, for at the proper season we shall reap our harvest, if  
10 we do not grow weary. Therefore, I say, as the opportunity occurs,  
let us treat every one with kindness, and especially members of the  
11 Household of the Faith. See in what large letters I am writing with  
12 my own hand. Those who wish to appear to advantage in regard to

outward observances are the very people who are trying to compel  
you to be circumcised; and they do it only to avoid being persecuted  
for the cross of Jesus, the Christ. Even these men who are circum- 13  
cised do not themselves keep the Law; yet they want you to be cir-  
cumcised, so that they may boast of your observance of the rite. But, 14  
for my part, may I never boast of anything except the cross of Jesus  
Christ, our Master, through whom the world has been crucified to  
me, and I to the world. For neither is circumcision nor the omission 15  
of it anything; but a new nature is everything. May all who rule 16  
their conduct by this principle find peace and mercy — they who  
are the Israel of God. For the future let no one trouble me; for I bear 17  
the marks of Jesus branded on my body. May the blessing of Jesus 18  
Christ, our Lord, rest on your souls, Brothers. Amen.



## EPHESIANS

## PAUL'S LETTER TO THE EPHESIANS

To Christ's People [AT EPHESUS] who are faithful to him, from  
 Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God. May God, our Fa- 2  
 ther, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace. Blessed 3  
 is the God and Father of Jesus Christ, our Lord, who has blessed  
 us on high with every spiritual blessing, in Christ. For he chose us 4  
 in our union with Christ before the creation of the universe, that  
 we might be holy and blameless in his sight, living in the spirit of  
 love. From the first he destined us, in his good-will towards us, to 5  
 be adopted as Sons through Jesus Christ, and so to enhance that 6  
 glorious manifestation of his loving- kindness which he gave us in  
 The Beloved; for in him, and through the shedding of his blood, 7  
 we have found redemption in the pardon of our offenses. All this 8  
 accords with the loving-kindness which God lavished upon us, ac-  
 companied by countless gifts of wisdom and discernment, when he 9  
 made known to us his hidden purpose. And it also accords with the  
 good-will which God purposed to exhibit in Christ, in view of that 10  
 Divine Order which was to mark the completion of the ages, when  
 he should make everything, both in Heaven and on earth, center in  
 him. In him, I say, for by our union with him we became God's Her- 11  
 itage, having from the first been destined for this in the intention of  
 him who, in all that happens, is carrying out his own fixed purpose;  
 that we should enhance his glory — we who have been the first to 12  
 rest our hopes on the Christ. And you, too, by your union with him, 13  
 after you had heard the Message of the Truth, the Good News of  
 your Salvation — you believed in him and were sealed as his by re-  
 ceiving the holy Spirit, which he had promised. And the Spirit is a 14  
 pledge of our future heritage, fore- shadowing the full redemption  
 of God's own People — to enhance his Glory. And therefore I, ever 15  
 since I heard of the faith in the Lord Jesus which prevails among

## Ephesians 2

16 you, and of your confidence in all Christ's People, have never omitted to thank God on your behalf, whenever I make mention of you in  
17 my prayers. My prayer is that the God of Jesus Christ our Lord, the all- glorious Father, may inspire you with wisdom and true insight  
18 through a fuller knowledge of himself; that your minds may be so enlightened that you may realize the hope given by God's Call, the  
19 wealth of the glory of his heritage among Christ's People, and the transcendent greatness of the power which he is able to exercise in  
20 dealing with us who believe in him. The same mighty power was exerted upon the Christ, when he raised the Christ from the dead and  
'caused him to sit at his right hand' on high, exalting him above all  
21 Angels and Archangels of every rank, and above every name that can be named, whether in the present age, or in the age to come.  
22 And God placed 'all things under Christ's feet,' and gave him to the  
23 Church as its supreme Head; for the Church is Christ's Body, and is  
2 filled by him who fills all things everywhere with his presence.  
You yourselves were once dead because of your offenses and sins.  
2 For at one time you lived in sin, following the ways of the world, in subjection to the Ruler of the Powers of the air — the Spirit who is  
3 still at work among the disobedient. And it was among them that we all once lived our lives, indulging the cravings of our earthly nature, and carrying out the desires prompted by that earthly nature and by our own thoughts. Our very nature exposed us to the Divine  
4 Wrath, like the rest of mankind. Yet God, in his abundant compassion, and because of the great love with which he loved us, even though we were 'dead' because of our offenses, gave Life to us in giving Life to the Christ. (By God's loving-kindness you have been  
6 saved.) And, through our union with Christ Jesus, God raised us  
7 with him, and caused us to sit with him on high, in order that, by his goodness to us in Christ Jesus, he might display in the ages to  
8 come the boundless wealth of his loving- kindness. For it is by God's loving-kindness that you have been saved, through your faith. It is  
9 not due to yourselves; the gift is God's. It is not due to obedience



to Law, lest any one should boast. For we are God's handiwork, cre- 10  
 ated, by our union with Christ Jesus, for the good actions in do-  
 ing which God had pre-arranged that we should spend our lives.  
 Remember, therefore, that you were once Gentiles yourselves, as 11  
 your bodies showed; you were called 'The Uncircumcised' by those  
 who were called 'The Circumcised' — circumcised only by the hand  
 of man! Remember that you were at that time far from Christ; you 12  
 were shut out from the citizenship of Israel; you were strangers to  
 the Covenants founded on God's Promise; you were in the world  
 without hope and without God. But now, through your union with 13  
 Christ Jesus, you who once were 'far off' have, by the shedding of the  
 blood of the Christ, been brought 'near.' He it is who is our Peace. He 14  
 made the two divisions of mankind one, broke down the barrier that  
 separated them, and in his human nature put an end to the cause 15  
 of enmity between them — the Law with its injunctions and ordi-  
 nances — in order to create, through union with himself, from Jew  
 and Gentile, one New Man and thus make peace. And when, upon 16  
 the cross, he had destroyed their mutual enmity, he sought by means  
 of his cross to reconcile them both to God, united in one Body. He 17  
 came with the Good News of peace for you who were 'far off,' and  
 of peace for those who were 'near'; for it is through him that we, the 18  
 Jews and the Gentiles, united in the one Spirit, are now able to ap-  
 proach the Father. It follows, then, that you are no longer strangers 19  
 and aliens, but are fellow-citizens with Christ's People and mem-  
 bers of God's Household. You have been built up upon the founda- 20  
 tion laid by the Apostles and Prophets, Christ Jesus himself being  
 'the corner-stone.' United in him, every part of the building, closely 21  
 joined together, will grow into a Temple, consecrated by its union  
 with the Lord. And, through union in him, you also are being built 22  
 up together, to be a dwelling-place for God through the Spirit. 3  
 For this reason I, Paul, the prisoner of Jesus, the Christ, for the sake  
 of you Gentiles — For you have heard, I suppose, of the responsible 2  
 charge with which God entrusted me for your benefit, and also that 3  
 it was by direct revelation that the hidden purpose of God was made  
 known to me, as I have already briefly told you. And, by reading 4

## Ephesians 4

what I have written, you will be able to judge how far I understand  
5 this hidden purpose of God in Christ. In former generations it was  
not made known to mankind, as fully as it has now been revealed  
by the Spirit to the Apostles and Prophets among Christ's People —  
6 That, by union with Christ Jesus and through the Good News, the  
Gentiles are co-heirs with us and members of one Body, and that  
7 they share with us in God's Promise. Of this Good News I became a  
minister, in virtue of the charge with which God entrusted me in the  
8 exercise of his power — Yes, to me, who am less than the least of all  
Christ's People, was this charge entrusted! — to tell the Gentiles the  
9 Good News of the boundless wealth to be found in the Christ, and to  
make clear what is God's way of working out that hidden purpose  
which from the first has been concealed in the mind of the Creator  
10 of all things; so that now to the Archangels and to all the Powers  
on high should be made known, through the Church, the all-em-  
11 bracing wisdom of God, in accordance with that purpose which  
runs through all the ages and which he has now accomplished in  
12 Jesus, the Christ, our Master. And in union with him, and through  
our trust in him, we find courage to approach God with confidence.  
13 Therefore I beg you not to be disheartened at the sufferings that I  
14 am undergoing for your sakes; for they redound to your honor. For  
15 this reason, then, I kneel before the Father — From whom all 'father-  
16 hood' in Heaven and on earth derives its name — And pray that, in  
proportion to the wealth of his glory, he will strengthen you with  
17 his power by breathing his Spirit into your inmost soul, so that the  
Christ, through your faith, may make his home within your hearts  
in love; And I pray that you, now firmly rooted and established,  
18 may, with all Christ's People, have the power to comprehend in all  
19 its width and length and height and depth, and to understand —  
though it surpasses all understanding — the love of the Christ; and  
20 so be filled to the full with God himself. To him who, through his  
power which is at work within us, is able to do far more than any-  
21 thing that we can ask or conceive — To him be all glory through the  
Church and through Christ Jesus, for all generations, age after age.  
4 Amen.

I urge you, then — I who am a prisoner in the Master's cause — to  
 live lives worthy of the Call that you have received; always humble 2  
 and gentle, patient, bearing lovingly with one another, and striving 3  
 to maintain in the bond of peace the unity given by the Spirit. There 4  
 is but one Body and one Spirit, just as there was but one hope set  
 before you when you received your Call. There is but one Lord, one 5  
 Faith, one Baptism. There is but one God and Father of all — the God 6  
 who is over all, pervades all, and is in all. Every one of us, however, 7  
 has been entrusted with some charge, each in accordance with the  
 extent of the gift of the Christ. That is why it is said — 'When he 8  
 went up on high, he led his captives into captivity. And gave gifts  
 to mankind.' Now surely this 'going up' must imply that he had 9  
 already gone down into the world beneath. He who went down is 10  
 the same as he who went up — up beyond the highest Heaven, that  
 he might fill all things with his presence. And he it is who gave to 11  
 the Church Apostles, Prophets, Missionaries, Pastors, and Teachers,  
 to fit his People for the work of the ministry, for the building up of 12  
 the Body of the Christ. And this shall continue, until we all attain 13  
 to that unity which is given by faith and by a fuller knowledge of  
 the Son of God; until we reach the ideal man — the full standard  
 of the perfection of the Christ. Then we shall no longer be like in- 14  
 fants, tossed backward and forward, blown about by every breath  
 of human teaching, through the trickery and the craftiness of men,  
 towards the snares of error; but holding the truth in a spirit of love, 15  
 we shall grow into complete union with him who is our Head —  
 Christ himself. For from him the whole Body, closely joined and 16  
 knit together by the contact of every part with the source of its life,  
 derives its power to grow, in proportion to the vigor of each indi-  
 vidual part; and so is being built up in a spirit of love. This, then, 17  
 as one in union with the Lord, I say to you and urge upon you: Do  
 not continue to live such purposeless lives as the Gentiles live, with 18  
 their powers of discernment darkened, cut off from the Life of God,  
 owing to the ignorance that prevails among them and to the hard-  
 ness of their hearts. Lost to all sense of shame, they have abandoned 19

themselves to licentiousness, in order to practice every kind of impurity without restraint. But far different is the lesson you learned from the Christ — if, that is, you really listened to him, and through union with him were taught the Truth, as it is to be found in Jesus. For you learned with regard to your former way of living that you must cast off your old nature, which, yielding to deluding passions, grows corrupt; that the very spirit of your minds must be constantly renewed; and that you must clothe yourselves in that new nature which was created to resemble God, with the righteousness and holiness springing from the Truth. Since, therefore, you have cast off what is false, 'you must every one of you speak the truth to your neighbors.' For we are united to one another like the parts of a body. 'Be angry, yet do not sin.' Do not let the sun go down upon your anger; and give no opportunity to the Devil. Let the man who steals steal no longer, but rather let him toil with his hands at honest work, so that he may have something to share with any one in want. Never let any foul word pass your lips, but only such good words as the occasion demands, that they may be a help to those who hear them. And do not grieve God's Holy Spirit; for it was through that Spirit that God sealed you as his, against the Day of Redemption. Let all bitterness, passion, anger, brawling, and abusive language be banished from among you, as well as all malice. Be kind to one another, tenderhearted, ready to forgive one another, just as God, in Christ, forgave you.

2 Therefore imitate God, as his dear children, and live a life of love, following the example of the Christ, who loved you and gave himself for you as 'an offering and a sacrifice to God, that should be fragrant and acceptable.' As for unchastity and every kind of impurity, or greed, do not let them even be mentioned among you, as befits Christ's People, nor shameful conduct, nor foolish talk or jesting, for they are wholly out of place among you; but rather thanksgiving. For of this you may be sure — that no one who is unchaste or impure or greedy of gain (for to be greedy of gain is idolatry) has any place awaiting him in the kingdom of the Christ and God. Do not let any one deceive you with specious arguments. Those are the sins

that bring down the Wrath of God upon the disobedient. Therefore 7  
 have nothing to do with such people. For, although you were once in 8  
 Darkness, now, by your union with the Lord, you are in the Light.  
 Live as 'Children of Light' - - For the outcome of life in the Light 9  
 may be seen in every form of goodness, righteousness, and sincer-  
 ity — Always trying to find out what is pleasing to the Lord. Take 10  
 no part in deeds of Darkness, from which no good can come; on the  
 contrary, expose them. It is degrading even to speak of the things 12  
 continually done by them in secret. All such actions, when exposed, 13  
 have their true character made manifest by the Light. For everything 14  
 that has its true character made manifest is clear as light. And that is  
 why it is said — 'Sleeper, awake! Arise from the dead, and the Christ  
 shall give thee light!' Take great care, then, how you live — not un- 15  
 wisely but wisely, making the most of every opportunity; for these 16  
 are evil days. Therefore do not grow thoughtless, but try to under- 17  
 stand what the Lord's will is. Do not drink wine to excess, for that 18  
 leads to profligacy; but seek to be filled with the Spirit of God, and  
 speak to one another in psalms and hymns and sacred songs. Sing 19  
 and make music in your hearts to the Lord. Always give thanks for 20  
 everything to our God and Father, in the Name of our Lord Jesus  
 Christ; and submit to one another from reverence for him. Wives 21  
 should submit to their husbands as submitting to the Lord. For a 23  
 man is the Head of his wife, as the Christ is the Head of the Church  
 — being indeed himself the Savior of his Body. But as the Church 24  
 submits to the Christ, so also should wives submit to their husbands  
 in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just as the Christ loved 25  
 the Church, and gave himself for her, to make her holy, after puri- 26  
 fying her by the Washing with the Water, according to his promise;  
 so that he might himself bring the Church, in all her beauty, into his 27  
 own presence, with no spot or wrinkle or blemish of any kind, but  
 that she might be holy and faultless. That is how husbands ought 28  
 to love their wives — as if they were their own bodies. A man who  
 loves his wife is really loving himself; for no one ever yet hated his 29  
 own body. But every one feeds his body and cares for it, just as the  
 Christ for the Church; for we are members of his Body. 'For this 30

## Ephesians 6

cause a man shall leave his father and mother, and be united to his  
32 wife; and the man and his wife shall become one.' In this there is a  
33 profound truth — I am speaking of Christ and his Church. However,  
for you individually, let each love his wife as if she were himself; and  
6 the wife be careful to respect her husband.

Children, obey your parents, as children of the Lord; for that is but  
2 right. 'Honor thy father and mother' — this is the first  
3 Commandment with a promise — 'So that thou mayest prosper  
4 and have a long life on earth.' And fathers, do not irritate your  
children, but bring them up with Christian discipline and  
5 instruction. Slaves, obey your earthly masters, with anxious care,  
6 giving them ungrudging service, as if obeying the Christ; not only  
when their eyes are on you, as if you had merely to please men, but  
7 as slaves of Christ, who are trying to carry out the will of God. Give  
your service heartily and cheerfully, as working for the Master and  
8 not for men; for you know that every one will be rewarded by the  
Master for any honest work that he has done, whether he is a slave  
9 or a freeman. And masters, treat your slaves in the same spirit.  
Give up threatening them; for you know that he who is both their  
Master and yours is in Heaven, and that before him there is no  
10 distinction of rank. For the future, find strength in your union with  
11 the Lord, and in the power which comes from his might. Put on the  
full armor of God, so that you may be able to stand your ground  
12 against the stratagems of the Devil. For ours is no struggle against  
enemies of flesh and blood, but against all the various Powers of  
Evil that hold sway in the Darkness around us, against the Spirits  
13 of Wickedness on high. Therefore take up the full armor of God,  
that, when the evil day comes, you may be able to withstand the  
attack, and, having fought to the end, still to stand your ground.  
14 Stand your ground, then, 'with truth for your belt,' and 'with  
15 righteousness for your breast-plate,' And with the readiness to  
16 serve the Good News of Peace as shoes for your feet. At every  
onslaught take up faith for your shield; for with it you will be able  
17 to extinguish all the flaming darts of the Evil One. And receive 'the  
helmet of Salvation,' and 'the sword of the Spirit' — which is the

Message of God — always with prayer and supplication. Pray in 18  
spirit at all times. Be intent upon this, with unwearying  
perseverance and supplication for all Christ's People- - And on my 19  
behalf also, that, when I begin to speak, words may be given me, so  
that I may fearlessly make known the inmost truth of the Good  
News, on behalf of which I am an Ambassador — in chains! Pray 20  
that, in telling it, I may speak fearlessly as I ought. To enable you, 21  
as well as others, to know all that concerns me and what I am  
doing, Tychicus, our dear Brother and faithful helper in the  
Master's Cause, will tell you everything. I am sending him to you 22  
on purpose that you may learn all about us, and that he may cheer  
your hearts. May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ give 23  
our Brothers peace, and love linked with faith. May God's blessing 24  
be with all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying love.





# PHILIPPIANS

## PAUL'S LETTER TO THE PHILIPPIANS

To all Christ's People at Philippi, with the Presiding Officers and  
 Assistants, from Paul and Timothy, servants of Christ Jesus. May 2  
 God, our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you, and give you  
 peace. Every recollection that I have of you is a cause of thankful- 3  
 ness to God, always, in every prayer that I offer for you all — my 4  
 prayers are full of joy — Because of the share that you have had 5  
 in spreading the Good News, from the first day that you received  
 it until now. For of this I am confident, that he who began a good 6  
 work in you will complete it in readiness for the Day of Jesus Christ.  
 And, indeed, I am justified in feeling thus about you all; because 7  
 you have a warm place in my heart — you who all, both in my  
 imprisonment and in the work of defending and establishing the  
 Good News, shared my privilege with me. God will bear me wit- 8  
 ness how I yearn over you all with the tenderness of Christ Jesus.  
 And what I pray for is this — that your love may grow yet stronger 9  
 and stronger, with increasing knowledge and all discernment, until 10  
 you are able to appreciate all moral distinctions. And I pray, too,  
 that you may be kept pure and blameless against the Day of Christ,  
 bearing a rich harvest of that righteousness which comes through 11  
 Jesus Christ, to the glory and praise of God. Brothers, I want you 12  
 to realize that what has happened to me has actually served to for-  
 ward the Good News. It has even become evident, not only to all the 13  
 Imperial Guard, but to every one else, that it is for Christ's sake that  
 I am in chains. And besides this, most of our Brothers have gained 14  
 confidence in the Lord through my chains, and now venture with  
 far greater freedom to speak of God's Message fearlessly. It is true 15  
 that some do proclaim the Christ out of Jealousy and opposition;  
 but there are others who proclaim him from good- will. The latter 16  
 do it from love for me, knowing that I have been appointed to  
 plead the cause of the Good News. The former spread the news of 17

## Philippians 2

the Christ in a factious spirit, and not sincerely, thinking to add to  
18 the pain of my chains. But what of that? Only that in some way or  
other, either with assumed or with real earnestness, Christ is being  
19 made known; and at that I rejoice. Yes, and I will rejoice, for I know  
that, through your prayers and through a rich supply of the Spirit  
20 of Jesus Christ, 'all this will make for my Salvation.' And this will  
fulfil my earnest expectation and hope that I shall have no cause for  
shame, but that, with unfailing courage, now as hitherto, Christ will  
21 be honored in my body, whether by my life or by my death, for to me  
22 life is Christ, and death is gain. But what if the life here in the body  
— if this brings me fruit from my labors? Then which to choose I  
23 cannot tell! I am sorely perplexed either way! My own desire is to  
24 depart and be with Christ, for this would be far better. But, for your  
sakes, it may be more needful that I should still remain here in the  
25 body. Yes, I am confident that this is so, and therefore I am sure that  
I shall stay, and stay near you all, to promote your progress and joy  
26 in the Faith; so that, when you once more have me among you, you,  
in your union with Christ Jesus, may find in me fresh cause for exul-  
27 tation. Under all circumstances let your lives be worthy of the Good  
News of the Christ: so that, whether I come and see you, or whether  
I hear of your affairs at a distance, I may know that you are standing  
firm, animated by one spirit, and joining with one heart in a com-  
28 mon struggle for the Faith taught by the Good News, without ever  
shrinking from your opponents. To them this will be a sign of their  
29 Destruction and of your Salvation — a sign from God. For, on behalf  
of Christ, you have had the privilege granted you, not only of trust-  
30 ing in him, but also of suffering on his behalf. You will be engaged  
in the same hard struggle as that which you once saw me waging,  
2 and which you hear that I am waging still. If, then, any encourage-  
ment comes through union with Christ, if there is any persuasive  
power in love, if there is any communion with the Spirit, if there is  
2 any tenderness or pity, I entreat you to make my happiness com-  
plete — Live together animated by the same spirit and in mutual  
3 love, one in heart, animated by one Spirit. Nothing should be done

in a factious spirit or from vanity, but each of you should with all humility regard others as of more account than himself, and one and all should consider, not only their own interests, but also the interests of others. Let the spirit of Christ Jesus be yours also. Though the divine nature was his from the beginning, yet he did not look upon equality with God as above all things to be clung to, but impoverished himself by taking the nature of a servant and becoming like men; he appeared among us as a man, and still further humbled himself by submitting even to death — to death on a cross! And that is why God raised him to the very highest place, and gave him the Name which stands above all other names, so that in adoration of the Name of Jesus every knee should bend, in Heaven, on earth, and under the earth, and that every tongue should acknowledge JESUS CHRIST as LORD- -to the glory of God the Father. Therefore, my dear friends, as you have always been obedient in the past, so now work out your own Salvation with anxious care, not only when I am with you, but all the more now that I am absent. Remember it is God who, in his kindness, is at work within you, enabling you both to will and to work. In all that you do, avoid murmuring and dissension, so as to prove yourselves blameless and innocent — ‘faultless children of God, in the midst of an evil-disposed and perverse generation,’ in which you are seen shining like stars in a dark world, offering to men the Message of Life; and then I shall be able at the Day of Christ to boast that I did not run my course for nothing, or toil for nothing. And yet, even if, when your faith is offered as a sacrifice to God, my life-blood must be poured out in addition, still I shall rejoice and share the joy of you all; and do you also rejoice and share my joy. I hope, however, as one who trusts in the Lord Jesus, to send Timothy to you before long, so that I may myself be cheered by receiving news of you. For I have no one but him to send — no one of kindred spirit who would take the same genuine interest in your welfare. They are all pursuing their own aims and not those of Christ Jesus. But you know what Timothy has proved himself to be, and how, like a child working for his father, he worked hard with me in spreading the Good News. It is Timothy, then, whom I hope

## Philippians 3

24 to send, as soon as ever I can foresee how it will go with me. And I  
am confident, as one who trusts in the Lord Jesus, that before long I  
25 myself shall follow. Still I think it necessary to send Epaphroditus to  
you now, for he is my brother, fellow-worker, and fellow-soldier, and  
26 he was also your messenger to help me in my need. For he has been  
longing to see you all, and has been distressed because you heard of  
27 his illness. And I can assure you that his illness very nearly proved  
fatal. But God had pity on him, and not on him only but also on me,  
28 that I might not have sorrow upon sorrow. I am all the more ready,  
therefore, to send him, so that the sight of him may revive your spir-  
29 its and my own sorrow be lightened. Give him, then, the heartiest of  
30 Christian welcomes, and hold such men in great honour. For it was  
owing to his devotion to the Master's work that he was at the point  
of death, having risked his own life in the effort to supply what was  
3 wanting in the help that you sent me. In conclusion, my Brothers,  
all joy be yours in your union with the Lord. To repeat what I have  
already written does not weary me, and is the safe course for you.  
2 Beware of those 'dogs'! Beware of those mischievous workers! Be-  
3 ware of the men who mutilate themselves! For it is we who are the  
circumcised — we whose worship is prompted by the Spirit of God,  
who exult in Christ Jesus, and who do not rely upon external priv-  
4 ileges; though I, if any man, have cause to rely even upon them. If  
any one thinks he can rely upon external privileges, far more can  
5 I! I was circumcised when eight days old; I am an Israelite by race,  
and of the tribe of Benjamin; I am a Hebrew, and the child of He-  
6 brews. As to the Law, I was a Pharisee; as to zeal, I was a persecutor  
of the Church; as to such righteousness as is due to Law, I proved  
7 myself blameless. But all the things which I once held to be gains  
8 I have now, for the Christ's sake, come to count as loss. More than  
that, I count everything as loss, for the sake of the exceeding value  
of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord. And for his sake I have  
lost everything, and count it as refuse, if I may but gain Christ and  
9 be found in union with him; any righteousness that I have being,  
not the righteousness that results from Law, but the righteousness  
which comes through faith in Christ — the righteousness which is

derived from God and is founded on faith. Then indeed I shall know 10  
 Christ, and the power of his resurrection, and all that it means to  
 share his sufferings, in the hope that, if I become like him in death, 11  
 I may possibly attain to the resurrection from the dead. Not that I 12  
 have already laid hold of it, or that I am already made perfect. But  
 I press on, in the hope of actually laying hold of that for which in-  
 deed I was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. For I, Brothers, do not regard 13  
 myself as having yet laid hold of it. But this one thing I do — forget-  
 ting what lies behind, and straining every nerve for that which lies  
 in front, I press on to the goal, to gain the prize of that heavenward 14  
 Call which God gave me through Christ Jesus. Let all of us, then, 15  
 whose faith is mature, think thus. Then, if on any matter you think  
 otherwise, God will make that also plain to you. Only we are bound 16  
 to order our lives by what we have already attained. Brothers, unite 17  
 in following my example, and fix your eyes on those who are liv-  
 ing by the pattern which we have set you. For there are many — of 18  
 whom I have often told you, and now tell you even with tears —  
 who are living in enmity to the cross of the Christ. The end of such 19  
 men is Ruin; for their appetites are their God, and they glory in their  
 shame; their minds are given up to earthly things. But the State of 20  
 which we are citizens is in Heaven; and it is from Heaven that we  
 are eagerly looking for a Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who, by the 21  
 exercise of his power to bring everything into subjection to himself,  
 will make this body that we have in our humiliation like to that body  
 which he has in his Glory. So then, my dear Brothers, whom I am 4  
 longing to see — you who are my joy and my crown, stand fast in  
 union with the Lord, dear friends. I entreat Euodia, and I entreat 2  
 Syntyche, to live in harmony, in union with the Lord; yes, and I ask 3  
 you, my true comrade, to help them, remembering that they toiled  
 by my side in spreading the Good News; and so, too, did Clement  
 and my other fellow-workers, whose names are ‘in the Book of Life.’  
 All joy be yours at all times in your union with the Lord. Again I re- 4  
 peat — All joy be yours. Let your forbearing spirit be plain to every 5  
 one. The Lord is near. Do not be anxious about anything; but under 6  
 all circumstances, by prayer and entreaty joined with thanksgiving,

7 make your needs known to God. Then the Peace of God, which is  
beyond all human understanding, will stand guard over your hearts  
8 and thoughts, through your union with Christ Jesus. In conclusion,  
Brothers, wherever you find anything true or honorable, righteous  
or pure, lovable or praiseworthy, or if 'virtue' and 'honour' have any  
9 meaning, there let your thoughts dwell. All that you learned and re-  
ceived and heard and saw in me put into practice continually; and  
10 then God, the giver of peace, will be with you. It was a matter of  
great joy to me, as one in union with the Lord, that at length your  
interest in me had revived. The interest indeed you had, but not the  
11 opportunity. Do not think that I am saying this under the pressure  
of want. For I, however I am placed, have learned to be independent  
12 of circumstances. I know how to face humble circumstances, and I  
know how to face prosperity. Into all and every human experience  
I have been initiated — into plenty and hunger, into prosperity and  
13 want. I can do everything in the strength of him who makes me  
14 strong! Yet you have acted nobly in sharing my troubles. And you  
at Philippi know, as well as I, that in the early days of the Good  
News — at the time when I had just left Macedonia — no Church,  
with the one exception of yourselves, had anything to do with me as  
16 far as giving and receiving are concerned. Indeed, even while I was  
still in Thessalonica, you sent more than once to relieve my wants.  
17 It is not that I am anxious for your gifts, but I am anxious to see the  
abundant return that will be placed to your account. I have enough  
18 of everything, and to spare. My wants are fully satisfied, now that I  
have received from Epaphroditus the gifts which you sent me — the  
19 sweet fragrance of a sacrifice acceptable and pleasing to God. And  
my God, out of the greatness of his wealth, will, in glory, fully satisfy  
20 your every need, through your union with Christ Jesus. To him, our  
21 God and Father, be ascribed all glory for every and ever. Amen. Give  
my greeting to every one of the People of Christ Jesus. The Brothers  
22 who are with me send your their greetings. All Christ's People here,  
and especially those who belong to the Emperor's household, send  
23 theirs. May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

## COLOSSIANS

## PAUL'S LETTER TO THE COLOSSIANS

From Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus, by the will of God, and from  
 Timothy, our Brother. To Christ's People at Colossae — the Brothers 2  
 who are faithful to him: May God, our Father, bless you and give  
 you peace. Whenever we pray, we never fail to thank God, the Fa- 3  
 ther of our Lord, Jesus Christ, about you, now that we have heard of 4  
 your faith in Christ Jesus and of the love that you have for all his Peo- 5  
 ple, on account of the hope which awaits its fulfillment in Heaven. 6  
 Of this hope you heard long ago in the true Message of the Good 7  
 News which reached you — Bearing fruit and growing, as it does, 8  
 through all the world, just as it did among you, from the very day 9  
 that you heard of God's loving-kindness, and understood what that 10  
 loving-kindness really is. It is just what you learned from Epaphras, 11  
 our dear fellow-servant, who, as a minister of the Christ, faithfully 12  
 represents us, and who told us of the love with which the Spirit has 13  
 inspired you. And therefore we, from the very day that we heard 14  
 this, have never ceased praying for you, or asking that you may pos- 15  
 sess that deeper knowledge of the will of God, which comes through  
 all true spiritual wisdom and insight. Then you will live lives wor-  
 thy of the Master, and so please God in every way. Your lives will  
 be fruitful in every kind of good action, and your characters will  
 grow through a fuller knowledge of God; you will be made strong  
 at all points with a strength worthy of the power manifested in his  
 Glory — strong to endure with patience, and even with gladness,  
 whatever may befall you; and you will give thanks to the Father  
 who made you fit to share the lot which awaits Christ's People in  
 the realms of Light. For God has rescued us from the tyranny of  
 Darkness, and has removed us into the Kingdom of his Son, who  
 is the embodiment of his love, and through whom we have found  
 deliverance in the forgiveness of our sins. For Christ is the very in-  
 carnation of the invisible God — First-born and Head of all creation;

## Colossians 2

16 for in him was created all that is in Heaven and on earth, the visible and the invisible — Angels and Archangels and all the Powers  
17 of Heaven. All has been created through him and for him. He was  
18 before all things, and all things unite in him; and he is the Head of the Church, which is his Body. The First-born from the dead, he is  
19 to the Church the Source of its Life, that he, in all things, may stand  
20 first. For it pleased the Father that in him the divine nature in all its  
21 fulness should dwell, and through him to reconcile all things to himself (making peace by the shedding of Christ's blood offered upon  
22 the cross) — whether on earth or in Heaven. And it pleased God that you, once estranged from him and hostile towards him in your  
23 thoughts, intent only on wickedness — But now he has reconciled you to himself by the sacrifice of Christ's earthly body in death — it  
24 has pleased God that you should stand in his presence holy, pure, and blameless, if only you remain true to your Faith, firm and im-  
25 movable, never abandoning the hope held out in the Good News to which you listened, which has been proclaimed among all created  
26 things under Heaven, and of which I, Paul, was made a minister. Now at last I can rejoice in my sufferings on your behalf, and in my  
27 own person I supplement the afflictions endured by the Christ, for the sake of his Body, the Church; of which I myself became a min-  
28 ister in virtue of the office with which God entrusted me for your benefit, to declare the Message of God in all its fulness — That Truth  
29 which has been hidden from former ages and generations. But now it has been revealed to God's People, to whom it was his pleasure to  
30 make known the surpassing glory of that hidden Truth when proclaimed among the Gentiles — 'Christ among you! Your Hope of  
31 glory!' This is the Christ whom we proclaim, warning every one, and instructing every one, with all the wisdom that we possess, in  
32 the hope of bringing every one into God's presence perfected by union with Christ. It is for that I toil, struggling with all the energy  
33 which he inspires and which works powerfully within me.

I want you to know in how great a struggle I am engaged for you and for Christ's People at Laodicea, and for all who have not yet  
34 seen me; in the hope that they, being bound to one another by love,



and keeping in view the full blessedness of a firm conviction, may  
 be encouraged to strive for a perfect knowledge of God's hidden  
 Truth, even Christ himself, in whom all treasures of wisdom and 3  
 knowledge lie hidden. I say this to prevent any one from deceiving 4  
 you by plausible arguments. It is true that I am not with you in per- 5  
 son, but I am with you in spirit, and am glad to see the good order  
 and the unbroken front resulting from your faith in Christ. Since, 6  
 therefore, you have received Jesus, the Christ, as your Lord, live your  
 lives in union with him — Rooted in him, building up your charac- 7  
 ters through union with him, growing stronger through your faith,  
 as you were taught, overflowing with faith and thanksgiving. Take 8  
 care there is not some one who will carry you away by his 'philos-  
 ophy' — a hollow sham! — following, as it does, mere human tra-  
 ditions, and dealing with puerile questions of this world, and not  
 with Christ. For in Christ the Godhead in all its fulness dwells in- 9  
 carnate; and, by your union with him, you also are filled with it. He 10  
 is the Head of all Archangels and Powers of Heaven. By your union 11  
 with him you received a circumcision that was not performed by  
 human hands, when you threw off the tyranny of the earthly body,  
 and received the circumcision of the Christ. For in baptism you were 12  
 buried with Christ; and in baptism you were also raised to Life with  
 him, through your faith in the omnipotence of God, who raised him  
 from the dead. And to you, who once were 'dead,' by reason of your 13  
 sins and your uncircumcised nature — to you God gave Life in giv-  
 ing life to Christ! He pardoned all our sins! He canceled the bond 14  
 which stood against us — the bond that consisted of ordinances —  
 and which was directly hostile to us! He has taken it out of our way  
 by nailing it to the cross! He rid himself of all the Powers of Evil, and 15  
 held them up to open contempt, when he celebrated his triumph  
 over them on the cross! Do not, then, allow any one to take you to 16  
 task on questions of eating or drinking, or in the matter of annual  
 or monthly or weekly festivals. These things are only the shadow of 17  
 what is to come; the substance is in the Christ. Do not let any one 18  
 defraud you of the reality by affecting delight in so-called 'humil-  
 ity' and angel-worship. Such a man busies himself with his visions,

and without reason is rendered conceited by his merely human intellect. He fails to maintain union with the Head, to whom it is due that the whole body, nourished and knit together by the contact and Keynesian of every part, grows with a divine growth. Since, with Christ, you became dead to the puerile teaching of this world, why do you submit, as though your life were still that of the world, to such ordinances as 'Do not handle, or taste, or touch'? For all the things referred to in them cease to exist when used. You are following mere human directions and instructions. Such prohibitions appear reasonable where there is a desire for self-imposed service, and so-called 'humility,' and harsh treatment of the body, but are of no real value against the indulgence of our earthly nature.

Since, therefore, you were raised to Life with the Christ, seek for the things that are above; for it is there that the Christ is 'seated at the right hand of God.' Fix your thoughts upon the things that are above, not upon those that are on earth. For you died, and your Life now lies hidden, with the Christ, in God. When the Christ, who is our Life, appears, then you also will appear with him in glory. Therefore destroy all that is earthly in you — immorality, uncleanness, passions, evil desires, and that greed which is idolatry. These are the things on account of which the Wrath of God comes, and to which you, like others, once devoted your lives, when you lived for them. You, however, must now lay aside all such things — anger, passion, malice, slander, abuse. Never lie to one another. Get rid of your old self and its habits, and clothe yourselves with that new self, which, as it gains in knowledge, is being constantly renewed 'in resemblance to him who made it.' In that new life there is no distinction between Greek and Jew, circumcised and uncircumcised, barbarian, Scythian, slave, freeman; but Christ is all! — and in all! Therefore, as God's People, consecrated and dear to him, clothe yourselves with tenderness of heart, kindness, humility, gentleness, forbearance; bearing with one another, and, when there is any ground for complaint, forgiving one another freely. As the Master freely forgave you, so you must forgive one another. Over all these virtues put on love; for that is the girdle which makes all complete.

Let the Peace that the Christ gives decide all doubts within your hearts; for you also were called to the enjoyment of peace as members of one Body. And show yourselves thankful. Let the Message of the Christ dwell in your minds in all its wealth, bringing all wisdom with it. Teach and admonish one another with psalms, and hymns, and sacred songs, full of the loving-kindness of God, lifting your hearts in song to him. And, whatever you say or do, do everything in the Name of the Lord Jesus; and through him offer thanksgiving to God the father. Wives, submit to your husbands, as befits those who belong to the Lord. Husbands, love your wives, and never treat them harshly. Children, always obey your parents; for that is pleasant to see in those who belong to the Lord. Fathers, never irritate your children, lest they should become disheartened. Slaves, always obey your earthly masters, not only when their eyes are on you, as if you had but to please men, but giving them ungrudging service, in your reverence for the Master. Whatever you do, do it with all your heart, as if working for the Master and not for men, since you know that it is from the Master that you will receive the inheritance which will be your recompense. You are serving Christ, the Master. Those who do wrong will reap the wrong they have done; and there will be no partiality. 4

Masters, do what is right and fair by your slaves, for you know that you also have a Master — in Heaven. Devote yourselves to prayer. Give your whole mind to it, and also offer thanksgiving; and at the same time pray for us, that God may give us an opening for our Message, so that we may speak of the truths hidden in the Christ — the truths for which I am in chains! Then I shall make them known, as I ought to do. Show tact in your behavior to the outside world, making the most of every opportunity. Let your conversation always be kindly, and seasoned, as it were, with salt; that you may know in each case what answer you ought to give. Our dear Brother, Tychicus, will tell you all about me. He is a faithful minister, and a fellow-servant in the Master's cause. I send him to you expressly that you may learn our circumstances, and that he may give you encouragement. With him will be Onesimus, our dear faithful Brother, who 9

10 is one of yourselves. They will tell you all that is going on here. My  
fellow-prisoner, Aristarchus, sends you his greeting, and Barnabas's  
cousin, Mark, sends his. (You have received directions about him. If  
11 he comes to you, make him welcome.) Joshua, who is called Justus,  
also sends his greeting. These are the only converts from Judaism  
who have worked with me for the kingdom of God; I have found  
12 them a great comfort. Epaphras, who is one of yourselves, sends  
you his greeting. He is a servant of Christ Jesus, and is always most  
earnest in your behalf in his prayers, praying that you may stand  
firm, with a matured faith and with a sure conviction of all that is  
13 in accordance with God's will. I can bear testimony to the deep in-  
terest he takes in you, as well as in the Brethren at Laodicea and at  
14 Hierapolis. Luke, our dear doctor, sends you his greeting, and De-  
mas sends his. Give my greeting to the Brethren at Laodicea, and  
15 to Nymphe, and to the Church that meets at her house. And when  
this letter has been read to you, see that it is also read before the  
Church at Laodicea, and that you yourselves read the letter which  
16 will be forwarded from there. Give this message to Archippus —  
'Take care to discharge to the best of your ability the office to which  
17 you were appointed in the Master's Cause.' I, Paul, add this greet-  
ing in my own handwriting. Remember these chains of mine. God's  
blessing be with you.

## 1 THESSALONIANS

## PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

To the Thessalonian Church in union with God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, from Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God bless you and give you peace. We always mention you in our prayers and thank God for you all; recalling continually before our God and Father the efforts that have resulted from your faith, the toil prompted by your love, and the patient endurance sustained by your hope in our Lord Jesus Christ. Brothers, whom God loves, we know that he has chosen you, because the Good News that we brought came home to you, not merely as so many words, but with a power and a fulness of conviction due to the Holy Spirit. For you know the life that we lived among you for your good. And you yourselves began to follow, not only our example, but the Master's also; and, in spite of much suffering, you welcomed the Message with a joy inspired by the Holy Spirit, and so became a pattern to all who believed in Christ throughout Macedonia and Greece. For it was from you that the Lord's Message resounded throughout Macedonia and Greece; and, more than that, your faith in God has become known far and wide; so that there is no need for us to say another word. Indeed, in speaking about us, the people themselves tell of the reception you gave us, and how, turning to God from your idols, you became servants of the true and living God, and are now awaiting the return from Heaven of his Son whom he raised from the dead — Jesus, our deliverer from the Coming Wrath.

Yes, Brothers, you yourselves know that your reception of us was not without result. For, although we had experienced suffering and ill-treatment, as you know, at Philippi, we had the courage, by the help of our God, to tell you God's Good News in spite of great opposition. Our appeal to you was not based on a delusion, nor was it made from unworthy motives, or with any intention of misleading you. But, having been found worthy by God to be entrusted with

## 1 Thessalonians 2

the Good News, therefore we tell it; with a view to please, not men,  
5 but God who proves our hearts. Never at any time, as you know,  
did we use the language of flattery, or make false professions in order  
6 to hide selfish aims. God will bear witness to that. Nor did we  
seek to win honour from men, whether from you or from others,  
although, as Apostles of Christ, we might have burdened you with  
7 our support. But we lived among you with the simplicity of a child;  
8 we were like a woman nursing her own children. In our strong affection  
for you, that seemed to us the best way of sharing with you,  
not only God's Good news, but our very lives as well — so dear  
9 had you become to us. You will not have forgotten, Brothers, our  
labor and toil. Night and day we used to work at our trades, so as  
not be a burden to any of you, while we proclaimed to you God's  
10 Good News. You will bear witness, and God also, that our relations  
with you who believed in Christ were pure, and upright, and beyond  
11 reproach. Indeed, you know that, like a father with his own  
children, we used to encourage and comfort every one of you, and  
12 solemnly plead with you; so that you should make your daily lives  
worthy of God who is calling you into the glory of his Kingdom.  
13 This, too, is a reason why we, on our part, are continually thanking  
God — because, in receiving the teaching that you had from us, you  
accepted it, not as the teaching of man, but as what it really is —  
the teaching of God, which is even now doing its work within you  
14 who believe in Christ. For you, Brothers, began to follow the example  
of the Churches of God in Judea which are in union with Jesus  
Christ; you, in your turn, suffering at the hands of your fellow-citizens,  
in the same way as those Churches did at the hands of the  
15 Jews — The men who killed both the Lord Jesus and the Prophets,  
and persecuted us also. They do not try to please God, and they are  
16 enemies to all mankind, for they would prevent us from speaking  
to the Gentiles with a view to their Salvation, and thus are always  
'filling up the measure of their iniquity.' But the Wrath of God has  
17 come upon them to the full! As for ourselves, Brothers, our having  
been bereaved of you even for a short time — though in body only,  
and not in spirit — made us all the more eager to see your faces

again; and the longing to do so was strong upon us. That was why 18  
 we made up our minds to go and see you — at least I, Paul, did,  
 more than once — but Satan put difficulties in our way. For what 19  
 hope or joy will be ours, or what crown shall we have to boast of, in  
 the presence of our Lord Jesus, at his Coming, if it be not you? You 20  
 are our pride and our delight! 3

And so, as we could bear it no longer, we made up our minds to  
 remain behind alone at Athens, and sent Timothy, our Brother and 2  
 God's minister of the Good News of the Christ, to strengthen you,  
 and to encourage you in your faith, so that none of you should be 3  
 shaken by the troubles through which you are passing. You your-  
 selves know that we are destined to meet with such things. For, 4  
 even while we were with you, we warned you beforehand that we  
 were certain to encounter trouble. And so it proved, as you know.  
 Therefore, since I could no longer endure the uncertainty, I sent 5  
 to make inquiries about your faith, fearing that the Tempter had  
 tempted you, and that our toil might prove to have been in vain. But, 6  
 when Timothy recently returned to us from you with good news of  
 your faith and love, and told us how kindly you think of us — al-  
 ways longing, he said, to see us, just as we are longing to see you  
 — On hearing his, we felt encouraged about you, Brothers, in the 7  
 midst of all our difficulties and troubles, by your faith. For it is new 8  
 life to us to know that you are holding fast to the Lord. How can 9  
 we thank God enough for all the happiness that you are giving us  
 in the sight of our God? Night and day we pray most earnestly that 10  
 we may see you face to face, and make good any deficiency in your  
 faith. May our God and Father himself, and Jesus, our Lord, make 11  
 the way plain for us to come to you. And for you, may the Lord fill 12  
 you to overflowing with love for one another and for every one, just  
 as we are filled with love for you; and so make your hearts strong, 13  
 and your lives pure beyond reproach, in the sight of our God and  
 Father, at the Coming of our Lord Jesus, with all his Holy Ones. 4

Further, Brothers, we beg and exhort you in the name of our Lord  
 Jesus to carry out more fully than ever — as indeed you are already  
 doing — all that you have heard from us as to what your daily life

## 1 Thessalonians 5

2 must be, if it is to please God. For you have not forgotten the direc-  
3 tions that we gave you on the authority of our Lord Jesus. For this is  
God's purpose — that you should be pure; abstaining from all im-  
4 morality; each of you recognizing the duty of taking one woman for  
5 his wife, purely and honorably, and not for the mere gratification of  
6 his passions, like the Gentiles who know nothing of God; none of  
you over-reaching or taking advantage of his Brother in such mat-  
ters. 'The Lord takes vengeance' upon all who do such things, as we  
7 have already warned you and solemnly declared. For God's Call to  
8 us does not permit of an impure life, but demands purity. Therefore  
he who disregards this warning disregards, not man, but God who  
9 gives you his Holy Spirit. As to love for the Brethren there is no  
need to write to you; for you have yourselves been taught by God  
10 to love one another; and indeed you do act in this spirit towards  
all the Brethren throughout Macedonia. Yet, Brothers, we urge you  
11 to still further efforts. Make it your ambition to live quietly, and to  
attend to your own business, and to work with your hands, as we  
12 directed you; so that your conduct may win respect from those out-  
13 side the Church, and that you may not want for anything. We do  
not wish you to remain in ignorance, Brothers, with regard to those  
who have passed to their rest, that your grief may not be like that  
14 of others, who have no hope. For, as we believe that Jesus died and  
rose again, so also we believe that God will bring, with Jesus, those  
15 who through him have passed to their rest. This we tell you on the  
authority of the Lord — that those of us who are still living at the  
Coming of the Lord will not anticipate those who have passed to  
16 their rest. For, with a loud summons, with the shout of an archangel,  
and with the trumpet-call of God, the Lord himself will come down  
17 from Heaven. Then those who died in union with Christ shall rise  
first; and afterwards we who are still living shall be caught up in  
the clouds, with them, to meet the Lord in the air; and so we shall  
18 be for ever with the Lord. Therefore, comfort one another with what  
5 I have told you.

But as to the times and the moments, there is no need, Brothers, for  
2 any one to write to you. You yourselves know well that the Day of



the Lord will come just as a thief comes in the night. When people 3  
 are saying 'All is quiet and safe,' it is then that, like birth-pains upon  
 a woman with child, Ruin comes suddenly upon them, and there  
 will be no escape! You, however, Brothers, are not in darkness, that 4  
 the daylight should take you by surprise as if you were thieves. For 5  
 you all are 'Sons of Light' and 'Sons of the Day.' We have nothing  
 to do with night, or darkness. Therefore let us not sleep as others 6  
 do. No, let us be watchful and self-controlled. It is at night that men 7  
 sleep, and at night that drunkards get drunk. But let us, who belong 8  
 to the Day, control ourselves, and put on faith and love as a breast  
 plate, and the hope of Salvation as a helmet. For God destined us, 9  
 not for Wrath, but to win Salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ,  
 who died for us, that, whether we are still watching or have fallen 10  
 asleep, we may live with him. Therefore encourage one another, and 11  
 try to build up one another's characters, as indeed you are doing.  
 We beg you, Brothers, to value those who toil among you, and are 12  
 your leaders in the Lord's service, and give you counsel. Hold them 13  
 in the very greatest esteem and affection for the sake of their work.  
 Live at peace with one another. We entreat you also, Brothers — 14  
 warn the disorderly, comfort the faint-hearted, give a helping hand  
 to the weak, and be patient with every one. Take care that none of 15  
 you ever pays back wrong for wrong, but always follow the kindest  
 course with one another and with every one. Always be joyful; never 16  
 cease to pray; under all circumstances give thanks to God. For this 18  
 is his will for you as made known in Christ Jesus. Do not quench the 19  
 Spirit; do not make light of preaching. Bring everything to the test; 20  
 cling to what is good; shun every form of evil. May God himself, 23  
 the giver of peace, make you altogether holy; and may your spirits,  
 souls, and bodies be kept altogether faultless until the Coming of  
 our Lord Jesus Christ. He who calls you will not fail you; he will 24  
 complete his work. Brothers, pray for us. Greet all the Brothers with 26  
 a sacred kiss. I adjure you in the Lord's name to have this letter read 27  
 to all the Brethren. May the blessing of our Lord Jesus Christ be with 28  
 you.



## 2 THESSALONIANS

## PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO THE THESSALONIANS

To the Thessalonian Church in union with God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ, From Paul, Silas, and Timothy. May God, the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ bless you and give you peace. Brothers, it is our duty always to thank God about you, as is but right, considering the wonderful growth of your faith, and because, without exception, your love for one another is continually increasing. So much is this the case that we ourselves speak with pride, before the Churches of God, of the patience and faith which you have shown, in spite of all the persecutions and troubles that you are enduring. These persecutions will vindicate the justice of God's judgment, and will result in your being reckoned worthy of God's Kingdom, for the sake of which you are now afflicted; since God deems it just to inflict suffering upon those who are now inflicting suffering upon you, and to give relief to you who are suffering, as well as to us, at the Appearing of the Lord Jesus from Heaven with his mighty angels, 'in flaming fire.' Then he will 'inflict punishment upon those who refuse to know God, and upon those who turn a deaf ear' to the Good News of Jesus, our Lord. These men will pay the penalty of unutterable Ruin — banished 'from the presence of the Lord and from the glorious manifestation of his might, when he comes to be honoured in his People,' and to be revered in all who have learned to believe in him (for you also believed our testimony) — as he will be on 'That Day.' With this in view, our constant prayer for you is that our God may count you worthy of the Call that you have received, and by his power make perfect your delight in all goodness and the efforts that have resulted from your faith. Then, in the loving-kindness of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ, will the name of Jesus, our Lord, be honoured in you, and you in him.

## 2 Thessalonians 3

As to the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our being gathered  
2 to meet him, we beg you, Brothers, not lightly to let your minds become unsettled, nor yet to be disturbed by any revelation, or by any message, or by any letter, purporting to come from us, to the effect  
3 that the Day of the Lord is come. Do not let any one deceive you, whatever he may do. For it will not come until after the Great Apostasy, and the appearing of that Incarnation of Wickedness, that the  
4 Lost soul, who so opposes himself to every one that is spoken of as a God or as an object of worship, and so exalts himself above them, that he seats himself in the Temple of God, and displays himself  
5 as God! Do not you remember how, when I was with you, I used  
6 to speak to you of all this? And you know now what the restraining influence is which prevents his appearing before his appointed  
7 time. Wickedness, indeed, is already at work in secret; but only until  
8 he who at present restrains it is removed out of the way. Then will 'Wickedness Incarnate' appear, but the Lord Jesus will destroy him with the breath of his lips, and annihilate him by the splendor of his  
9 Coming. For at the Coming of the Lord there will be great activity on the part of Satan, in the form of all kinds of deceptive miracles,  
10 signs, and marvels, as well as of wicked attempts to delude — to the ruin of those who are on the path to destruction, because they  
11 have never received and loved the Truth to their own Salvation. That is why God places them under the influence of a delusion, to cause  
12 them to believe a lie; so that sentence may be passed on all those who refuse to believe the Truth, but delight in wickedness. But, Brothers,  
13 whom the Lord loves, it is our duty always to thank God about you, for, from the first, God chose you for Salvation through the purifying influence of the Spirit, and your belief in the Truth. To this you  
14 were called by the Good News which we brought you, to attain to the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ. Stand firm then, Brothers, and  
15 hold fast to the truths that we taught you, whether by word or by letter. And may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God our Father,  
16 who loved us and, in his loving-kindness, gave us unfailing consolation and good ground for hope, console your hearts, and strengthen  
17 you to do and to say all that is right.  
3

In conclusion, Brothers, pray for us — pray that the Lord’s Message may spread rapidly, and be received everywhere with honour, as it was among you; and that we may be preserved from wrong-headed and wicked men- -for it is not every one who believes in Christ. But the Lord will not fail you; he will give you strength, and guard you from Evil. Yes, and the confidence that our union with the Lord enables us to place in you leads us to believe that you are doing, and will do, what we direct you. May the Lord bring you to the love of God, and to the patience of the Christ. We urge you, Brothers, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to avoid any Brother who is living an ill-ordered life, which is not in agreement with the teaching that you received from us. For you know well that you ought to follow our example. When we were with you, our life was not ill-ordered, nor did we eat any one’s bread without paying for it. Night and day, laboring and toiling, we used to work at our trades, so as not to be a burden upon any of you. This was not because we had not a right to receive support, but our object was to give you a pattern for you to copy. Indeed, when we were with you, what we urged upon you was — ‘If a man does not choose to work, then he shall not eat.’ We hear that there are among you people who are living ill- ordered lives, and who, instead of attending to their own business, are mere busy-bodies. All such people we urge, and entreat, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, to attend quietly to their business, and earn their own living. You, Brothers, must not grow weary of doing what is right. If any one disregards what we have said in this letter, mark that man and avoid his company, that he may feel ashamed. Yet do not think of him as an enemy, but caution him as you would a Brother. May the Lord, from whom all peace comes, himself give you his peace at all times and in all ways. May he be with you all. I, Paul, add this greeting in my own handwriting. It is my signature to every letter. This is how I write. May the blessing of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all.



## 1 TIMOTHY

## PAUL'S FIRST LETTER TO TIMOTHY

From Paul, an Apostle of Christ Jesus by the appointment of God,  
 our Savior, and Christ Jesus, our Hope. To Timothy, my true Child 2  
 in the Faith: May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Lord, bless  
 you, and be merciful to you, and give you peace. I beg you, as I did 3  
 when I was on my way into Macedonia, to remain at Ephesus; that  
 you may instruct certain people there not to teach new and strange  
 doctrines, nor to devote their attention to legends and interminable 4  
 genealogies, which tend to give rise to argument rather than to fur-  
 ther that divine plan which is revealed in the Faith. The object of all 5  
 instruction is to call forth that love which comes from a pure heart, a  
 clear conscience, and a sincere faith. And it is because they have not 6  
 aimed at these things that the attention of certain people has been  
 diverted to unprofitable subjects. They want to be Teachers of the 7  
 Law, and yet do not understand either the words they use, or the  
 subjects on which they speak so confidently. We know, of course, 8  
 that the Law is excellent, when used legitimately, by one who rec- 9  
 ognizes that laws were not made for good men, but for the lawless  
 and disorderly, for irreligious and wicked people, for those who are  
 irreverent and profane, for those who ill-treat their fathers or moth-  
 ers, for murderers, for the immoral, for people guilty of sodomy, for 10  
 slave-dealers, for liars, for perjurers, and for whatever else is op-  
 posed to sound Christian teaching — as is taught in the glorious 11  
 Good News of the ever-blessed God, with which I was entrusted. I 12  
 am thankful to Christ Jesus, our Lord, who has been my strength,  
 for showing that he thought me worthy of trust by appointing me  
 to his ministry, though I once used to blaspheme, and to persecute, 13  
 and to insult. Yet mercy was shown me, because I acted in ignorance,  
 while still an unbeliever; and the loving-kindness of our Lord was 14  
 boundless, and filled me with that faith and love which come from  
 union with Christ Jesus. How true the saying is, and worthy of the 15

## 1 Timothy 2

fullest acceptance, that 'Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners'! And there is no greater sinner than I! Yet mercy was shown me for the express purpose that Christ Jesus might exhibit in my case, beyond all others, his exhaustless patience, as an example for those who were afterwards to believe on him and attain Immortal Life. To the Immortal King, ever-living, invisible, the one God, be ascribed honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen. This, then, is the charge that I lay upon you, Timothy, my Child, in accordance with what was predicted of you — Fight the good fight in the spirit of those predictions, with faith, and with a clear conscience; and it is because they have thrust this aside, that, as regards the Faith, some have wrecked their lives. Hymenaeus and Alexander are instances — the men whom I delivered over to Satan, that they might be taught not to blaspheme.

First of all, then, I urge that petitions, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings should be offered for every one, especially for kings and all who are in high positions, in order that we may lead a quiet and peaceful life in a deeply religious and reverent spirit. This will be good and acceptable in the eyes of God, our Savior, whose will is that every one should be saved, and attain to a full knowledge of the Truth. There is but one God, and one mediator between God and men — the man, Christ Jesus, who gave himself as a ransom on behalf of all men. This must be our testimony, as opportunities present themselves; and it was for this that I was myself appointed a Herald and an Apostle (I am telling the simple truth and no lie) — a Teacher of the Gentiles in the Faith and Truth. My desire, then, is that it should be the custom everywhere for the men to lead the prayers, with hands reverently uplifted, avoiding heated controversy. I also desire that women should adorn themselves with appropriate dress, worn quietly and modestly, and not with wreaths or gold ornaments for the hair, or pearls, or costly clothing, but — as is proper for women who profess to be religious — with good actions. A woman should listen silently to her teachers, and show them all deference. I do not consent to a woman's becoming a teacher, or exercising authority over a man; she ought to be silent.



Adam was formed first, not Eve. And it was not Adam who was 13  
 deceived; it was the woman who was entirely deceived and fell  
 into sin. But women will find their salvation in motherhood, if they 15  
 never abandon faith, love, or holiness, and behave with modesty. 3  
 How true is that saying! When a man aspires to be a Presiding-Of-  
 ficer in the Church, he is ambitious for a noble task. The Presid- 2  
 ing-Officer should be a man of blameless character; a faithful hus-  
 band; living a temperate, discreet, and well-ordered life; hospitable,  
 and a skillful teacher, not addicted to drink or brawling, but of a 3  
 forbearing and peaceable disposition, and not a lover of money; he 4  
 should be a man who rules his own household well, and whose chil-  
 dren are kept under control and are well-behaved. If a man does 5  
 not know how to rule his own household, how can he take charge  
 of the Church of God? The Presiding-Officer should not be a re- 6  
 cent convert, that he may not be blinded by pride and fall under  
 the same condemnation as the Devil. He should also be well spo- 7  
 ken of by outsiders, that he may not incur censure and so fall into  
 the snares of the Devil. So, too, Assistant-Officers should be serious 8  
 and straightforward men, not given to taking much drink or to ques-  
 tionable money-making, but men who hold the deep truths of the 9  
 Faith and have a clear conscience. They should be tested first, and 10  
 only appointed to their Office if no objection is raised against them.  
 It should be the same with the women. They should be serious, 11  
 not gossips, sober, and trustworthy in all respects. Assistant-Officers 12  
 should be faithful husbands, and men who rule their children and  
 their households well. Those who have filled that post with honour 13  
 gain for themselves an honorable position, as well as great confi-  
 dence through the faith that they place in Christ Jesus. I am writing 14  
 this to you, though I hope that I shall come to see you before long;  
 but in case I should be delayed, I want you to know what your con- 15  
 duct ought to be in the Household of God, which is the Church of  
 the Living God — the pillar and stay of the Truth. Yes, and confess- 16  
 edly wonderful are the deep truths of our religion; for — 'He was

## 1 Timothy 4

revealed in our nature, pronounced righteous in spirit, seen by angels, proclaimed among the Gentiles, believed on in the world, taken  
4 up into glory.’

But the Spirit distinctly says that in later times there will be some who will fall away from the Faith, and devote their attention to misleading spirits, and to the teaching of demons, who will make use of the hypocrisy of lying teachers. These men’s consciences are seared,  
3 and they discourage marriage and enjoin abstinence from certain kinds of food; though God created these foods to be enjoyed thankfully by those who hold the Faith and have attained a full knowledge of the Truth. Everything created by God is good, and there  
4 in nothing that need be rejected — provided only that it is received  
6 thankfully; for it is consecrated by God’s blessing and by prayer. Put all this before the Brethren, and you will be a good servant of Christ Jesus, sustained by the precepts of the Faith and of that Good Teaching by which you have guided your life. As for profane legends and old wives’ tales, leave them alone. Train yourself to lead a religious  
8 life; for while the training of the body is of service in some respects, religion is of service in all, carrying with it, as it does, a promise  
9 of Life both here and hereafter. How true that saying is and worthy of the fullest acceptance! With that aim we toil and struggle, for  
10 we have set our hopes on the Living God, who is the Savior of all  
11 men, and especially of those who hold the Faith. Dwell upon these  
12 things in your teaching. Do not let any one look down on you because you are young, but, by your conversation, your conduct, your love, your faith, and your purity, be an example to those who hold  
13 the Faith. Till I come, apply yourself to public reading, preaching,  
14 and teaching. Do not neglect the divine gift within you, which was given you, amid many a prediction, when the hands of the Officers  
15 of the Church were laid on your head. Practice these things, devote yourself to them, so that your progress may be plain to every one.  
16 Look to yourself as well as to your teaching. Persevere in this, for your doing so will mean Salvation for yourself as well as for your  
5 hearers.

Do not reprimand an older man, but plead with him as if he were your father. Treat the young men as brothers, the older women as mothers, and the younger women as sisters — with all purity. Show consideration for widows — I mean those who are really widowed. but, if a widow has children or grand-children, let them learn to show proper regard for the members of their own family first, and to make some return to their parents; for that is pleasing in God's sight. As for the woman who is really widowed and left quite alone, her hopes are fixed on God, and she devotes herself to prayers and supplications night and day. But the life of a widow who is devoted to pleasure is a living death. Those are the points on which you should dwell, that there may be no call for your censure. Any one who fails to provide for his own relations, and especially for those under his own roof, has disowned the Faith, and is worse than an unbeliever. A widow, when her name is added to the list, should not be less than sixty years old; she should have been a faithful wife, and be well spoken of for her kind actions. She should have brought up children, have shown hospitality to strangers, have washed the feet of her fellow Christians, have relieved those who were in distress, and devoted herself to every kind of good action. But you should exclude the younger widows from the list; for, when they grow restive under the yoke of the Christ, they want to marry, and so they bring condemnation upon themselves for having broken their previous promise. And not only that, but they learn to be idle as they go about from house to house. Nor are they merely idle, but they also become gossips and busy-bodies, and talk of what they ought not. Therefore I advise young widows to marry, bear children, and attend to their homes, and so avoid giving the enemy an opportunity for scandal. There are some who have already left us, to follow Satan. Any Christian woman, who has relations who are widows, ought to relieve them and not allow them to become a burden to the Church, so that the Church may relieve those widows who are really widowed. Those Officers of the Church who fill their office well should be held deserving of especial consideration, particularly those whose work lies in preaching and teaching. The words of Scripture are — 'Thou

## 1 Timothy 6

shalt not muzzle the ox while it is treading out the grain.’ and again  
19 — ‘The worker is worth his wages.’ Do not receive a charge against  
an Officer of the Church, unless it is supported by two or three wit-  
20 nesses; but rebuke offenders publicly, so that others may take warn-  
21 ing. I charge you solemnly, before God and Christ Jesus and the  
Chosen Angels, to carry out these directions, unswayed by preju-  
22 dice, never acting with partiality. Never ordain any one hastily, and  
23 take no part in the wrong-doing of others. Keep your life pure. Do  
not continue to drink water only, but take a little wine on account of  
24 the weakness of your stomach, and your frequent ailments. There  
are some men whose sins are conspicuous and lead on to judgment,  
25 while there are others whose sins dog their steps. In the same way  
noble deeds become conspicuous, and those which are otherwise  
6 cannot be concealed.

All who are in the position of slaves should regard their masters as  
deserving of the greatest respect, so that the Name of God, and our  
2 Teaching, may not be maligned. Those who have Christian masters  
should not think less of them because they are their Brothers, but  
on the contrary they should serve them all the better, because those  
who are to benefit by their good work are dear to them as their fellow  
3 Christians. Those are the things to insist upon in your teaching. Any  
one who teaches otherwise, and refuses his assent to sound instruc-  
tion — the instruction of our Lord Jesus Christ — and to the teaching  
4 of religion, is puffed up with conceit, not really knowing anything,  
but having a morbid craving for discussions and arguments. Such  
things only give rise to envy, quarreling, recriminations, base suspi-  
5 cions, and incessant wrangling on the part of these corrupt-minded  
people who have lost all hold on the Truth, and who think of reli-  
6 gion only as a source of gain. And a great source of gain religion  
7 is, when it brings contentment with it! For we brought nothing into  
8 the world, because we cannot even carry anything out of it. So, with  
9 food and shelter, we will be content. Those who want to be rich fall  
into the snares of temptation, and become the prey of many foolish  
and harmful ambitions, which plunge people into Destruction and

10 Ruin. Love of money is a source of all kinds of evil; and in their ea-  
 11 gerness to be rich some have wandered away from the Faith, and  
 12 have been pierced to the heart by many a regret. But do you, Ser-  
 13 vant of God, avoid all this. Aim at righteousness, piety, faith, love,  
 14 endurance, gentleness. Run the great race of the Faith, and win the  
 15 Immortal Life. It was for this that you received the Call, and, in the  
 16 presence of many witnesses, made the great profession of Faith. I  
 17 urge you, as in the sight of God, the source of all life, and of Christ  
 18 Jesus who before Pontius Pilate made the great profession of Faith  
 19 — I urge you to keep his Command free from stain or reproach, until  
 20 the Appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. This will be brought about  
 21 in his own time by the one ever-blessed Potentate, the King of all  
 kings and Lord of all lords, who alone is possessed of immortality  
 and dwells in unapproachable light, whom no man has ever seen  
 or ever can see — to whom be ascribed honour and power for ever.  
 Amen. Urge upon those who are wealthy in this life not to pride  
 themselves, or fix their hopes, on so uncertain a thing as wealth, but  
 on God, who gives us a wealth of enjoyment on every side. Urge  
 upon them to show kindness, to exhibit a wealth of good actions,  
 to be open-handed and generous, storing up for themselves what in  
 the future will prove to be a good foundation, that they may gain  
 the only true Life. Timothy, guard what has been entrusted to you.  
 Avoid the profane prattle and contradictions of what some miscall  
 ‘theology,’ for there are those who, while asserting their proficiency  
 in it, have yet, as regards the Faith, gone altogether astray. God bless  
 you all.



## 2 TIMOTHY

## PAUL'S SECOND LETTER TO TIMOTHY

To Timothy, my dear Child, from Paul who, by the will of God, is an Apostle of Christ Jesus, charged to proclaim the Life that comes from union with Christ Jesus. May God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Lord, bless you, and be merciful to you, and give you peace. I am thankful to God, whom I serve, as my ancestors did, with a clear conscience, when I remember you, as I never fail to do, in my prayers — night and day alike, as I think of your tears, longing to see you, that my happiness may be completed, now that I have been reminded of the sincere faith that you have shown. That faith was seen first in your grandmother Lois and your mother Eunice, and is now, I am convinced, in you also. And that is my reason for reminding you to stir into flame that gift of God, which is yours through your ordination at my hands. For the Spirit which God gave us was not a spirit of cowardice, but a spirit of power, love, and self-control. Do not, therefore, be ashamed of the testimony which we have to bear to our Lord, nor yet of me who am a prisoner for him; but join with me in suffering for the Good News, as far as God enables you. It was God who saved us, and from him we received our solemn Call — not as a reward for anything that we had done, but in fulfillment of his own loving purpose. For that love was extended to us, through Christ Jesus, before time began, and has now been made apparent through the Appearing of our Saviour, Christ Jesus; who has made an end of Death, and has brought Life and Immortality to light by that Good News, of which I was myself appointed a Herald and Apostle, and Teacher. That is why I am undergoing these sufferings; yet I feel no shame, for I know in whom I have put my faith, and am convinced that he is able to guard what I have entrusted to him until 'That Day.' Keep before you, as an example of sound teaching, all that you learnt from me as you listened with that faith and love which come from union with Christ Jesus. Guard by the

## 2 Timothy 2

help of the Holy Spirit, who is within us, the glorious trust that has  
15 been committed to you. You know, of course, that all our friends in  
Roman Asia turned their backs on me, and among them Phygellus  
16 and Hermogenes. May the Lord show mercy to the household of  
Onesiphorus; for he often cheered me and was not ashamed of my  
17 chains. On the contrary, when he arrived in Rome, he sought eagerly  
18 for me till he found me. The Lord grant that he may find mercy at  
the hands of the Lord on 'That Day.' The many services that he ren-  
2 dered at Ephesus you have the best means of knowing.

Do you, then, my Child, find strength in the help which comes from  
2 the union with Christ Jesus; and what you learnt from me, in the  
presence of many listeners, entrust to reliable men, who will be able  
3 in their turn to teach others. Share hardships with me, as a true sol-  
4 dier of Christ Jesus. A soldier on active service, to please his superior  
officer, always avoids entangling himself in the affairs of ordinary  
5 life. No athlete is ever awarded the wreath of victory unless he has  
6 kept the rules. The labourer who does the work should be the first to  
7 receive a share of the fruits of the earth. Reflect upon what I say; the  
8 Lord will always help you to understand. Keep before your mind  
Jesus Christ, raised from the dead, a descendant of David, as told in  
9 the Good News entrusted to me; in the service of which I am suf-  
fering hardships, even to being put in fetters as a criminal. But the  
10 Message of God is not fettered; and that is why I submit to anything  
for the sake of God's People, that they also may obtain the Salvation  
which comes from union with Christ Jesus, and imperishable glory.  
11 How true this saying is — 'If we have shared his death, we shall  
12 also share his life. If we continue to endure, we shall also share his  
13 throne. If we should ever disown him, he, too, will disown us. If we  
lose our trust, he is still to be trusted, for he cannot be false to him-  
14 self!' Remind people of all this; urge them solemnly, as in the sight of  
God, to avoid controversy, a useless thing and the ruin of those who  
15 listen to it. Do your utmost to show yourself true to God, a workman  
with no reason to be ashamed, accurate in delivering the Message  
16 of the Truth. Avoid profane prattle. Those who indulge in it only  
17 get deeper into irreligious ways, and their teaching will spread like



a cancer. Hymenaeus and Philetus are instances of this. They have gone completely astray as regards the Truth; they say that a resurrection has already taken place, and so upset some people's faith. Yet God's firm foundation still stands unmoved, and it bears this inscription — 'THE LORD KNOWS THOSE WHO ARE HIS'; and this — 'LET ALL THOSE WHO USE THE NAME OF THE LORD TURN AWAY FROM WICKEDNESS.' Now in a large house there are not only things of gold and silver, but also others of wood and earthenware, some for better and some for common use. If, then, a man has escaped from the pollution of such errors as I have mentioned, he will be like a thing kept for better use, set apart, serviceable to its owner, ready for any good purpose. Flee from the passions of youth, but pursue righteousness, faith, love, and peace, in the company of those who, with a pure heart, invoke the Lord. Shun foolish and ignorant discussions, for you know that they only breed quarrels; and a Servant of the Lord should never quarrel. He ought, on the contrary, to be courteous to every one, a skillful teacher, and forbearing. He should instruct his opponents in a gentle spirit; for, possibly, God may give them a repentance that will lead to a fuller knowledge of Truth, and they may yet come to a sober mind, and escape from the snares of the Devil, when captured by the Lord's Servant to do the will of God.

3

Be sure of this, that in the last days difficult times will come. Men will be selfish, mercenary, boastful, haughty, and blasphemous; disobedient to their parents, ungrateful, impure, incapable of affection, merciless, slanderous, wanting in self-control, brutal, careless of the right, treacherous, reckless, and puffed up with pride; they will love pleasure more than they love God; and while they retain the outward form of religion, they will not allow it to influence them. Turn your back on such men as these. For among them are to be found those who creep into homes and captivate weak women — women who, loaded with sins, and slaves to all kinds of passions, are always learning, and yet never able to attain to a real knowledge of the Truth. Just as Jannes and Jambres opposed Moses, so do these people, in their turn, oppose the Truth. Their minds are corrupted,

8

## 2 Timothy 4

9 and, as regards the Faith, they are utterly worthless. They will not, however, make further progress; for their wicked folly will be plain  
10 to every one, just as that of Jannes and Jambres was. But you, Timothy, were a close observer of my teaching, my conduct, my purposes,  
11 my faith, my forbearance, my love, and my patient endurance, as well as of my persecutions, and of the sufferings which I met with at Antioch, Iconium, and Lystra. You know what persecutions I underwent; and yet the Lord brought me safe out of all! Yes, and all who aim at living a religious life in union with Christ Jesus will  
12 have to suffer persecution; but wicked people and impostors will go from bad to worse, deceiving others and deceived themselves.  
13 You, however, must stand by what you learnt and accepted as true.  
14 You know who they were from whom you learnt it; and that, from your childhood, you have known the Sacred Writings, which can give you the wisdom that, through belief in Christ Jesus, leads to Salvation. Everything that is written under divine inspiration is helpful  
15 for teaching, for refuting error, for giving guidance, and for training others in righteousness; so that the Servant of God may be perfect  
16 himself, and perfectly equipped for every good action.

I solemnly charge you, in the sight of God and of Christ Jesus, who will one day judge the living and the dead — I charge you by his Appearing and by his Kingdom: — Proclaim the Message, be ready in season and out of season, convince, rebuke, encourage, never failing  
2 to instruct with forbearance. For a time will come when people will not tolerate sound teaching. They will follow their own wishes, and, in their itching for novelty, procure themselves a crowd of teachers.  
3 They will turn a deaf ear to the Truth, and give their attention to legends instead. But you, Timothy, must always be temperate. Face hardships; do the work of a Missionary; discharge all the duties of your Office. As for me, my life blood is already being poured out;  
4 the time of my departure is close at hand. I have run the great Race; I have finished the Course; I have kept the Faith. And now the crown of righteousness awaits me, which the Lord, the just Judge, will give me on 'That Day' — and not only to me, but to all who have loved  
5 his Appearing. Do your utmost to come to me soon; for Demas, in

his love for the world, has deserted me. He has gone to Thessalonica,  
 Crescens to Galatia, and Titus to Dalmatia. There is no one but Luke 11  
 with me. Pick up Mark on your way, and bring him with you, for he  
 is useful to me in my work. I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. Bring 12  
 with you, when you come, the cloak which I left at Troas with Car-  
 pus, and the books, especially the parchments. Alexander, the cop- 14  
 persmith, showed much ill-feeling towards me. 'The Lord will give  
 him what his actions deserve.' Do you also, be on your guard against 15  
 him, for he is strongly opposed to our teaching. At my first trial no 16  
 one stood by me. They all deserted me. May it never be counted  
 against them! But the Lord came to my help and strengthened me, in 17  
 order that, through me, the proclamation should be made so widely  
 that all the Gentiles should hear it; and I was rescued 'out of the  
 Lion's mouth.' The Lord will rescue me from all evil, and bring me 18  
 safe into his Heavenly Kingdom. All glory to him for ever and ever!  
 Amen. Give my greeting to Prisca and Aquila, and to the household 19  
 of Onesiphorus. Erastus remained at Corinth, and I left Thopimus 20  
 ill at Miletus. Do your utmost to come before winter. Eubulus, Pu- 21  
 dens, Linus and Claudia send you their greetings, and so do all our  
 Brothers. May the Lord be with your soul. God bless you all. 22



## TITUS

## PAUL'S LETTER TO TITUS

From Paul, a servant of God, and an Apostle of Jesus Christ, charged  
 to strengthen the faith of God's Chosen People, and their knowl- 2  
 edge of that Truth which makes for godliness, . and is based on the  
 hope of Immortal Life, which God, who never lies, promised before 3  
 the ages began, and has revealed at his own time in his Message,  
 with the proclamation of which I was entrusted by the command 4  
 of God our Savior. To Titus, my true Child in our one Faith: May  
 God, the Father, and Christ Jesus, our Savior, bless you and give you  
 peace. My reason for leaving you in Crete was that you might put 5  
 in order what had been left unsettled, and appoint Officers of the  
 Church in the various towns, as I myself directed you. They are to be 6  
 men of irreproachable character, who are faithful husbands, whose  
 children are Christians and have never been charged with dissolute  
 conduct or have been unruly. For a Presiding-Officer, as God's stew- 7  
 ard, ought to be a man of irreproachable character; not self-willed  
 or quick-tempered, nor addicted to drink or to brawling or to ques-  
 tionable money-making. On the contrary, he should be hospitable, 8  
 eager for the right discreet, upright, a man of holy life and capable  
 of self-restraint, who holds doctrine that can be relied on as being 9  
 in accordance with the accepted Teaching; so that he may be able  
 to encourage others by sound teaching, as well as to refute our op-  
 ponents. There are, indeed, many unruly persons — great talkers 10  
 who deceive themselves, principally converts from Judaism, whose 11  
 mouths ought to be stopped; for they upset whole households by  
 teaching what they ought not to teach, merely to make question-  
 able gains. It was a Cretan — one of their own teachers — who said: 12  
 'Cretans are always liars, base brutes, and gluttonous idlers'; and  
 his statement is true. Therefore rebuke them sharply, so that they 13  
 may be sound in the Faith, and may pay no attention to Jewish leg- 14  
 ends, or to the directions of those who turn their backs upon the

## Titus 2

15 Truth. Everything is pure to the pure-minded, but to those whose  
minds are polluted and who are unbelievers nothing is pure. Their  
16 minds and consciences are alike polluted. They profess to know  
God, but by their actions they disown him. They are degraded and  
self-willed; and, as far as anything good is concerned, they are ut-  
2 terly worthless.

Do you, however, speak of such subjects as properly have a place in  
2 sound Christian teaching. Teach that the older men should be tem-  
perate, serious, and discreet; strong in faith, love, and endurance.  
3 So, too, that the older women should be reverent in their demeanor,  
and that they should avoid scandal, and beware of becoming slaves  
4 to drink; that they should teach what is right, so as to train the  
5 younger women to love their husbands and children, and to be dis-  
creet, pure-minded, domesticated, good women, ready to submit to  
their husbands, in order that God's Message may not be maligned.  
6 And so again with the younger men — impress upon them the need  
7 of discretion. Above all, set an example of doing good. Show sin-  
8 cerity in your teaching, and a serious spirit; let the instruction that  
you give be sound and above reproach, so that the enemy may be  
9 ashamed when he fails to find anything bad to say about us. Urge  
slaves to be submissive to their owners in all circumstances, and to  
10 try their best to please them. Teach them not to contradict or to pilfer,  
but to show such praiseworthy fidelity in everything, as to recom-  
11 mend the teaching about God our Savior by all that they do. For the  
loving-kindness of God has been revealed, bringing Salvation for  
12 all; leading us to renounce irreligious ways and worldly ambitions,  
and to live discreet, upright, and religious lives here in this present  
13 world, while we are awaiting our Blessed Hope — the Appearing in  
14 glory of our great God and Savior, Christ Jesus. For he gave himself  
on our behalf, to deliver us from all wickedness, and to purify for  
himself a People who should be peculiarly his own and eager to do  
15 good. Speak of all this, and encourage and rebuke with all authority.  
3 Do not let any one despise you.

Remind your hearers to respect and obey the Powers that be, to be  
ready for every kind of good work, to speak ill of no one, to avoid

quarreling, to be forbearing, and under all circumstances to show 2  
a gentle spirit in dealing with others, whoever they may be. There 3  
was, you remember, a time when we ourselves were foolish, dis-  
obedient, misled, slaves to all kinds of passions and vices, living in  
a spirit of malice and envy, detested ourselves and hating one an-  
other. But, when the kindness of God our Savior and his love for 4  
man were revealed, he saved us, not as the result of any righteous 5  
actions that we had done, but in fulfillment of his merciful purposes.  
He saved us by that Washing which was a New Birth to us, and by  
the renewing power of the Holy Spirit, which he poured out upon 6  
us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior; that, having been 7  
pronounced righteous through his loving-kindness, we might enter  
on our inheritance with the hope of Immortal Life. How true that 8  
saying is! And it is on these subjects that I desire you to lay especial  
stress, so that those who have learned to trust in God may be care-  
ful to devote themselves to doing good. Such subjects are excellent 9  
in themselves, and of real use to mankind. But have nothing to do  
with foolish discussions, or with genealogies, or with controversy,  
or disputes about the Law. They are useless and futile. If a man is 10  
causing divisions among you, after warning him once or twice, have  
nothing more to say to him. You may be sure that such a man has 11  
forsaken the Truth and is in the wrong; he stands self-condemned.  
As soon as I send Artemas or Tychicus to you, join me as quickly as 12  
possible at Nicopolis, for I have arranged to spend the winter there.  
Do your best to help Zenas, the Teacher of the Law, and Apollos, 13  
on their way, and see that they want for nothing. Let all our People 14  
learn to devote themselves to doing good, so as to meet the most  
pressing needs, and that their lives may not be unfruitful. All who 15  
are with me here send you their greeting. Give my greeting to our  
friends in the Faith. God bless you all.





## PHILEMON

## PAUL'S LETTER TO PHILEMON

From Paul, now a prisoner for Christ Jesus, and from Timothy, a  
 Brother. To our dear friend and fellow-worker Philemon, to our sis- 2  
 ter Apphia, to our fellow-soldier Archippus; and to the Church that  
 meets at Philemon's house; may God, our Father, and the Lord Je- 3  
 sus Christ bless you and give you peace. I always mention you in 4  
 my prayers and thank God for you, because I hear of the love and 5  
 the faith which you show, not only to the Lord Jesus, but also to  
 all his People; and I pray that your participation in the Faith may 6  
 result in action, as you come to a fuller realization of everything  
 that is good and Christlike in us. I have indeed found great joy and 7  
 encouragement in your love, knowing, as I do, how the hearts of  
 Christ's People have been cheered, brother, by you. And so, though 8  
 my union with Christ enables me, with all confidence, to dictate the  
 course that you should adopt, yet the claims of love make me prefer 9  
 to plead with you — yes, even me, Paul, though I am an ambas-  
 sador for Christ Jesus and, now a prisoner for him as well. I plead 10  
 with you for this Child of mine, Onesimus, to whom, in my parson,  
 I have become a Father. Once he was of little service to you, but now 11  
 he has become of great service, not only to you, but to me as well;  
 and I am sending him back to you with this letter — though it is like 12  
 tearing out of my very heart. For my own sake I should like to keep 13  
 him with me, so that, while I am in prison for the Good News, he  
 might attend to my wants on your behalf. But I do not wish to do 14  
 anything without your consent, because I want your generosity to  
 be voluntary and not, as it were, compulsory. It may be that he was 15  
 separated from you for an hour, for this very reason, that you might  
 have him back for ever, no longer as a slave, but as something better 16  
 — a dearly loved Brother, especially dear to me, and how much more  
 so to you, not only as your fellow man, but as your fellow Christian!  
 If, then, you count me your friend, receive him as you would me. If 18

he has caused you any loss, or owes you anything, charge it to me.  
19 I, Paul, put my own hand to it — I will repay you myself. I say nothing  
20 about your owing me your very self. Yes, Brother, let me gain something from you because of your union with the Lord. Cheer  
21 my heart by your Christlike spirit. Even as I write, I have such confidence in your compliance with my wishes, that I am sure that you  
22 will do even more than I am asking. Please also get a lodging ready for me, for I hope that I shall be given back to you all in answer to  
23 your prayers. Epaphras, who is my fellow-prisoner for Christ Jesus, sends you his greeting; and Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke,  
24 my fellow-workers, send theirs. May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ rest on your souls.

# HEBREWS

## THE LETTER TO THE HEBREWS

God, who, of old, at many times and in many ways, spoke to our an-  
 cestors, by the Prophets, has in these latter days spoken to us by the 2  
 Son, whom he appointed the heir of all things, and through whom  
 he made the universe. For he is the radiance of the Glory of God 3  
 and the very expression of his Being, upholding all creation by the  
 power of his word; and, when he had made an expiation for the  
 sins of men, he 'took his seat at the right hand' of God's Majesty  
 on high, having shown himself as much greater than the angels as 4  
 the Name that he has inherited surpasses theirs. For to which of the 5  
 angels did God ever say — 'Thou art my Son; this day I have be-  
 come thy Father'? or again — 'I will be to him a Father, and he shall  
 be to me a Son'? And again, when God brought the First-born into 6  
 the world, he said — 'Let all the angels of God bow down before  
 him.' Speaking of the angels, he said — 'He makes the winds his 7  
 angels and the fiery flames his servants'; while of the Son he said — 8  
 'God is thy throne for ever and ever; The scepter of his Kingdom is  
 the scepter of Justice; thou lovest righteousness and hatest iniquity; 9  
 Therefore God, thy God, has anointed thee with the festal oil more  
 abundantly than thy peers.' Again — 'Thou, Lord, in the beginning 10  
 didst lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the work  
 of thy hands. They shall perish, but thou remainest; As a garment 11  
 they shall all grow old; as a mantle thou wilt fold them up, And as a 12  
 garment they shall be changed, But thou art the same, and thy years  
 shall know no end.' To which of the angels has God ever said — 13  
 'Sit thou at my right hand until I put thy enemies as a stool for thy  
 feet'? Are not all the angels spirits in the service of God, sent out to 14  
 minister for the sake of those who are destined to obtain Salvation? 2  
 Therefore we must give still more heed to what we were taught, for  
 fear we should drift away. For, if the Message which was delivered 2  
 by angels had its authority confirmed, so that every offence against

## Hebrews 2

3 it, or neglect of it, met with a fitting requital, how can we, of all people, expect to escape, if we disregard so great a Salvation? It was the Master who at the outset spoke of this Salvation, and its authority  
4 was confirmed for us by those who heard him, while God himself added his testimony to it by signs, and marvels, and many different  
5 miracles, as well as by imparting the Holy Spirit as he saw fit. God has not given to angels the control of that Future World of which  
6 we are speaking! No; a writer has declared somewhere — ‘What is Man that thou shouldst remember him? Or a Son of Man that  
7 thou shouldst regard him? Thou hast made him, for a while, lower than angels; With glory and honour thou hast crowned him; Thou  
8 hast set him over all that thy hands have made; thou hast placed all things beneath his feet.’ This ‘placing of everything’ under man means that there was nothing which was not placed under him. As  
9 yet, however, we do not see everything placed under man. What our eyes do see is Jesus, who was made for a while lower than angels, now, because of his sufferings and death, crowned with glory and honour; so that his tasting the bitterness of death should, in God’s  
10 loving-kindness, be on behalf of all mankind. It was, indeed, fitting that God, for whom and through whom all things exist, should, when leading many sons to glory, make the author of their Salvation  
11 perfect through suffering. For he who purifies, and those whom he purifies, all spring from One; and therefore he is not ashamed to call  
12 them ‘Brothers.’ He says — ‘I will tell of thy Name to my Brothers, In the midst of the congregation I will sing thy praise.’ And again —  
13 ‘As for me, I will put my trust in God.’ And yet again — ‘See, here am I and the children whom God gave me.’ Therefore, since human nature is the common heritage of ‘the Children,’ Jesus also shared it, in order that by death he might render powerless him whose power  
14 lies in death — that is, the Devil — and so might deliver all those who, from fear of death, had all their lives been living in slavery.  
15 It was not, surely, to the help of the angels that Jesus came, but ‘to the help of the descendants of Abraham.’ And consequently it was  
16 necessary that he should in all points be made like ‘his Brothers,’ in order that he might prove a merciful as well as a faithful High Priest

in man's relations with God, for the purpose of expiating the sins of his People. The fact that he himself suffered under temptation enables him to help those who are tempted. 18  
 3  
 Therefore, Christian Brothers, you who, all alike, have received the Call from Heaven, fix your attention on Jesus, the Apostle and High Priest of our Religion. See how faithful he was to the God who appointed him, as Moses was in the whole House of God. He has 2  
 3  
 been deemed worthy of far higher honour than Moses, just as the founder of the House is held in greater regard than the House itself. For every House has its founder, and the founder of the universe 4  
 5  
 is God. While the faithful service of Moses in the whole House of God was that of a servant, whose duty was to bear testimony to a Message still to come, the faithfulness of Christ was that of a Son 6  
 set over the House of God. And we are his House — if only we retain, unshaken to the end, the courage and confidence inspired by our hope. Therefore, as the Holy Spirit says — 'If to-day you hear 7  
 8  
 God's voice, harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me on the day when they tried my patience in the desert, where your 9  
 ancestors tried my forbearance, And saw my mighty deeds for forty years. Therefore I was sorely vexed with that generation, And I said 10  
 — "Their hearts are always straying; They have never learned my ways"; while in my wrath I swore — "They shall never enter upon 11  
 my Rest."' Be careful, Brothers, that there is never found in any one 12  
 of you a wicked and faithless heart, shown by his separating himself from the Living God. Rather encourage one another daily — while 13  
 there is a 'To-day' — to prevent any one among you from being hardened by the deceitfulness of Sin. For we now all share in the Christ, if 14  
 indeed we retain, unshaken to the end, the confidence that we had at the first. To use the words of Scripture — 'If to-day you hear God's 15  
 voice, harden not your hearts, as when Israel provoked me.' Who 16  
 were they who heard God speak and yet provoked him? Were not they all those who left Egypt under the leadership of Moses? And 17  
 with whom was it that God was sorely vexed for forty years? Was not it with those who had sinned, and who fell dead in the desert? And who were they to whom God swore that they should not enter 18

19 upon his rest, if not those who had proved faithless? We see, then,  
4 that they failed to enter upon it because of their want of faith.  
We must, therefore, be very careful, though there is a promise still  
standing that we shall enter upon God's Rest, that none of you even  
2 appear to have missed it. For we have had the Good News told us  
just as they had. But the Message which they heard did them no  
good, since they did not share the faith of those who were atten-  
3 tive to it. Upon that Rest we who have believed are now entering.  
As God has said — 'In my wrath I swore — "They shall never enter  
upon my Rest;"' Although God's work was finished at the crea-  
4 tion of the world; for, in a passage referring to the seventh day,  
you will find these words — 'God rested upon the seventh day after  
5 all his work.' On the other hand, we read in that passage — ' They  
6 shall never enter upon my Rest.' Since, then, there is still a promise  
that some shall enter upon this Rest, and since those who were first  
told the Good News did not enter upon it, because of their disbelief,  
7 again God fixed a day. 'To-day,' he said, speaking after a long  
interval through the mouth of David, in the passage already quoted  
8 — 'If to-day you hear God's voice harden not your hearts.' Now if  
Joshua had given 'Rest' to the people, God would not have spoken  
9 of another and later day. There is, then, a Sabbath-Rest still awaiting  
10 God's People. For he who enters upon God's Rest does himself rest  
11 after his work, just as God did. Let us, therefore, make every effort  
to enter upon that Rest, so that none of us fall through such disbelief  
12 as that of which we have had an example. God's Message is a living  
and active power, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing its  
way till it penetrates soul and spirit — not the joints only but the  
very marrow — and detecting the inmost thoughts and purposes  
13 of the mind. There is no created thing that can hide itself from the  
sight of God. Everything is exposed and laid bare before the eyes  
14 of him to whom we have to give account. We have, then, in Jesus,  
the Son of God, a great High Priest who has passed into the highest  
Heaven; let us, therefore, hold fast to the Faith which we have pro-  
15 fessed. Our High Priest is not one unable to sympathize with our  
weaknesses, but one who has in every way been tempted, exactly

as we have been, but without sinning. Therefore, let us draw near 16  
boldly to the Throne of Love, to find pity and love for the hour of  
need. 5

Every High Priest, taken from among men, is appointed as a repre-  
sentative of his fellow-men in their relations with God, to offer both  
gifts and sacrifices in expiation of sins. And he is able to sympathize 2  
with the ignorant and deluded, since he is himself subject to weak-  
ness, and is therefore bound to offer sacrifices for sins, not only for 3  
the People, but equally so for himself. Nor does any one take that 4  
high office upon himself, till he has been called to do so by God, as  
Aaron was. In the same way, even the Christ did not take the honour 5  
of the High Priesthood upon himself, but he was appointed by him  
who said to him — ‘Thou art my Son; this day I have become thy Fa-  
ther’; and on another occasion also — ‘Thou art a priest for all time 6  
of the order of Melchizedek.’ Jesus, in the days of his earthly life, of-  
fered prayers and supplications, with earnest cries and with tears, to 7  
him who was able to save him from death; and he was heard because  
of his devout submission. Son though he was, he learned obedience 8  
from his sufferings; and, being made perfect, he became to all those 9  
who obey him the source of eternal Salvation, while God himself 10  
pronounced him a High Priest of the order of Melchizedek. Now on 11  
this subject I have much to say, but it is difficult to explain it to you,  
because you have shown yourselves so slow to learn. For whereas, 12  
considering the time that has elapsed, you ought to be teaching oth-  
ers, you still need some one to teach you the very alphabet of the  
Divine Revelation, and need again to be fed with ‘milk’ instead of  
with ‘solid food.’ For every one who still has to take ‘milk’ knows 13  
nothing of the Teaching of Righteousness; he is a mere infant. But 14  
‘solid food’ is for Christians of mature faith — those whose faculties  
have been trained by practice to distinguish right from wrong. 6

Therefore, let us leave behind the elementary teaching about the  
Christ and press on to perfection, not always laying over again a  
foundation of repentance for a lifeless formality, of faith in God —  
teaching concerning baptisms and the laying on of hands, the resur- 2  
rection of the dead and a final judgment. Yes and, with God’s help, 3

## Hebrews 6

4 we will. For if those who were once for all brought into the Light,  
and learned to appreciate the gift from Heaven, and came to share  
5 in the Holy Spirit, and learned to appreciate the beauty of the Di-  
vine Message, and the new powers of the Coming Age — if those, I  
6 say, fell away, it would be impossible to bring them again to repen-  
tance; they would be crucifying the Son of God over again for them-  
7 selves, and exposing him to open contempt. Ground that drinks in  
the showers that from time to time fall upon it, and produces vege-  
8 tation useful to those for whom it is tilled, receives a blessing from  
God; but, if it 'bears thorns and thistles,' it is regarded as worth-  
9 less, it is in danger of being 'cursed,' and its end will be the fire. But  
about you, dear friends, even though we speak in this way, we are  
confident of better things — of things that point to your Salvation.  
10 For God is not unjust; he will not forget the work that you did, and  
the love that you showed for his Name, in sending help to your fel-  
11 low Christians — as you are still doing. But our great desire is that  
every one of you should be equally earnest to attain to a full convic-  
tion that our hope will be fulfilled, and that you should keep that  
12 hope to the end. Then you will not show yourselves slow to learn,  
but you will copy those who, through faith and patience, are now  
13 entering upon the enjoyment of God's promises. When God gave  
his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater by whom  
14 he could swear, he swore by himself. His words were — 'I will as-  
suredly bless thee and increase thy numbers.' And so, after patiently  
15 waiting, Abraham obtained the fulfillment of God's promise. Men,  
of course, swear by what is greater than themselves, and with them  
16 an oath is accepted as putting a matter beyond all dispute. And  
therefore God, in his desire to show, with unmistakable plainness, to  
those who were to enter on the enjoyment of what he had promised,  
the unchangeableness of his purpose, bound himself with an oath.  
17 For he intended us to find great encouragement in these two un-  
changeable things, which make it impossible for God to prove false  
— we, I mean, who fled for safety where we might lay hold on the  
18 hope set before us. This hope is a very anchor for our souls, secure  
and strong, and it 'reaches into the Sanctuary that lies behind the  
19



Curtain,' where Jesus, our Forerunner, has entered on our behalf, after being made for all time a High Priest of the order of Melchizedek. 20

7

It was this Melchizedek, King of Salem and Priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and gave him his blessing; and it was to him that Abraham allotted a tithe of all the spoil. The meaning of his name is 'King of Righteousness,' and besides that, he was also King of Salem, which means 'King of Peace.' There is no record of his father, or mother, or lineage, nor again of any beginning of his days, or end of his life. In this he resembles the Son of God, and stands before us as a priest whose priesthood is continuous. Consider, then the importance of this Melchizedek, to whom even the Patriarch Abraham himself gave a tithe of the choicest spoils. Those descendants of Levi, who are from time to time appointed to the priesthood, are directed to collect tithes from the people in accordance with the Law — that is from their own Brothers, although they also are descended from Abraham. But Melchizedek, although not of this lineage, received tithes from Abraham, and gave his blessing to the very man who had God's promises. Now no one can dispute that it is the superior who blesses the inferior. In the one case the tithes are received by mortal men; in the other case by one about whom there is the statement that his life still continues. Moreover, in a sense, even Levi, who is the receiver of the tithes, has, through Abraham, paid tithes; for Levi was still in the body of his ancestor when Melchizedek met Abraham. If, then, Perfection had been attainable through the Levitical priesthood — and it was under this priesthood that the people received the Law — why was it still necessary that a priest of a different order should appear, a priest of the order of Melchizedek and not of the order of Aaron? With the change of the priesthood a change of the Law became a necessity. And he of whom all this is said belonged to quite a different tribe, no member of which has ever served at the altar. For it is plain that our Lord ad sprung from the tribe of Judah, though of that tribe Moses said nothing about their being priests. All this becomes even yet plainer when we remember that a new 15

16 priest has appeared, resembling Melchizedek, and that he was appointed, not under a Law regulating only earthly matters, but by  
 17 virtue of a life beyond the reach of death; for that is the meaning of the declaration — ‘Thou art for all time a priest of the order of  
 18 Melchizedek.’ On the one hand, we have the abolition of a previous  
 19 regulation as being both inefficient and useless (for the Law never brought anything to perfection); and, on the other hand, we have the introduction of a better hope, which enables us to draw near to  
 20 God. Then again, the appointment of this new priest was ratified by  
 21 an oath, which is not so with the Levitical priests, but his appointment was ratified by an oath, when God said to him — ‘The Lord has  
 22 sworn, and will not change, “Thou art a priest for all time.”’ And the oath shows the corresponding superiority of the Covenant of which  
 23 Jesus is appointed the surety. Again, new Levitical priests are continually being appointed, because death prevents their remaining in  
 24 office; but Jesus remains for all time, and therefore the priesthood  
 25 that he holds is never liable to pass to another. And that is why he is able to save perfectly those who come to God through him, living  
 26 for ever, as he does, to intercede of their behalf. This was the High Priest that we needed — holy, innocent, spotless, withdrawn from  
 27 sinners, exalted above the highest Heaven, one who has no need to offer sacrifices daily as those High Priests have, first for their own sins, and then for those of the People. For this he did once and for  
 28 all, when he offered himself as the sacrifice. The Law appoints as High Priests men who are liable to infirmity, but the words of God’s oath, which was later than the Law, name the Son as, for all time,  
 8 the perfect Priest.

To sum up what I have been saying: — Such is the High Priest that we have, one who ‘has taken his seat at the right hand’ of the throne  
 2 of God’s Majesty in Heaven, where he ministers in the Sanctuary, in  
 3 that true Tabernacle set up by the Lord and not by man. Every High Priest is appointed for the purpose of offering gifts and sacrifices to God; it follows, therefore, that this High Priest must have some offering to make. If he were, however, still upon earth, he would not even  
 4 be a priest, since there are already priests who offer the gifts as the

Law directs. (These priests, it is true, are engaged in a service which is only a copy and shadow of the heavenly realities, as is shown by the directions given to Moses when he was about to construct the Tabernacle. 'Look to it,' are the words, 'that thou make every part in accordance with the pattern shown thee on the mountain.') But Jesus, as we see, has obtained a ministry as far excelling theirs, as the Covenant of which he is the intermediary, based, as it is, on better promises, excels the former Covenant. If that first Covenant had been faultless, there would have been no occasion for a second. But, finding fault with the people, God says — "Behold, a time is coming," says the Lord, "when I will ratify a new Covenant with the People of Israel and with the People of Judah — Not such a Covenant as I made with their ancestors on the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt. For they did not abide by their Covenant with me, And therefore I disregarded them," says the Lord. "This is the Covenant that I will make with the People of Israel After those days," says the Lord. "I will impress my laws on their minds, and will inscribe them on their hearts; And I will be their God, and they shall be my People. There shall be no need for every man to instruct his fellow-citizen, or for a man to say to his Brother 'Learn to know the Lord'; For every one will know me, From the lowest to the highest. For I will be merciful to their wrong-doings, And I will no longer remember their sins."" By speaking of a 'new' Covenant, God at once renders the former Covenant obsolete; and whatever becomes obsolete and loses its force is virtually annulled.

It is true that even the first Covenant had its regulations for divine worship, and its Sanctuary — though only a material one. For a Tabernacle was constructed, with an outer part which contained the stand for the lamps, and the table, and the consecrated bread. This is called the Sanctuary. The part of the Tabernacle behind the second Curtain is called the Inner Sanctuary. In it is the gold incense-altar, and the Ark containing the Covenant, completely covered with gold. In the Ark is a gold casket containing the manna, Aaron's rod that budded, and the tablets on which the Covenant was written;

5 while above it, and overshadowing the Cover on which atonement  
6 was made, are the Cherubim of the Presence. But I must not now  
7 dwell on these things in detail. Such, then, was the arrangement of  
8 the Tabernacle. Into the outer part priests are constantly going, in  
9 the discharge of their sacred duties; but into the inner only the High  
10 Priest goes, and that but once a year, and never without taking the  
11 blood of a victim, which he offers on his own behalf, and on behalf  
12 of the errors of the People. By this the Holy Spirit is teaching that  
13 the way into the Sanctuary was hidden, as long as the outer part  
14 of the Tabernacle still remained. For that was only a type, to con-  
15 tinue down to the present time; and, in keeping with it, both gifts  
16 and sacrifices are offered, though incapable of satisfying the con-  
17 science of the worshiper; the whole system being concerned only  
18 with food and drink and various ablutions — external ceremoni-  
als imposed until the coming of the New Order. But, when Christ  
came, he appeared as High Priest of that Better System which was  
established; and he entered through that nobler and more perfect  
'Tabernacle,' not made by human hands — that is to say, not a part of  
this present creation. Nor was it with the blood of goats and calves,  
but with his own blood, that he entered, once and for all, into the  
Sanctuary, and obtained our eternal deliverance. For, if the blood  
of goats and bulls, and the sprinkling of the ashes of a heifer, pu-  
rify those who have been defiled (as far as ceremonial purification  
goes), how much more will the blood of the Christ, who, through  
his eternal Spirit, offered himself up to God, as a victim without  
blemish, purify our consciences from a lifeless formality, and fit us  
for the service of the Living God! And that is why he is the interme-  
diary of a new Covenant; in order that, as a death has taken place  
to effect a deliverance from the offenses committed under the first  
Covenant, those who have received the Call may obtain the eternal  
inheritance promised to them. Whenever such a Covenant as a will  
is in question, the death of the testator must of necessity be alleged.  
For such a Covenant takes effect only upon death, it does not come  
into force as long as the testator is alive. This explains why even  
the first Covenant was not ratified without the shedding of blood.

For, when every command had been announced to all the people by 19  
 Moses in accordance with the Law, he took the blood of the calves  
 and of the goats, with water, scarlet wool, and a bunch of hyssop,  
 and sprinkled even the Book of the Law, as well as all the people,  
 saying, as he did so — “This is the blood that renders valid the 20  
 Covenant which God has commanded to be made with you.” And 21  
 in the same way he also sprinkled with the blood the Tabernacle and  
 all the things that were used in public worship. Indeed, under the 22  
 Law, almost everything is purified with blood; and, unless blood is  
 shed, no forgiveness is to be obtained. While, then, it was necessary 23  
 for the copies of the heavenly realities to be purified by such means  
 as these, the heavenly realities themselves required better sacrifices.  
 For it was not into a Sanctuary made by human hands, which merely 24  
 foreshadowed the true one, that Christ entered, but into Heaven it-  
 self, that he might now appear in the presence of God on our behalf.  
 Nor yet was it to offer himself many times, as year after year the High 25  
 Priest entered the Sanctuary with an offering of blood — but not his  
 own blood; for then Christ would have had to undergo death many 26  
 times since the creation of the world. But now, once and for all, at  
 the close of the age, he has appeared, in order to abolish sin by the  
 sacrifice of himself. And, as it is ordained for men to die but once 27  
 (death being followed by judgment), so it is with the Christ. He was 28  
 offered up once and for all, to ‘bear away the sins of many’; and the  
 second time he will appear — but without any burden of sin — to  
 those who are waiting for him, to bring Salvation. 10

The Law, though able to foreshadow the Better System which was  
 coming, never had its actual substance. Its priests, with those sacri-  
 fices which they offer continuously year after year, can never make  
 those who come to worship perfect. Otherwise, would not the offer- 2  
 ing of these sacrifices have been abandoned, as the worshipers,  
 having been once purified, would have had their consciences clear  
 from sins? But, on the contrary, these sacrifices recall their sins to 3  
 mind year after year. For the blood of bulls and goats is powerless 4  
 to remove sins. That is why, when he was coming into the world, 5  
 the Christ declared — ‘Sacrifice and offering thou dost not desire,

6 but thou dost provide for me a body; thou dost take no pleasure in  
7 burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin. So I said, "See, I have come"  
8 (as is written of me in the pages of the Book), "To do thy will, O  
9 God." First come the words — 'Thou dost not desire, nor dost thou  
10 take pleasure in, sacrifices, offerings, burnt offerings, and sacrifices  
11 for sin' (offerings regularly made under the Law), and then there is  
12 added — 'See, I have come to do thy will.' The former sacrifices are  
13 set aside to be replaced by the latter. And it is in the fulfillment of the  
14 will of God that we have been purified by the sacrifice, once and for  
15 all, of the body of Jesus Christ. Every other priest stands day after  
16 day at his ministrations, and offers the same sacrifices over and over  
17 again — sacrifices that can never take sins away. But, this priest, after  
18 he had offered one sacrifice for sins, which should serve for all time,  
19 'took his seat at the right hand of God,' and has since then been wait-  
20 ing 'for his enemies to be put as a stool for his feet.' By a single offer-  
21 ing he has made perfect for all time those who are being purified. We  
22 have also the testimony of the Holy Spirit. For, after saying — "'This  
23 is the Covenant that I will make with them after those days,'" says  
24 the Lord; "I will impress my laws on their hearts, and will inscribe  
25 them on their minds,'" then we have — 'And their sins and their in-  
26 iquities I will no longer remember.' And, when these are forgiven,  
there is no further need of an offering for sin. Therefore, Brothers,  
since we may enter the Sanctuary with confidence, in virtue of the  
blood of Jesus, by the way which he inaugurated for us — a new  
and living way, a way through the Sanctuary Curtain (that is, his  
human nature); and, since we have in him 'a great priest set over  
the House of God,' let us draw near to God in all sincerity of heart  
and in perfect faith, with our hearts purified by the sprinkled blood  
from all consciousness of wrong, and with our bodies washed with  
pure water. Let us maintain the confession of our hope unshaken,  
for he who has given us his promise will not fail us. Let us vie with  
one another in a rivalry of love and noble actions. And let us not,  
as some do, cease to meet together; but, on the contrary, let us en-  
courage one another, and all the more, now that you see the Day  
drawing near. Remember, if we sin willfully after we have gained

a full knowledge of the Truth, there can be no further sacrifice for sin; there is only a fearful anticipation of judgment, and a burning indignation which will destroy all opponents. When a man disregarded the Law of Moses, he was, on the evidence of two or three witnesses, put to death without pity. How much worse then, think you, will be the punishment deserved by those who have trampled underfoot the Son of God, who have treated the blood that rendered the Covenant valid — the very blood by which they were purified — as of no account, and who have outraged the Spirit of Love? We know who it was that said — ‘It is for me to avenge, I will requite’; and again — ‘The Lord will judge his people.’ It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the Living God. Call to mind those early days in which, after you had received the Light, you patiently underwent a long and painful conflict. Sometimes, in consequence of the taunts and injuries heaped upon you, you became a public spectacle; and sometimes you suffered through having shown yourselves to be the friends of men who were in the very position in which you had been. For you not only sympathized with those who were in prison, but you even took the confiscation of your possessions joyfully, knowing, as you did, that you had in yourselves a greater possession and a lasting one. Do not, therefore, abandon the confidence that you have gained, for it has a great reward awaiting it. You still have need of patient endurance, in order that, when you have done God’s will, you may obtain the fulfillment of his promise. ‘For there is indeed but a very little while ere He who is coming will have come, without delay; and through faith the Righteous man shall find his Life, But, if a man draws back, my heart can find no pleasure in him.’ But we do not belong to those who draw back, to their Ruin, but to those who have faith, to the saving of their souls.

Faith is the realization of things hoped for — the proof of things not seen. And it was for faith that the men of old were renowned. Faith enables us to perceive that the universe was created at the bidding of God — so that we know that what we see was not made out of visible things. Faith made the sacrifice which Abel offered to God a better sacrifice than Cain’s, and won him renown as a righteous man,

God himself establishing his renown by accepting his gifts; and it is by the example of his faith that Abel, though dead, still speaks.

5 Faith led to Enoch's removal from earth, that he might not experience death. 'He could not be found because God had removed him.' For, before his removal, he was renowned as having pleased God;

6 but without faith it is impossible to please him, for he who comes to God must believe that God exists, and that he rewards those who

7 seek for him. It was faith that enabled Noah, after he had received the divine warning about what could not then be foreseen, to build, in reverent obedience, an ark in which to save his family. By his faith he condemned the world, and became possessed of that righteousness

8 which follows upon faith. It was faith that enabled Abraham to obey the Call that he received, and to set out for the place which he was afterwards to obtain as his own; and he set out not knowing

9 where he was going. It was faith that made him go to live as an emigrant in the Promised Land — as in a strange country — living there in tents with Isaac and Jacob, who shared the promise

10 with him. For he was looking for the City with the sure foundations, whose architect and builder is God. Again, it was faith that enabled

11 Sarah to conceive (though she was past the age for child-bearing), because she felt sure that he who had given her the promise would

12 not fail her. And so from one man — and that when his powers were dead — there sprang a people as numerous 'as the stars in the heavens

13 or the countless grains of sand upon the shore.' All these died sustained by faith. They did not obtain the promised blessings, but they saw them from a distance and welcomed the sight, and they acknowledged themselves to be only aliens and strangers on the earth.

14 Those who speak thus show plainly that they are seeking their fatherland. If they had been thinking of the land that they had left,

15 they could have found opportunities to return. But no, they were longing for a better, a heavenly, land! And therefore God was not

16 ashamed to be called their God; indeed he had already prepared them a city. It was faith that enabled Abraham, when put to the test,

17 to offer Isaac as a sacrifice — he who had received the promises offering up his only son, of whom it had been said — 'It is through

18



Isaac that there shall be descendants to bear thy name.’ For he argued that God was able even to raise a man from the dead — and indeed, figuratively speaking, Abraham did receive Isaac back from the dead. It was faith that enabled Isaac to bless Jacob and Esau, even with regard to the future. Faith enabled Jacob, when dying, to give his blessing to each of the sons of Joseph, and ‘to bow himself in worship as he leant upon the top of his staff.’ Faith caused Joseph, when his end was near, to speak of the future migration of the Israelites, and to give instructions with regard to his bones. Faith caused the parents of Moses to hide the child for three months after his birth, for they saw that he was a beautiful child; and they would not respect the King’s order. It was faith that caused Moses, when he was grown up, to refuse the title of ‘Son of a Daughter of Pharaoh.’ He preferred sharing the hardships of God’s People to enjoying the short-lived pleasures of sin. For he counted ‘the reproaches that are heaped upon the Christ’ of greater value than the treasures of Egypt, looking forward, as he did, to the reward awaiting him. Faith caused him to leave Egypt, though undaunted by the King’s anger, for he was strengthened in his endurance by the vision of the invisible God. Faith led him to institute the Passover and the Sprinkling of the Blood, so that the Destroyer might not touch the eldest children of the Israelites. Faith enabled the people to cross the Red Sea, as if it had been dry land, while the Egyptians, when they attempted to do so, were drowned. Faith caused the walls of Jericho to fall after being encircled for seven days. Faith saved Rahab, the prostitute, from perishing with the unbelievers, after she had entertained the spies with friendliness. Need I add anything more? Time would fail me if I attempted to relate the stories of Gideon, Barak, Samson, and Jephthah, and those of David, Samuel, and the Prophets. By their faith they subdued kingdoms, ruled righteously, gained the fulfillment of God’s promises, ‘shut the mouths of lions,’ quelled the fury of the flames, escaped the edge of the sword, found strength in the hour of weakness, displayed their prowess in war, and routed hostile armies. Women received back their dead raised

to life. Some were tortured on the wheel, and refused release in order that they might rise to a better life. Others had to face taunts and blows, and even chains and imprisonment. They were stoned to death, they were tortured, they were swan asunder, they were put to the sword; they wandered about clothed in the skins of sheep or goats, destitute, persecuted, ill-used — men of whom the world was not worthy — roaming in lonely places, and on the mountains, and in caves and holes in the ground. Yet, though they all won renown by their faith, they did not obtain the final fulfillment of God's promise; since God had in view some better thing for us, that they, apart from us, should not attain perfection.

Seeing, therefore, that there is on every side of us such a throng of witnesses, let us also lay aside everything that hinders us, and the sin that clings about us, and run with patient endurance the race that lies before us, our eyes fixed upon Jesus, the Leader and perfect Example of our faith, who, for the joy that lay before him, endured the cross, heedless of its shame, and now 'has taken his seat at the right hand' of the throne of God. Weigh well the example of him who had to endure such opposition from 'men who were sinning against themselves,' so that you should not grow weary or faint-hearted. You have not yet, in your struggle with sin, resisted to the death; and you have forgotten the encouraging words which are addressed to you as God's Children — 'My child, think not lightly of the Lord's discipline, do not despond when he rebukes you; for it is him whom he loves that he disciplines, and he chastises every child whom he acknowledges.' It is for your discipline that you have to endure all this. God is dealing with you as his Children. For where is there a child whom his father does not discipline? If you are left without that discipline, in which all children share, it shows that you are bastards, and not true Children. Further, when our earthly fathers disciplined us, we respected them. Shall we not, then, much rather yield submission to the Father of souls, and live? Our fathers disciplined us for only a short time and as seemed best to them; but God disciplines us for our true good, to enable us to share his holiness. No discipline is pleasant at the time; on the contrary, it

is painful. But afterwards its fruit is seen in the peacefulness of a righteous life which is the lot of those who have been trained under it. Therefore 'lift again the down-dropped hands and straighten the weakened knees; make straight paths for your feet,' so that the lame limb may not be put out of joint, but rather be cured. Try earnestly to live at peace with every one, and to attain to that purity without which no one will see the Lord. Take care that no one fails to use the loving help of God, 'that no bitterness is allowed to take root and spring up, and cause trouble,' and so poison the whole community. Take care that no one becomes immoral, or irreligious like Esau, who sold his birthright for a single meal. For you know that even afterwards, when he wished to claim his father's blessing, he was rejected — for he never found an opportunity to repair his error — though he begged for the blessing with tears. It is not to tangible 'flaming fire' that you have drawn near, nor to 'gloom, and darkness, and storm, and the blast of a trumpet, and an audible voice.' Those who heard that voice entreated that they might hear no more, for they could not bear to think of the command — 'If even an animal touches the mountain, it is to be stoned to death;' and so fearful was the sight that Moses said — 'I tremble with fear.' No, but it is to Mount Zion that you have drawn near, the City of the Living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to countless hosts of angels, to the festal gathering and assemblage of God's Eldest Sons whose names are enrolled in Heaven, to God the Judge of all men, to the spirits of the righteous who have attained perfection, to Jesus, the intermediary of a new Covenant, and to the Sprinkled Blood that tells of better things than the blood of Abel. Beware how you refuse to hear him who is speaking. For, if the Israelites did not escape punishment, when they refused to listen to him who taught them on earth the divine will, far worse will it be for us, if we turn away from him who is teaching us from Heaven. Then his voice shook the earth, but now his declaration is — 'Still once more I will cause not only the earth to tremble, but also the heavens.' And those words 'still once more' indicate the passing away of all that is shaken — that is,

of all created things — in order that only what is unshaken may remain. Therefore, let us, who have received a kingdom that cannot be shaken, be thankful, and so offer acceptable worship to God, with awe and reverence. For our God is ‘a consuming fire.’

Let your love for the Brethren continue. Do not neglect to show hospitality; for, through being hospitable, men have all unawares entertained angels. Remember the prisoners, as if you were their fellow-prisoners, and the oppressed, not forgetting that you also are still in the body. Let marriage be honoured by all and the married life be pure; for God will judge those who are immoral and those who commit adultery. Do not let your conduct be ruled by the love of money. Be content with what you have, for God himself has said — ‘I will never forsake you, nor will I ever abandon you.’ Therefore we may say with confidence — ‘The Lord is my helper, I will not be afraid. What can man do to me?’ Do not forget your Leaders, the men who told you God’s Message. Recall the close of their lives, and imitate their faith. Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and to-day — yes, and for ever! Do not let yourselves be carried away by the various novel forms of teaching. It is better to rely for spiritual strength upon the divine help, than upon regulations regarding food; for those whose lives are guided by such regulations have not found them of service. We are not without an altar; but it is one at which those who still worship in the Tabernacle have no right to eat. The bodies of those animals whose blood is brought by the High Priest into the Sanctuary, as an offering for sin, are burnt outside the camp. And so Jesus, also, to purify the People by his own blood, suffered outside the gate. Therefore let us go out to him ‘outside the camp,’ bearing the same reproaches as he; for here we have no permanent city, but are looking for the City that is to be. Through him let us offer, as our sacrifice, continual praise to God — an offering from lips that glorify his Name. Never forget to do kindly acts and to share what you have with others, for such sacrifices are acceptable to God. Obey your Leaders, and submit to their control, for they are watching over your souls, as men who will have to render an account, so that they may do it with joy, and not in sorrow. That would not be

to your advantage. Pray for us, for we are sure that our consciences 18  
 are clear, since our wish is to be occupied with what is good. And 19  
 I the more earnestly ask for your prayers, that I may be restored to  
 you the sooner. May God, the source of all peace, who brought back 20  
 from the dead him who, 'by virtue of the blood that rendered valid  
 the unchangeable Covenant, is the Great Shepherd of God's Sheep,'  
 Jesus, our Lord — may God make you perfect in everything that is 21  
 good, so that you may be able to do his will. May he bring out in  
 us all that is pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be  
 all glory for ever and ever. Amen. I beg you, Brothers, to bear with 22  
 these words of advice. For I have written only very briefly to you.  
 You will be glad to hear that our Brother, Timothy, has been set free. 23  
 If he comes here soon, we will visit you together. Give our greeting 24  
 to all your Leaders, and to all Christ's People. Our friends from Italy  
 send their greetings to you. May God bless you all. 25



## JAMES

## THE LETTER FROM JAMES

James, a Servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, greets The Twelve Tribes that are living abroad. My Brothers, whatever may be the temptations that beset you from time to time, always regard them as a reason for rejoicing, knowing, as you do, that the testing of your faith develops endurance. And let endurance do its work perfectly, so that you may be altogether perfect, and in no respect deficient. If one of you is deficient in wisdom, let him ask wisdom from the God who gives freely to every one without reproaches, and it will be given to him. But let him ask with confidence, never doubting; for the man who doubts is like a wave of the sea driven hither and thither at the mercy of the wind — Such a man must not expect that he will receive anything from the Lord, vacillating as he is, irresolute at every turn. Let a Brother in humble circumstances be proud of his exalted position, but a rich Brother of his humiliation; for the rich man will pass away ‘like the flower of the grass.’ As the sun rises, and the hot wind blows, ‘the grass withers, its flower fades,’ and all its beauty is gone. So is it with the rich man. In the midst of his pursuits he will come to an untimely end. Blessed is the man who remains firm under temptation, for, when he has stood the test, he will receive the crown of Life, which the Lord has promised to those who love him. Let no one say, when he is tempted, “It is God who is tempting me!” For God, who cannot be tempted to do wrong, does not himself tempt any one. A man is in every case tempted by his own passions — allured and enticed by them. Then Passion conceives and gives birth to Sin, and Sin, on reaching maturity, brings forth Death. Do not be deceived, my dear Brothers. Every good thing given us, and every perfect gift, is from above, and comes down to us from the Maker of the Lights in the heavens, who is himself never subject to change or to eclipse. Because he so willed, he gave us Life, through the Message of the Truth, so that we should be, as it were,

## James 2

19 an earnest of still further creations. Mark this, my dear Brothers —  
Let every one be quick to listen, slow to speak, and slow to get angry;  
20 for the anger of man does not forward the righteous purpose of  
21 God. Therefore, have done with all filthiness and whatever wickedness  
still remains, and in a humble spirit receive that Message which  
22 has been planted in your hearts and is able to save your souls. Put  
that Message into practice, and do not merely listen to it — deceiving  
23 yourselves. For, when any one listens to it and does not practice  
24 it, he is like a man looking at his own face in a mirror. He looks at  
25 himself, then goes on his way, but he who looks carefully into the  
perfect Law, the Law of Freedom, and continues to do so, not listening  
to it and then forgetting it, but putting it into practice — that  
26 man will be blessed in what he does. When a man appears to be religious,  
yet does not bridle his tongue, but imposes upon his own  
27 conscience, that man's religious observances are valueless. That religious  
observance which is pure and spotless in the eyes of God our Father  
is this — to visit orphans and widows in their trouble, and  
2 to keep oneself uncontaminated by the world.

My Brothers, are you really trying to combine faith in Jesus Christ,  
2 our glorified Lord, with the worship of rank? Suppose a man should  
enter your Synagogue, with gold rings and in grand clothes, and  
3 suppose a poor man should come in also, in shabby clothes, and  
you are deferential to the man who is wearing grand clothes, and  
say — "There is a good seat for you here," but to the poor man —  
4 "You must stand; or sit down there by my footstool," Is not that to  
make distinctions among yourselves, and show yourselves prejudiced  
5 judges? Listen, my dear Brothers. Has not God chosen those  
who are poor in the things of this world to be rich through their  
faith, and to possess the Kingdom which he has promised to those  
6 who love him? But you — you insult the poor man! Is not it the rich  
7 who oppress you? Is not it they who drag you into law-courts? Is not  
it they who malign that honorable Name which has been bestowed  
8 upon you? Yet, if you keep the royal law which runs — 'Thou shalt  
9 love thy neighbor as thou dost thyself,' you are doing right; but, if  
you worship rank, you commit a sin, and stand convicted by that



same law of being offenders against it. For a man who has laid the Law, as a whole, to heart, but has failed in one particular, is liable for breaking all its provisions. He who said 'Thou shalt not commit adultery' also said 'Thou shalt not murder.' If, then, you commit murder but not adultery, you are still an offender against the Law. Therefore, speak and act as men who are to be judged by the 'Law of Freedom.' For there will be justice without mercy for him who has not acted mercifully. Mercy triumphs over Justice. My Brothers, what is the good of a man's saying that he has faith, if he does not prove it by actions? Can such faith save him? Suppose some Brother or Sister should be in want of clothes and of daily bread, and one of you were to say to them — "Go, and peace be with you; find warmth and food for yourselves," and yet you were not to give them the necessities of life, what good would it be to them? In just the same way faith, if not followed by actions, is, by itself, a lifeless thing. Some one, indeed, may say — "You are a man of faith, and I am a man of action." "Then show me your faith," I reply, "apart from any actions, and I will show you my faith by my actions." It is a part of your Faith, is it not, that there is one God? Good; yet even the demons have that faith, and tremble at the thought. Now do you really want to understand, you foolish man, how it is that faith without actions leads to nothing? Look at our ancestor, Abraham. Was not it the result of his actions that he was pronounced righteous after he had offered his son, Isaac, on the altar? You see how, in his case, faith and actions went together; that his faith was perfected as the result of his actions; and that in this way the words of Scripture came true — "Abraham believed God, and that was regarded by God as righteousness," and "He was called the friend of God." You see, then, that it is as the result of his actions that a man is pronounced righteous, and not of his faith only. Was not it the same with the prostitute, Rahab? Was not it as the result of her actions that she was pronounced righteous, after she had welcomed the messengers and hastened them away by a different road? Exactly as a body is dead without a spirit, so faith is dead without actions.

## James 4

I do not want many of you, my Brothers, to become teachers, knowing, as you do, that we who teach shall be judged by a more severe  
2 standard than others. We often make mistakes, every one of us. Any  
one who does not make mistakes when speaking is indeed a perfect  
3 man, able to bridle his whole body as well. When we put bits into  
horses' mouths, to make them obey us, we control the rest of their  
4 bodies so. Again, think of ships. Large as they are, and even when  
driven by fierce winds, they are controlled by a very small rudder  
and steered in whatever direction the man at the helm may deter-  
5 mine. So is it with the tongue. Small as it is, it is a great boaster.  
6 Think how tiny a spark may set the largest forest ablaze! And the  
tongue is like a spark. Among the members of our body it proves  
itself a very world of mischief; it contaminates the whole body; it  
sets the wheels of life on fire, and is itself set on fire by the flames  
7 of the Pit. For while all sorts of beasts and birds, and of reptiles and  
creatures in the sea, are tameable, and actually have been tamed by  
8 man, no human being can tame the tongue. It is a restless plague! It  
9 is charged with deadly poison! With it we bless our Lord and Father,  
10 and with it we curse men who are made 'in God's likeness.' From  
the very same mouth come blessings and curses! My Brothers, it is  
11 not right that this should be so. Does a spring give both good and  
12 bad water from the same source? Can a fig tree, my Brothers, bear  
olives? or a vine bear figs? No, nor can a brackish well give good wa-  
13 ter. Who among you claims to be wise and intelligent? Let him show  
that his actions are the outcome of a good life lived in the humility  
14 of true wisdom. But, while you harbor envy and bitterness and a  
spirit of rivalry in your hearts, do not boast or lie to the detriment  
15 of the Truth. That is not the wisdom which comes from above; no, it  
16 is earthly, animal, devilish. For, where envy and rivalry exist, there  
17 you will also find disorder and all kinds of base actions. But the wis-  
dom from above is, before every thing else, pure; then peace-loving,  
gentle, open to conviction, rich in compassion and good deeds, and  
18 free from partiality and insincerity. And righteousness, its fruit, is  
4 sown in peace by those who work for peace.

What is the cause of the fighting and quarreling that goes on among  
 you? Is not it to be found in the desires which are always at war  
 within you? You crave, yet do not obtain. You murder and rage, 2  
 yet cannot gain your end. You quarrel and fight. You do not ob-  
 tain, because you do not ask. You ask, yet do not receive, because 3  
 you ask for a wrong purpose — to spend what you get upon your  
 pleasures. Unfaithful people! Do not you know that to be friends 4  
 with the world means to be at enmity with God? Therefore who-  
 ever chooses to be friends with the world makes himself an enemy  
 to God. Do you suppose there is no meaning in the passage of Scrip- 5  
 ture which asks — ‘Is envy to result from the longings of the Spirit  
 which God has implanted within you?’ No; the gift that God gives 6  
 is for a nobler end; and that is why it is said — ‘God is opposed  
 to the haughty, but gives help to the humble.’ Therefore submit to 7  
 God; but resist the Devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to 8  
 God, and he will draw near to you. Make your hands clean, you sin-  
 ners; and your hearts pure, you vacillating men! Grieve, mourn, and 9  
 lament! Let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your happi-  
 ness to gloom! Humble yourselves before the Lord, and he will exalt 10  
 you. Do not disparage one another, Brothers. He who disparages his 11  
 Brother, or passes judgment on his Brother, disparages the Law and  
 passes judgment on the Law. But, if you pass judgment on the Law,  
 you are not obeying it, but judging it. There is only one Lawgiver 12  
 and Judge — he who has the power both to save and to destroy. But  
 who are you that pass judgment on your neighbor? Listen to me, 13  
 you who say ‘To-day or to-morrow we will go to such and such a  
 town, spend a year there, and trade, and make money,’ And yet you 14  
 do not know what your life will be like to-morrow! For you are but a  
 mist appearing for a little while and then disappearing. You ought,  
 rather, to say ‘If the Lord wills, we shall live and do this or that.’ 15  
 But, as it is, you are constantly boasting presumptuously! All such 16  
 boasting is wicked. He, then, who knows what is right but fails to 17  
 do it — that is sin in him. 5  
 Listen to me, you rich men, weep and wail for the miseries that are  
 coming upon you! Your riches have wasted away, and your clothes 2

3 have become moth-eaten. Your gold and silver are rusted; and the  
rust on them shall be evidence against you, and shall eat into your  
very flesh. It was fire, so to speak, that you stored up for yourselves  
4 in these last days. I tell you, the wages of the laborers who mowed  
your fields, which you have been fraudulently keeping back, are cry-  
ing out against you, and the outcries of your reapers have reached  
5 the ears of the Lord of Hosts! You have lived on earth a life of ex-  
travagance and luxury; you have indulged your fancies in a time  
6 of bloodshed. You have condemned, you have murdered, the Right-  
eous One! Must not God be opposed to you? Be patient, then, Broth-  
ers, till the Coming of the Lord. Even the farmer has to wait for the  
precious fruit of the earth, watching over it patiently, till it has had  
8 the spring and summer rains. And you must be patient also, and not  
9 be discouraged; for the Lord's Coming is near. Do not make com-  
plaints against one another, Brothers, or judgment will be passed  
10 upon you. The Judge is already standing at the door! Brothers, as  
an example of the patient endurance of suffering, take the Prophets  
11 who spoke in the name of the Lord. We count those who displayed  
such endurance blessed! You have heard, too, of Job's endurance,  
and have seen what the Lord's purpose was, for 'the Lord is full of  
12 pity and compassion.' Above all things, my Brothers, never take an  
oath, either by heaven, or by earth, or by anything else. With you let  
'Yes' suffice for yes, and 'No' for no, so that you may escape condem-  
13 nation. If any of you is in trouble, let him pray; if any one is happy,  
14 let him sing hymns. If any one of you is ill, let him send for the Offi-  
cers of the Church, and let them pray over him, after anointing him  
15 with oil in the name of the lord. The prayer offered in faith will save  
the man who is sick, and the Lord will raise him from his bed; and if  
16 he has committed sins, he will be forgiven. Therefore, confess your  
sins to one another and pray for one another, that you may be cured.  
17 Great is the power of a good man's fervent prayer. Elijah was only a  
man like ourselves, but, when he prayed fervently that it might not  
18 rain, no rain fell upon the land for three years and a half. And, when  
he prayed again, the clouds brought rain, and the land bore crops.  
19 My Brothers, should one of you be led astray from the Truth, and

some one bring him back again, be sure that he who brings a sinner 20  
back from his mistaken ways will save that man's soul from Death,  
and throw a veil over countless sins.



## 1 PETER

## PETER'S FIRST LETTER

To the People of God who are living abroad, dispersed throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Roman Asia, and Bithynia, and who were chosen in accordance with the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the consecration of the Spirit, to learn obedience, and to be purified by the sprinkling of the Blood of Jesus Christ, from Peter, an Apostle of Jesus Christ. May blessing and peace be yours in ever-increasing measure. Blessed is the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has, in his great mercy, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, given us the new Life of undying hope, that promises an inheritance, imperishable, stainless, unfading, which has been reserved for you in Heaven — for you who, through faith, are being guarded by the power of God, awaiting a Salvation that is ready to be revealed in the last days. At the thought of this you are full of exultation, though (if it has been necessary) you have suffered for the moment somewhat from various trials; that the genuineness of your faith — a thing far more precious than gold, which is perishable, yet has to be tested by fire — may win praise and glory and honour at the Appearing of Jesus Christ. Though you have never seen him, yet you love him; though you do not even now see him, yet you believe in him, and exalt with a triumphant happiness too great for words, as you receive the reward of your faith in the Salvation of your souls! It was this Salvation that the Prophets, who spoke long ago of the blessing intended for you, sought, and strove to comprehend; as they strove to discern what that time could be, to which the Spirit of Christ within them was pointing, when foretelling the sufferings that would befall Christ, and the glories that would follow. And it was revealed to them that it was not for themselves, but for you, that they were acting as Ministers of the truths which have now been told to you, by those who, with the help of the Holy Spirit sent from Heaven, have

brought you the Good News — truths into which even angels long to  
 13 look. Therefore concentrate your minds, with the strictest self-control, and fix your hopes on the blessing that is coming for you at  
 14 the Appearing of Jesus Christ. Be like obedient children; do not let your lives be shaped by the passions which once swayed you in the  
 15 days of your ignorance, but in your whole life show yourselves to be holy, after the pattern of the Holy One from whom you received  
 16 your Call. For Scripture says — ‘You shall be holy, because I am holy.’  
 17 And since you call upon him as ‘Father,’ who judges every one impartially by what he has done, let reverence be the spirit of your  
 18 lives during the time of your stay upon earth. For you know that it was not by perishable things, such as silver and gold, that you were  
 Ransomed from the aimless way of living which was handed down  
 19 to you from your ancestors, but by precious blood, as it were of a  
 20 lamb, unblemished and spotless, the Blood of Christ. Destined for this before the beginning of the world, he has been revealed in these  
 21 last days for your sakes, who, through him, are faithful to God who raised him from the dead and gave him honour, so that your faith  
 22 and hope are now in God. Now that, by your obedience to the Truth, you have purified your lives, so that there is growing up among you  
 a genuine brotherly affection, love one another earnestly with all  
 23 your hearts; since your new Life has come, not from perishable, but  
 24 imperishable, seed, through the Message of the Everliving God. For — ‘All earthly life is but as grass, And all its splendor as the flower  
 25 of grass. The grass fades, Its flower falls, but the teaching of the Lord remains for ever.’ And that is the Teaching of the Good News which  
 2 has been told to you.

Now that you have done with all malice, all deceitfulness, insincerity, jealous feelings, and all back-biting, like newly born infants, crave pure spiritual milk, so that you may be enabled by it to grow  
 3 till you attain Salvation — since ‘you have found by experience that  
 4 the Lord is kind.’ Come to Him, then, as to a living stone, rejected,  
 5 indeed, by men, but in God’s eyes choice and precious; and, as living stones, form yourselves into a spiritual House, to be a consecrated Priesthood, for the offering of spiritual sacrifices that will be



acceptable to God through Jesus Christ. For there is a passage of  
 Scripture that runs — ‘See, I am placing in Zion a choice and pre-  
 cious corner-stone; And he who believes in him shall have no cause  
 for shame.’ It is to you, then, who believe in him that he is pre-  
 cious, but to those who do not believe he is ‘a stone which, though  
 rejected by the builders, has now itself become the corner-stone,’  
 and ‘a stumbling-block, and a rock which shall prove a hindrance.’  
 They stumble because they do not accept the Message. This was the  
 fate destined for them. But you are ‘a chosen race, a royal priest-  
 hood, a consecrated nation, God’s own People,’ entrusted with the  
 proclamation of the goodness of him who called you out of Dark-  
 ness into his wonderful Light. Once you were ‘not a people,’ but  
 now you are ‘God’s People’; once you ‘had not found mercy,’ but  
 now you ‘have found mercy.’ Dear friends, I urge you, as pilgrims  
 and strangers upon earth, to refrain from indulging the cravings of  
 your earthly nature, for they make war upon the soul. Let your daily  
 life among the Gentiles be so upright, that, whenever they malign  
 you as evil-doers, they may learn, as they watch, from the uprightness  
 of your conduct, to praise God ‘at the time when he shall visit  
 them.’ Submit to all human institutions for the Lord’s sake, alike  
 to the emperor as the supreme authority, and to governors as the  
 men sent by him to punish evil-doers and to commend those who  
 do right. For God’s will is this — that you should silence the igno-  
 rance of foolish people by doing what is right. Act as free men, yet  
 not using your freedom as those do who make it a cloak for wicked-  
 ness, but as Servants of God. Show honour to every one, Love the  
 Brotherhood, ‘revere God, honour the emperor.’ Those of you who  
 are domestic servants should always be submissive and respectful  
 to their masters, not only to those who are good and considerate,  
 but also to those who are arbitrary. For this wins God’s approval  
 when, because conscious of God’s presence, a man who is suffer-  
 ing unjustly bears his troubles patiently. What credit can you claim  
 when, after doing wrong, you take your punishment for it patiently?  
 But, on the other hand, if, after doing right, you take your sufferings  
 patiently, that does win the approval of God. For it was to this that

you were called! For Christ, too, suffered — on your behalf — and left you an example, that you should follow in his steps. He ‘never sinned, nor was anything deceitful ever heard from his lips.’ He was abused, but he did not answer with abuse; he suffered, but he did not threaten; he entrusted himself to him whose judgments are just. And he ‘himself carried our sins’ in his own body to the cross, so that we might die to our sins, and live for righteousness. ‘His bruising was your healing.’ Once you were straying like sheep, but now you have returned to the Shepherd and Guardian of your souls.

Again, you married women should submit to your husbands, so that if any of them reject the Message, they may, apart from the Message, be won over, by the conduct of their wives, as they watch your submissive and blameless conduct. Yours should be, not the external adornment of the arrangement of the hair, the wearing of jewelry, or the putting on of dresses, but the inner life with the imperishable beauty of a quiet and gentle spirit; for this is very precious in God’s sight. It was by this that the holy women of old, who rested their hopes on God, adorned themselves; submitting to their husbands, as Sarah did, who obeyed Abraham, and called him master. And you are her true children, as long as you live good lives, and let nothing terrify you. Again, those of you who are married men should live considerately with their wives, showing due regard to their sex, as weaker than their own, and not forgetting that they share with you in the gift of Life. Then you will be able to pray without hindrance. Lastly, you should all be united, sympathetic, full of brotherly love, kind-hearted, humble-minded; never returning evil for evil, or abuse for abuse, but, on the contrary, blessing. It was to this that you were called — to obtain a blessing! ‘He who would enjoy life And see happy days — let him keep his tongue from evil And his lips from deceitful words, let him turn from evil and do good, Let him seek for peace and follow after it; for the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous, And his ears are attentive to their prayers, But the face of the Lord is set against those who do wrong.’ Who, indeed, is there to harm you, if you prove yourselves to be eager for what is good? Even if you should suffer for righteousness, count yourselves

blessed! 'Do not let men terrify you, or allow yourselves to be dismayed.' Revere the Christ as Lord in your hearts; always ready to give an answer to any one who asks your reason for the hope that you cherish, but giving it humbly and in all reverence, and keeping your consciences clear, so that, whenever you are maligned, those who vilify your good and Christian conduct may be put to shame. It is better that you should suffer, if that should be God's will, for doing right, than for doing wrong. For Christ himself died to atone for sins once for all — the good on behalf of the bad — that he might bring you to God; his body being put to death, but his spirit entering upon new Life. And it was then that he went and preached to the imprisoned spirits, who once were disobedient, at the time when God patiently waited, in the days of Noah, while the ark was being prepared; in which some few lives, eight in all, were saved by means of water. And baptism, which this foreshadowed, now saves you — not the mere cleansing of the body, but the search of a clear conscience after God — through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, who has gone into Heaven, and is at God's right hand, where Angels and Archangels and the Powers of Heaven now yield submission to him.

4

Since, then, Christ suffered in body, arm yourselves with the same resolve as he; for he who has suffered in body has ceased to sin, and so will live the rest of his earthly life guided, not by human passions, but by the will of God. Surely in the past you have spent time enough living as the Gentiles delight to live. For your path has lain among scenes of debauchery, licentiousness, drunkenness, revelry, hard-drinking, and profane idolatry. And, because you do not run to the same extremes of profligacy as others, they are astonished, and malign you. But they will have to answer for their conduct to him who is ready to judge both the living and the dead. For that was why the Good News was told to the dead also — that, after they have been judged in the body, as men are judged, they might live in the spirit, as God lives. But the end of all things is near. Therefore exercise self-restraint and be calm, that you may be able to pray. Above all things, let your love for one another be earnest, for 'Love

8

9 throws a veil over countless sins.' Never grudge hospitality to one  
 10 another. Whatever the gift that each has received, use it in the ser-  
 11 vice of others, as good stewards of the varied bounty of God. When  
 any one speaks, let him speak as one who is delivering the oracles of  
 God. When any one is endeavoring to serve others, let him do so in  
 reliance on the strength which God supplies; so that in everything  
 God may be honour ed through Jesus Christ — to whom be ascribed  
 12 all honour and might for ever and ever. Amen. Dear friends, do not  
 be astonished at the fiery trials that you are passing through, to test  
 13 you, as though something strange were happening to you. No, the  
 more you share the sufferings of the Christ, the more may you re-  
 joice, that, when the time comes for the manifestation of his Glory,  
 14 you may rejoice and exult. If you are reviled for bearing the name  
 of Christ, count yourselves blessed; because the divine Glory and  
 15 the Spirit of God are resting upon you. I need hardly say that no  
 one among you must suffer as a murderer, or a thief, or a criminal,  
 16 or for interfering in matters which do not concern Christians. But,  
 if a man suffers as a Christian, do not let him be ashamed of it; let  
 17 him bring honour to God even though he bears that name. For the  
 time has come for judgment to begin with the House of God; and,  
 if it begins with us, what will be the end of those who reject God's  
 18 Good News? If 'a good man is saved only with difficulty, what will  
 19 become of the godless and the sinful?' Therefore, I say, let those who  
 suffer, because God wills it so, commit their lives into the hands of  
 5 a faithful Creator, and persevere in doing right.

As for the older men among you, who bear office in the Church,  
 I, their fellow-Officer, and a witness to the sufferings of the Christ,  
 2 who shall also share in the glory that is to be revealed — I urge you  
 to be true shepherds of the flock of God among you, not because  
 you are compelled, but of your own free will; not from a base love of  
 3 gain, but with a ready spirit; not as lords of your charges, but as ex-  
 4 amples to your flock. Then, when the Chief Shepherd appears, you  
 5 will win the crown of glory that never fades. Again, you younger  
 men should show deference to the older. And all of you should put  
 on the badge of humility in mutual service, for 'God is opposed to

the proud, but gives his help to the humble.' Humble yourselves, 6  
therefore, under the mighty hand of God, so that he may exalt you  
in his good time, laying all your anxieties upon him, for he makes 7  
you his care. Exercise self-control, be watchful. Your adversary, the 8  
Devil, like a roaring lion, is prowling about, eager to devour you.  
Stand firm against him, strong in your faith; knowing, as you do, 9  
that the very sufferings which you are undergoing are being en-  
dured to the full by your Brotherhood throughout the world. God, 10  
from whom all help comes, and who called you, by your union with  
Christ, into his eternal glory, will, when you have suffered for a little  
while, himself perfect, establish, strengthen you. To him be ascribed 11  
dominion for ever. Amen. I have been writing to you briefly by the 12  
hand of Silas, our true-hearted Brother (for so I regard him), to urge  
upon you, and to bear my testimony, that in what I have written is  
to be found the true love of God. On that take your stand. Your sis- 13  
ter-Church in 'Babylon' sends you greeting, and so does Mark, who  
is as a son to me. Greet one another with the kiss of love. May God 14  
give his peace to you all in your union with Christ.



## 2 PETER

## PETER'S SECOND LETTER

To those to whom, through the justice of our God and Savior Jesus Christ, there has been granted faith equally privileged with our own, from Simon Peter, a servant and an Apostle of Jesus Christ. May blessing and peace be yours in ever-increasing measure, as you advance in the knowledge of God and of Jesus, our Lord. For his divine power has given us everything that is needful for a life of piety, as we advance in the knowledge of him who called us by a glorious manifestation of his goodness. For it was through this that he gave us what we prize as the greatest of his promises, that through them you might participate in the divine nature, now that you have fled from the corruption in the world, resulting from human passions. Yes, and for this very reason do your best to supplement your faith by goodness, goodness by knowledge, knowledge by self-control, self-control by endurance, endurance by piety, piety by brotherly affection, and brotherly affection by love. For, when these virtues are yours, in increasing measure, they prevent your being indifferent to, or destitute of, a fuller knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ. Surely the man who has not these virtues is shortsighted even to blindness, and has chosen to forget that he has been purified from his sins of the past! Therefore, Brothers, do your best to put God's Call and Selection of you beyond all doubt; for, if you do this, you will never fall. For thus you will be given a triumphant admission into the eternal Kingdom of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. I shall, therefore, always be ready to remind you of all this, even though you know it and are firmly established in the Truth that you now hold. But I think it my duty, as long as I live in this 'tent,' to rouse you by awakening memories of the past; for I know that the time for this 'tent' of mine to be put away is soon coming, as our Lord Jesus Christ himself assured me. So I will do my best to enable you, at any time after my departure, to call these truths to mind. For we were not

following cleverly devised stories when we told you of the Coming in power of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we had been eye-witnesses  
 17 of his majesty. For he received honour and glory from God the Father, when from the Glory of the Divine Majesty there were borne to his ears words such as these — ‘This is my Son, my Beloved, in  
 18 whom I delight.’ These were the words that we heard, borne to our ears from Heaven, when we were with him on that Sacred Mountain. And still stronger is the assurance that we have in the teaching  
 19 of the Prophets; to which you will do well to pay attention (as if it were a lamp shining in a gloomy place), until the Day dawns and  
 20 the Morning Star rises in your hearts. But first be assured of this: — There is no prophetic teaching found in Scripture that can be interpreted by man’s unaided reason; for no prophetic teaching ever  
 21 came in the old days at the mere wish of man, but men, moved by  
 2 the Holy Spirit, spoke direct from God.

But there were false prophets also in the nation, just as there will be false teachers among you, men who will secretly introduce ruinous divisions, disowning even the Lord who bought them, and  
 2 bringing speedy Ruin upon themselves. There will be many, too, who will follow their licentious courses, and cause the Way of the  
 3 Truth to be maligned. In their covetousness they will try to make you a source of profit by their fabrications; but for a long time past their Sentence has not been standing idle, nor their Ruin slumbering.  
 4 Remember, God did not spare angels when they sinned, but sent them down to Tartarus, and committed them to caverns of darkness, to be kept under guard for judgment. Nor did he spare the  
 5 world of old; though he preserved Noah, the Preacher of Righteousness, and seven others, when he brought a flood upon the godless  
 6 world. He condemned the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah and reduced them to ashes, holding them up as a warning to the godless of what was in store for them; but he rescued righteous Lot,  
 7 whose heart was vexed by the wanton licentiousness of his neighbors; for, seeing and hearing what he did, as he lived his righteous life among them, day after day, Lot’s righteous soul was tortured  
 8 by their wicked doings. The Lord, therefore, knows how to deliver  
 9



the pious from temptation, and to keep the wicked, who are even  
 now suffering punishment, in readiness for 'the Day of Judgment'  
 — especially those who, following the promptings of their lower 10  
 nature, indulge their polluting passions and despise all control. Au-  
 dacious and self-willed, they feel no awe of the Mighty, maligning  
 them, even where angels, though excelling them in strength and 11  
 power, do not bring against them a malignant charge before the  
 Lord. These men, however, like animals without reason, intended 12  
 by nature to be caught and killed — these men, I say, malign those of  
 whom they know nothing, and will assuredly perish through their  
 own corruption, suffering themselves, as the penalty for the suffering 13  
 that they have inflicted. They think that pleasure consists in the  
 self-indulgence of the moment. They are a stain and a disgrace, in-  
 dulgung, as they do, in their wanton revelry, even while joining you  
 at your feasts. They have eyes only for adulteresses, eyes never tired 14  
 of sin; they entice weak souls; their minds are trained to covet; they  
 live under a curse. Leaving the straight road, they have gone astray 15  
 and followed in the steps of Balaam, the son of Beor, who set his  
 heart on the reward for wrong-doing, but was rebuked for his of- 16  
 fense. A dumb animal spoke with the voice of a man, and checked  
 the prophet's madness. These men are like springs without water, 17  
 or mists driven before a gale; and for them the blackest darkness  
 has been reserved. With boastful and foolish talk, they appeal to the 18  
 passions of man's lower nature, and, by their profligacy, entice those  
 who are just escaping from the men who live such misguided lives.  
 They promise them freedom, while they themselves are slaves to 19  
 corrupt habits; for a man is the slave of anything to which he gives  
 way. If, after having escaped the polluting influences of the world, 20  
 through knowing our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, men are again  
 entangled in them, and give way to them, their last state has become  
 worse than their first. It would, indeed, have been better for them 21  
 not to have known the Way of Righteousness, than, after knowing  
 it, to turn away from the holy Command delivered to them. In their 22  
 case is seen the truth of the proverb — 'A dog returns to what he

has vomited' and 'A sow after washing to her wallowing-place in the mud.'

This, dear friends, is my second letter to you. In both of them I have tried, by appealing to your remembrance, to arouse your better feelings. I want you to recall what was foretold by the holy Prophets, as well as the Command of our Lord and Savior given to you through your Apostles. First be assured of this, that, as the age draws to an end, scoffers, led by their own passions, will come and ask scoffingly — 'Where is his promised Coming? Ever since our fathers passed to their rest, everything remains just as it was when the world was first created!' For they wilfully shut their eyes to the fact that long ago the heavens existed; and the earth, also — formed out of water and by the action of water, by the fiat of God; and that by the same means the world which then existed was destroyed in a deluge of water. But the present heavens and earth, by the same fiat, have been reserved for fire, and are being kept for the day of the judgment and destruction of the godless. But you, dear friends, must never shut your eyes to the fact that, to the Lord, one day is the same as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slow to fulfil his promise, as some count slowness; but he is forbearing with you, as it is not his will that any of you should perish, but that all should be brought to repentance. The Day of the Lord will come like a thief; and on that day the heavens will pass away with a crash, the elements will be burnt up and dissolved, and the earth and all that is in it will be disclosed. Now, since all these things are in the process of dissolution, think what you yourselves ought to be — what holy and pious lives you ought to lead, while you await and hasten the coming of the Day of God. At its coming the heavens will be dissolved in fire, and the elements melted by heat, but we look for 'new heavens and a new earth,' where righteousness shall have its home, in fulfillment of the promise of God. Therefore, dear friends, in expectation of these things, make every effort to be found by him spotless, blameless, and at peace. Regard our Lord's forbearance as your one hope of Salvation. This is what our dear Brother Paul wrote to you, with the wisdom that God gave him. It is the same in all his letters,

when he speaks in them about these subjects. There are some things  
in them difficult to understand, which untaught and weak people  
distort, just as they do all other writings, to their own Ruin. Do you, 17  
therefore, dear friends, now that you know this beforehand, be on  
your guard against being led away by the errors of reckless people,  
and so lapsing from your present steadfastness; and advance in the 18  
love and knowledge of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. All glory  
be to him now and for ever.



## 1 JOHN

## JOHN'S FIRST LETTER

It is of what has been in existence from the Beginning, of what we have heard, of what we have seen with our eyes, of what we watched reverently and touched with our hands — it is about the Word who is the Life that we are now writing. That Life was made visible, and we have seen it, and now bear our testimony to it, and tell you of that Immortal Life, which was with the Father and was made visible to us. It is of what we have seen and heard that we now tell you, so that you may have communion with us. And our communion is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ. And we are writing all this to you that our joy may be complete. These, then, are the Tidings that we have heard from him and now tell you — ‘God is Light, and Darkness has no place at all in him.’ If we say that we have communion with him, and yet continue to live in the Darkness, we lie, and are not living the Truth. But, if our lives are lived in the Light, as God himself is in the Light, we have communion with one another, and the Blood of Jesus, his Son, purifies us from all sin. If we say that there is no sin in us, we are deceiving ourselves, and the Truth has no place in us. If we confess our sins, God may be trusted, in his righteousness, to forgive us our sins and purify us from all wickedness. If we say that we have not sinned, we are making God a liar, and his Message has no place in us.

My children, I am writing to you to keep you from sinning; but if any one should sin, we have one who can plead for us with the Father — Jesus Christ, the Righteous — and he is the atoning sacrifice for our sins, and not for ours only, but for those of the whole world besides. And by this we know that we have learned to know him — by our laying his commands to heart. The man who says ‘I know Jesus,’ but does not lay his commands to heart, is a liar, and the Truth has no place in him; but, whenever a man lays his Message to heart, in that man the love of God has indeed reached its perfection. By

## 1 John 2

6 this we know that we are in union with God — He who professes to maintain union with God is himself bound to live as Christ lived.

7 Dear friends, it is no new command that I am writing to you, but an old command, which you have had from the first. That old command is the Message to which you listened. Yet, again, it is a new Command that I am writing to you — manifest in Christ's life and in your own — for the Darkness is passing away and the true Light is already shining. He who says that he is in the Light, and yet hates his Brother, is in the Darkness even now. He who loves his Brother is always in the Light, and there is nothing within him to cause him to stumble; while he who hates his Brother is in the Darkness, and is living in the Darkness, and does not know where he is going, because the Darkness prevents his seeing. I am writing, Children, to you, because your sins have been forgiven you for Christ's sake. I am writing, Fathers, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the Beginning. I am writing, Young Men, to you, because you have conquered the Evil One. I write, Children, to you, because you have learned to know the Father. I write, Fathers, to you, because you have learned to know him who has been from the Beginning. I write, Young Men, to you, because you are strong, and God's Message is always in your hearts, and you have conquered the Evil One. Do not love the world or what the world can offer. When any one loves the world, there is no love for the Father in him; for all that the world can offer — the gratification of the earthly nature, the gratification of the eye, the pretentious life — belongs, not to the Father, but to the world. And the world, and all that it gratifies, is passing away, but he who does God's will remains for ever. My Children, these are the last days. You were told that an Anti-Christ was coming; and many Anti-Christ's have already arisen. By that we know that these are the last days. From us, it is true, they went out, but they had never belonged to us; for, if they had belonged to us, they would have remained among us. They left us that it might be made clear that they do not, any of them, belong to us. You, however, have received consecration from the Holy One. You all know — But I am not writing to you because you do not know the Truth, but

because you do know it, and because nothing false can come from the Truth. Who is a liar, if not the man who rejects the truth that Jesus is the Christ? He is the Anti-Christ — The man who rejects the Father and the Son. No one who rejects the Son has found the Father; he who acknowledges the Son has found the Father also. As for you, let what you were told at the first be always in your thoughts. If, then, what you were told at the first is always in your thoughts, you yourselves will maintain your union both with the Son and with the Father. And this is what he himself promised us — The Immortal Life! In writing thus to you, I have in mind those who are trying to mislead you. But you — you still retain in your hearts that consecration which you received from the Christ, and are not in need of any one to teach you; but, since his consecration of you teaches you about everything, and since it is a real consecration, and no lie, then, as it has taught you, maintain your union with him. Yes, my Children, maintain your union with Christ, so that, whenever he appears, our confidence may not fail us, and we may not be ashamed to meet him at his coming. Knowing him to be righteous, you realize that every one who lives righteously has received the new Life from him.

Think what love the Father has shown us in allowing us to be called 'Children of God'; as indeed we are. The reason why the world does not know us is that it has not learned to know him. Dear friends, we are God's Children now; what we shall be has not yet been revealed. What we do know is that, when it is revealed, we shall be like Christ; because we shall see him as he is. And every one who has this hope with regard to Christ tries to make himself pure — as Christ is pure. Every one who lives sinfully is living in violation of Law. Sin is violation of Law. And you know that Christ appeared to take away our sins; and in him Sin has no place. No one who maintains union with him lives in sin; no one who lives in sin has ever really seen him or learned to know him. My Children, do not let any one mislead you. He who lives righteously is righteous — as Christ is righteous. He who lives sinfully belongs to the Devil, for the Devil has sinned from the first. It was for this that the Son of God appeared, that he might

## 1 John 4

9 undo the Devil's work. No one who has received the new Life from God lives sinfully, because the very nature of God dwells within him; and he cannot live in sin, because he has received the new  
10 Life from God. By this the Children of God are distinguished from the Children of the Devil — No one who lives unrighteously comes from God, and especially the man who does not love his Brother.  
11 For these are the Tidings that we heard from the first — that we are  
12 to love one another. We must not be like Cain, who belonged to the Evil One and killed his brother. And why did he kill him? It was  
13 because his life was bad while his brother's was good. Do not wonder, Brothers, if the world hates you. We know that we have passed  
14 out of Death into Life, because we love our Brothers. The man who  
15 does not love remains in a state of Death. Every one who hates his Brother is a murderer; and you know that no murderer has Immortal  
16 Life within him. We have learned to know what love is from this — that Christ laid down his life on our behalf. Therefore we also ought  
17 to lay down our lives on behalf of our Brothers. But, if any one has worldly possessions, and yet looks on while his Brother is in want, and steels his heart against him, how can it be said that the love of  
18 God is within him? My children, do not let our love be mere words,  
19 or end in talk; let it be true and show itself in acts. By that we shall know that we are on the side of the Truth; and we shall satisfy our-  
20 selves in God's sight, that if our conscience condemns us, yet God is greater than our conscience and knows everything. Dear friends, if  
21 our conscience does not condemn us, then we approach God with confidence, and we receive from him whatever we ask, because we  
22 are laying his commands to heart, and are doing what is pleasing in his sight. His Command is this — that we should put our trust  
23 in the Name of his Son, Jesus Christ, and love one another, in accordance with the Command that he gave us. And he who lays his  
24 commands to heart maintains union with Christ, and Christ with him. And by this we know that Christ maintains union with us —  
4 by our possession of the Spirit which he gave us.  
Dear friends, do not trust every inspiration, but test each inspiration, to see whether it proceeds from God; because many false Prophets



have gone out into the world. This is the way by which to know the  
 inspiration of God — All inspiration that acknowledges Jesus Christ  
 as come in our human nature is from God; while all inspiration that  
 does not acknowledge Jesus is not inspiration from God. It is the in-  
 spiration of the Anti-Christ; you have heard that it was to come, and  
 it is now already in the world. You, my Children, come from God,  
 and you have successfully resisted such men as these, because he  
 who is in you is greater than he who is in the world. Those men be-  
 long to the world; and therefore they speak as the world speaks, and  
 the world listens to them. We come from God. He who knows God  
 listens to us; the man who does not come from God does not listen  
 to us. By that we may know the true inspiration from the false. Dear  
 friends, let us love one another, because Love comes from God; and  
 every one who loves has received the new Life from God and knows  
 God. He who does not love has not learned to know God; for God  
 is Love. The love of God was revealed to us by his sending his only  
 Son into the world, that we might find Life through him. His love is  
 seen in this — not in our having loved God, but in his loving us and  
 sending his Son to be an atoning sacrifice for our sins. Dear friends,  
 since God loved us thus, we, surely, ought to love one another. No  
 human eyes have ever seen God, yet, if we love one another, God  
 remains in union with us, and his love attains its perfection in us.  
 We know that we remain in union with him, and he with us, by this  
 — by his having given us some measure of his Spirit. Moreover, our  
 eyes have seen — and we are testifying to the fact — that the Father  
 has sent the Son to be the Savior of the world. Whoever acknowl-  
 edges that Jesus Christ is the Son of God — God remains in union  
 with that man, and he with God. And, moreover, we have learned  
 to know, and have accepted as a fact, the love which God has for  
 us. God is Love; and he who lives in love lives in God, and God in  
 him. It is through this that love has attained its perfection in us, so  
 that we may have confidence on the Day of Judgment, because what  
 Christ is that we also are in this world. There is no fear in love. No!  
 Love, when perfect, drives out fear, for fear implies punishment, and

## 1 John 5

19 the man who feels fear has not attained to perfect love. We love, be-  
20 cause God first loved us. If a man says 'I love God,' and yet hates  
his Brother, he is a liar; for the man who does not love his Brother,  
21 whom he has seen, cannot love God, whom he has not seen. Indeed,  
we have this Command from God — 'He who loves God must also  
5 love his Brother.'

Every one who believes that Jesus is the Christ has received the new  
Life from God; and every one who loves him who gave that Life  
2 loves him who has received it. By this we know that we love God's  
3 Children — when we love God and carry out his commands. For to  
love God is to lay his commands to heart; and his commands are not  
4 burdensome, because all that has received the new Life from God  
conquers the world. And this is the power that has conquered the  
5 world — our faith! Who is he that conquers the world but the man  
6 who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? He it is whose Coming  
was attested by means of Water and Blood — Jesus Christ himself;  
not by Water only, but by Water and by Blood. And there is the Spirit  
7 also to bear testimony, and the Spirit is Truth itself. It is a three-fold  
8 testimony — that of the Spirit, the Water, and the Blood — and these  
9 three are at one. We accept the testimony of men, but God's testi-  
mony is still stronger; and there is the testimony of God — the fact  
10 that he has already borne testimony about his Son. He who believes  
in the Son of God has that testimony within him. He who does not  
believe God has made God a liar, by refusing to believe in that testi-  
11 mony which he has borne about his Son. And that testimony is that  
12 God gave us Immortal Life, and that this Life is in his Son. He who  
finds the Son finds Life; he who does not find the Son of God does  
13 not find Life. I write this to you, that you may realize that you have  
found Immortal Life — you who believe in the Name of the Son of  
14 God. And this is the confidence with which we approach him, that  
whenever we ask anything that is in accordance with his will, he  
15 listens to us. And if we realize that he listens to us — whatever we  
16 ask — we realize that we have what we have asked from him. If any  
one sees his Brother committing some sin that is not a deadly sin, he  
will ask, and so be the means of giving Life to him — to any whose

sin is not deadly. There is such a thing as deadly sin; about that I do  
not say that a man should pray. Every wrong action is sin, and there 17  
is sin that is not deadly. We know that no one who has received the 18  
new Life from God lives in sin. No, he who has received the new  
Life from God keeps the thought of God in his heart, and then the  
Evil One does not touch him. We realize that we come from God, 19  
while all the world is under the influence of the Evil One. We real- 20  
ize, too, that the Son of God has come among us, and has given us  
the discernment to know the True God; and we are in union with  
the True God by our union with his Son, Jesus Christ. He is the True  
God and he is Immortal Life. My Children, guard yourselves against 21  
false ideas of God.



## 2 JOHN

## JOHN'S SECOND LETTER

To an eminent Christian Lady, and to her Children, from the Officer  
of the Church. I sincerely love you all, and not I only, but also all  
those who have learned to know the Truth. We love you for the sake 2  
of that Truth which is always in our hearts; yes, and it will be ours for  
ever. Blessing, mercy, and peace will be ours — the gift of God, the 3  
Father, and of Jesus Christ, the Father's Son — in a life of truth and  
love. It was a great joy to me to find the lives of some of your children 4  
guided by the Truth, in obedience to the command that we received  
from the Father. And now, I pray you, Lady — not as though I were 5  
writing a new command for you; no, it is the command which we  
had from the first — Let us love one another. And this is love — to 6  
live in obedience to the Father's commands. This is the Command as  
you learned from the first, to live in a spirit of love. I say this because 7  
many impostors have left us to go into the world — men who do not  
acknowledge Jesus as Christ come in our human nature. It is that 8  
which marks a man as an impostor and an anti-Christ. Take care that  
you do not lose the fruit of all our work; rather, reap the benefit of it 9  
in full. Every one who goes beyond the limits of the Teaching of the  
Christ has failed to find God; the man who keeps to that Teaching 10  
— he has found both the Father and the Son. If any one comes to  
you and does not bring this Teaching, do not receive him into your 11  
house or welcome him; for the man who welcomes him is sharing  
with him in his wicked work. Though I have a great deal to say to 12  
you, I would rather not trust it to paper and ink, but I am hoping to  
come and see you, and to speak with you face to face, so that your  
joy may be complete. The children of your eminent sister send you 13  
their greetings.



## 3 JOHN

## JOHN'S THIRD LETTER

To his dear friend Gaius, whom he sincerely loves, From the Offi-  
 cer of the Church. Dear friend, I pray that all may be well with you 2  
 and that you may have good health — I know that all is well with  
 your soul. For it was a great joy to me, when some Brothers came 3  
 and testified to your fidelity to the Truth — I know that your own  
 life is guided by the Truth. Nothing gives me greater pleasure than 4  
 to hear from time to time that the lives of my Children are guided  
 by the Truth. Dear friend, whatever you do for our Brothers is done 5  
 in a Christian spirit — even when they are strangers to you. They 6  
 themselves have testified before the Church to your love; and you  
 will do well to help them on their way in a manner worthy of the  
 service of God. For it was on behalf of the Name that they left their 7  
 homes, and refused to take anything from the Gentiles. We, there- 8  
 fore, ought to give such people a hearty welcome, and so take our  
 share in their work for the Truth. I wrote a few lines to the Church; 9  
 but Diotrephes, who loves to be first among them, declines to rec-  
 ognize us. Therefore, when I come, I shall not forget his conduct in 10  
 ridiculing us with his wicked tongue. Not content with that, he not  
 only declines to recognize our Brothers himself, but actually pre-  
 vents those who would, and expels them from the Church. Dear 11  
 friend, take what is good for your example, not what is bad. The  
 man who does what is good is from God; the man who does what  
 is bad has never seen God. Every one has always had a good word 12  
 for Demetrius, and the Truth itself speaks for him. Yes, and we also  
 add our good word, and you know that what we say about him is  
 true. I have a great deal to say to you, but I do not care to trust it to 13  
 pen and ink in a letter. I hope, however, it will not be long before I 14  
 see you, and then we will speak face to face. Peace be with you. Our  
 friends here send you their greetings. Greet each one of our friends.





## JUDE

## THE LETTER FROM JUDE

To those who, having received the Call, have been loved by God the Father and protected by Jesus Christ, From Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ, and the brother of James. May mercy, peace, and love be yours in ever-increasing measure. Dear friends, while I was making every effort to write to you about our common Salvation, I felt that I must write to you at once to urge you to fight in defense of the Faith that has once for all been entrusted to the keeping of Christ's People. For there have crept in among you certain godless people, whose sentence has long since been pronounced, and who make the mercy of God an excuse for profligacy, and disown our only lord and master, Jesus Christ. Now I want to remind you — but you already know it all — that, though the Lord delivered the People from Egypt, yet he afterwards destroyed those who refused to believe in him; and that even those angels, who did not keep to their appointed spheres, but left their proper homes, have been kept by him for the judgment of the Great Day in everlasting chains and black darkness. Like Sodom and Gomorrah and the towns near them, which gave themselves up to fornication, and fell into unnatural vice, these angels now stand out as a warning, undergoing, as they are, the punishment of aeonian fire. Yet in the very same way these men, too, cherishing vain dreams, pollute our human nature, reject control, and malign the Mighty. Yet even Michael, the Archangel, when, in his dispute with the Devil, he was arguing about the body of Moses, did not venture to charge him with maligning, but said merely 'The Lord rebuke you!' But these men malign whatever they do not understand; while they use such things as they know by instinct (like the animals that have no reason) for their own corruption. Alas for them! They walk in the steps of Cain; led astray by Balaam's love of gain, they plunge into sin, and meet their ruin through rebellion like that of Korah. These are the men who are blots upon your

‘Love-feasts,’ when they feast together and provide without scruple for themselves alone. They are clouds without rain, driven before the winds; they are leafless trees without a vestige of fruit, dead through and through, torn up by the roots; they are wild sea waves, foaming with their own shame; they are ‘wandering stars,’ for which the blackest darkness has been reserved for ever. To these men, as to others, Enoch, the seventh in descent from Adam, declared — ‘See! the Lord has come with his hosts of holy ones around him, to execute judgment upon all men, and to convict all godless people of all their godless acts, which in their ungodliness they have committed, and of all the harsh words which they have spoken against him, godless sinners that they are!’ These men are always murmuring, and complaining of their lot; they follow where their passions lead them; they have arrogant words upon their lips; and they flatter men for the sake of what they can get from them. But do you, dear friends, recall what was foretold by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ; how they used to say to you — ‘As time draws to an end, there will be scoffers, who will be led by their godless passions.’ These are the people — animal and unspiritual — who cause divisions. But do you, dear friends, build up your characters on the foundation of your most holy Faith, pray under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, and keep within the love of God, while waiting for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, to bring you to Immortal Life. To some show pity, because they are in doubt. ‘Drag them out of the fire,’ and save them. To others show pity, but with caution, hating the very clothing polluted by their touch. To him who is able to guard you from falling, and to bring you into his glorious presence, blameless and rejoicing- to the one God, our Saviour, be ascribed, through Jesus Christ, our Lord, glory, majesty, power, and dominion, as it was before time began, is now, and shall be for all time to come. Amen.

## REVELATION

## THE REVELATION TO JOHN

The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him to make  
 known to his servants, concerning what must shortly take place,  
 and which he sent and revealed by his angel to his servant John,  
 who testified to the Message of God and to the testimony to Jesus 2  
 Christ, omitting nothing of what he had seen. Blessed is he who 3  
 reads, and blessed are they who listen to, the words of this  
 prophecy, and lay to heart what is here written; for The Time is  
 near. From John, to the seven Churches which are in Roman Asia. 4  
 Blessing and peace be yours from him who is, and who was, and  
 who shall be, and from the seven Spirits that are before his throne,  
 and from Jesus Christ, ' the faithful Witness, the First-born from 5  
 the dead, and the Ruler of all the Kings of the earth.' To him who  
 loves us and freed us from our sins by his own blood — and he 6  
 made us ' a Kingdom of Priests in the service of God,' his Father !  
 — to Him be ascribed glory and dominion for ever. Amen. 'He is 7  
 coming among the clouds!' Every eye shall see him, even those  
 who pierced him; 'and all the nations of the earth shall wail for  
 fear of him.' So shall it be. Amen. 'I am the Alpha and the Omega,' 8  
 says the Lord, the God who is, and who was, and who shall be, the  
 Almighty. I, John, who am your Brother, and who share with you 9  
 in the suffering and kingship and endurance of Jesus, found myself  
 on the island called Patmos, for the sake of the Message of God  
 and the testimony to Jesus. I fell into a trance on the Lord's Day, 10  
 and I heard behind me a loud voice, like the blast of a trumpet. It 11  
 said — 'Write what you see in a book and send it to the seven  
 Churches, to Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamus, Thyatira, Sardis,  
 Philadelphia, and Laodicea.' I turned to see what voice it was that 12  
 spoke to me; and when I turned, I saw seven golden lamps, and in 13  
 the midst of the lamps one 'like a man, in a robe reaching to his  
 feet,' and with a golden girdle across his breast. 'The hair of his 14

## Revelation 2

head was as white as wool, as white as snow; his eyes were like  
15 flaming fire; and his feet were like brass' as when molten in a  
16 furnace; 'his voice was like the sound of many streams,' in his right  
hand he held seven stars, from his mouth came a sharp two-edged  
sword, and his face was like 'the sun in the fulness of its power.'  
17 And, when I saw him, I fell at his feet like one dead. He laid his  
hand on me and said — 'Do not be afraid. I am the First and the  
18 Last, the Everliving. I died, and I am alive for ever and ever. And I  
19 hold the keys of the Grave and of the Place of the Dead. Therefore  
write of what you have seen and of what is happening now and of  
20 what is about to take place — the mystic meaning of the seven  
stars which you saw in my right hand, and the seven golden  
lamps. The seven stars are the Angels of the seven Churches, and  
2 the seven lamps are the seven Churches.

To the Angel of the Church in Ephesus write: — "These are the  
words of him who holds the seven stars in his right hand, and  
2 walks among the seven golden lamps: — I know your life, your toil  
and endurance, and I know that you cannot tolerate evil-doers. I  
know, too, how you tested those who declare that they are  
Apostles, though they are not, and how you proved them false.  
3 You possess endurance, and have borne much for my Name, and  
4 have never grown weary. But this I have against you — You have  
5 abandoned your first love. Therefore remember from what you  
have fallen, and repent, and live the life that you lived before; or  
else, I will come and remove your Lamp from its place, unless you  
6 repent. But this is in your favor — You hate the life lived by the  
7 Nikolaitans, and I also hate it. Let him who has ears hear what the  
Spirit is saying to the Churches. To him who conquers — to him I  
will give the right 'to eat the fruit of the Tree of life, which stands  
8 in the Paradise of God.' " To the Angel of the Church in Smyrna  
write: — "These are the words of him who is the First and the Last,  
9 who died, but is restored to life: — I know your persecution and  
your poverty — yet you are rich! I know, too, the slander that come  
from those who declare that they are Jews, though they are not,  
10 but are a Congregation of Satan. Do not be afraid of what you are

about to suffer. The Devil is about to throw some of you into prison, that you may be tempted, and may undergo persecution for ten days. Be faithful even to death, and I will give you the Crown of Life. Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches. He who conquers shall suffer no hurt from the Second Death." To the Angel of the Church in Pergamus write: — "These are the words of him who holds the sharp two-edged sword: — I know where you dwell, where the Throne of Satan stands. And yet you hold to my Name, and you did not disown my Faith even in the days of Antipas, my faithful witness, who was put to death among you where Satan dwells. Yet I have a few things against you — You have among you those who hold to the Teaching of Balaam, who taught Balak to put temptations in the way of the Israelites, so that they should eat idol-offerings and commit licentious acts. Again you have among you those who hold in the same way to the Teaching of the Nikolaitans. Therefore repent, or else, I will come quickly and contend with such men with words that will cut like a sword. Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches. To him who conquers — to him I will give a share of the mystic manna, and I will give him a white stone; and on the stone shall be inscribed a new name, which no one knows except him who receives it." To the Angel of the Church in Thyatira write: — "These are the words of the Son of God, 'whose eyes are like flaming fire, and whose feet are like brass': — I know your life, your love, faith, service, and endurance; and I know that your life of late has been better than it was at first. Yet I have this against you — You tolerate the woman Jezebel, who declares that she is a Prophetess, and misleads my servants by her teaching, till they commit licentious acts and eat idol-offerings. I gave her time to repent, but she is determined not to turn from her licentiousness. Therefore I am laying her upon a bed of sickness, and bringing great suffering upon those who are unfaithful with her, unless they repent and turn from a life like hers. I will also put her children to death; and all the Churches shall learn that I am he who 'looks into the hearts and souls of men'; and I will give to

## Revelation 3

24 each one of you what his life deserves. But I say to the rest of you  
at Thyatira — all who do not accept such teaching, whose who did  
not learn ‘the secrets of Satan,’ as men call them — I am not laying  
25 on you any further burden; only hold fast to what you have  
26 received, until I come. To him who conquers and is careful to live  
my life to the end — to him I will give authority over the nations,  
27 and ‘he shall rule them with an iron rod, as when earthen vessels  
are broken in pieces’ (as I myself have received from my Father)  
28 and I will give him the Morning Star. Let him who has ears hear  
3 what the Spirit is saying to the Churches.”

To the Angel of the Church in Sardis write: — “These are the words  
of him who has the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars; — I  
know your life, and that men say of you that you are living, though  
2 you are dead. Be on the watch, and strengthen what still survives,  
though once it was all but dead; for I have not found your life per-  
3 fect in the eyes of my God. Therefore remember what you have re-  
ceived and heard, and lay it to heart and repent. Unless you are on  
the watch, I shall come like a thief, and you will not know at what  
4 hour I am coming to you. Yet there are some few among you at  
Sardis who did not soil their robes; they shall walk with me, robed  
5 in white, for they are worthy. He who conquers shall be clothed in  
these white robes, and I will not ‘strike his name out of the Book of  
6 Life’; but I will own him before my Father, and before his angels. Let  
him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches.”  
7 To the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia write: — “These are the  
words of him who is holy and true, who holds ‘the Key of David,  
8 who opens and no one shall shut, and shuts and no one opens’: — I  
know your life (see, I have set a door open before you which no one  
is able to shut), I know that, though you have but little strength, you  
9 kept my teaching in mind, and did not disown my Name. Listen, I  
give some of the Congregation of Satan, the men who declare that  
they are Jews, though they are not, but are lying — — I will make  
them ‘come and bow down at your feet,’ and they shall learn that  
10 I loved you. Because you kept in mind the story of my endurance,  
I will keep you in the hour of trial that is about to come upon the

whole world, the hour that will test all who are living upon earth. I will come quickly. Hold to what you have received, that no one may take your crown. He who conquers — I will make him a pillar in the Temple of my God; and never more shall he leave it; and I will write on him the name of my God and the name of the City of my God, the New Jerusalem, which is coming down out of Heaven from my God, and I will write on him my new name. Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches.” To the Angel of the Church in Laodicea write: — “These are the words of the Unchanging One, ‘the Witness faithful and true, the Beginning of the Creation of God’: — I know your life; I know that you are neither cold nor hot. Would that you were either cold or hot! But now, because you are lukewarm, neither hot nor cold, I am about to spit you out of my mouth. You say ‘I am rich and have grown rich, and I want for nothing,’ and you do not know that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, naked! Therefore I counsel you to buy from me gold which has been refined by fire, that you may grow rich; and white robes, that you may be clothed and your shameful nakedness be hidden; and ointment to anoint your eyes, that you may see. ‘All whom I love I rebuke and discipline.’ Therefore be in earnest and repent. I am standing at the door and knocking! If any one hears my voice and opens the door, I will go in, and will feast with him, and he shall feast with me. To him who conquers — to him I will give the right to sit beside me on my throne, as I, when I conquered, took my seat beside my Father on his throne. Let him who has ears hear what the Spirit is saying to the Churches.”

After this, in my vision, I saw an open door in the heavens, and the first voice that I heard was like the blast of a trumpet speaking to me. It said — ‘Come up here and I will show you what must take place.’ Immediately after this I fell into a trance. There stood a throne in Heaven, and on the throne was One seated. He who was seated on it was in appearance like a jasper and a sardius; and ‘round the throne there was a rainbow’ of the color of an emerald. And round the throne were twenty-four other thrones, and on these I saw twenty-four Councillors sitting clothed in white robes; and on

## Revelation 5

5 their heads they had crowns of gold. Out from the throne 'come  
flashes of lightning, cries, and peals of thunder'! There are seven  
torches burning in front of the throne, which are the seven spirits of  
6 God; and in front of the throne is what seemed to be a sea of glass,  
'resembling crystal, while within the space before the throne and  
round the throne are four Creatures full of eyes' in front and be-  
7 hind. The first Creature is like a lion, the second Creature like a calf,  
the third Creature has a face like a man's, and the fourth Creature is  
8 like an eagle on the wing. These four Creatures have each of them  
six wings, and all round, and within, they are full of eyes; and day  
and night they never cease to say — 'Holy, holy, holy is the Lord,  
our God, the Almighty, who was, and who is, and who shall be.'  
9 And, whenever these Creatures give praise and honour and thanks  
to him who is 'seated on the throne, to him who lives for ever and  
10 ever,' the twenty-four Councillors prostrate themselves before him  
who is seated on the throne, and worship him who lives for ever  
and ever, and throw down their crowns before the throne, saying —  
11 'Worthy art thou, our Lord and God, to receive all praise, and hon-  
our, and power, for thou didst create all things, and at thy bidding  
5 they came into being and were created.'

Then I saw at the right hand of him who was 'seated on the throne  
a book, with writing inside and out, and sealed' with seven seals;  
2 and I saw a mighty angel who was proclaiming in a loud voice —  
3 'Who is worthy to open the book and break its seals?' But no one  
either in Heaven or on earth or under the earth was able to open  
4 the book or look within it. At this I wept long, because no one could  
5 be found who was worthy to open the book or look within it. But  
one of the Councillors said to me — 'Do not weep. The Lion con-  
quered — the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Scion of David — and  
6 can therefore open the book with its seven seals.' Then, within the  
space between the throne and the four Creatures, and in the midst  
of the Councillors, I saw, standing, a Lamb, which seemed to have  
been sacrificed. It had seven horns and seven eyes. (These eyes are  
7 the seven Spirits of God, and they are sent into all the world.) The  
Lamb came forward; and he has taken the book from the right hand



of him who was seated on the throne. And, when he had taken 8  
the book, the four Creatures and the twenty-four Councillors prostrated themselves before the Lamb, each of them holding a harp and golden bowls full of incense. (These are the prayers of Christ's People.) And they are singing a new song — 'Thou art worthy to take 9  
the book and break its seals, for thou wast sacrificed, and with thy blood thou didst buy for God men of every tribe, and language, and people, and nation, and didst make them a Kingdom of Priests in 10  
the service of our God, and they are reigning upon the earth.' Then, 11  
in my vision, I heard the voices of many angels round the throne, and of the Creatures, and of the Councillors. In number they were 'ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands,' and 12  
they cried in a loud voice — 'Worthy is the Lamb that was sacrificed to receive all power, and wealth, and wisdom, and might, and honour, and praise, and blessing.' And I heard every created thing in 13  
the air, and on the earth, and under the earth, and on the sea, and all that is in them crying — 'To him who is seated on the throne and to the Lamb be ascribed all blessing, and honour, and praise, and dominion for ever and ever.' And the four Creatures said 'Amen,' 14  
and the Councillors prostrated themselves and worshiped. 6  
Then I saw the Lamb break one of the seven seals, and I heard one of the four Creatures crying with a voice like thunder — 'Come.' And 2  
in my vision I saw 'a white horse.' Its rider held a bow, and he was given a crown, and he went out conquering and to conquer. When 3  
the Lamb broke the second seal, I heard the second Creature crying — 'Come.' Then there went out another horse, 'a red horse,' and to 4  
its rider was given the power to deprive the earth of peace, so that men should kill one another; and he was given a great sword. When 5  
the Lamb broke the third seal, I heard the third Creature crying — 'Come.' And in my vision I saw 'a black horse.' Its rider held scales in his hand. And I heard what seemed to be a voice, coming from 6  
among the four Creatures, crying — 'A quart of wheat for a florin, and three quarts of barley for a florin! But do not harm the oil and the wine.' When the Lamb broke the fourth seal, I heard the voice 7  
of the fourth Creature crying — 'Come.' And in my vision I saw a 8

## Revelation 7

grey horse. His rider's name was Death, and the Lord of the Place of Death rode behind him; and power was given them over the fourth part of the earth, so that they might 'destroy with sword and famine and death, and by means of the wild beasts of the earth.' When the Lamb opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been killed for the sake of God's Message and for the testimony which they had borne. They cried in a loud voice — 'How long, O Sovereign Lord, holy and true, before thou wilt give judgment and avenge our blood upon all who are living upon the earth?' Then to each of them was given a white robe, and they were told to rest yet a little longer, till the number of their fellow-servants and of their Brothers who were about to be put to death, as they had been, should be complete. And I saw the Lamb break the sixth seal, and then there was a great earthquake. The sun became black, like sackcloth, and the moon, which was at its full, like blood. 'The stars of the heavens fell' to the earth, as when a fig-tree, shaken by a strong wind, drops its unripe fruit. The heavens disappeared like a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved from its place. Then all the kings of the earth, and the princes, and the generals, and the rich, and the powerful, and every slave and free man, 'hid themselves in the caves and under the rocks' of the mountains; and they are crying to the mountains and the rocks — 'Fall upon us, and hide us from the eyes of him who is seated on the throne, and from the Wrath of the Lamb, for the great Day of their Wrath is come, and who can stand to meet it?'

After this, I saw four angels standing 'upon the four corners of the earth,' restraining the four winds of the earth, that no wind should blow over the earth, or over the sea, or against any tree. And, in the east, I saw another angel, ascending, holding the seal of the Living God; and he cried in a loud voice to the four angels, to whom there had been given power to harm the earth and the sea — 'Do not harm the earth, or the sea, or the trees, until we have sealed the servants of our God upon their foreheads.' I heard, too, the number of those who had been sealed. It was one hundred and forty-four thousand; and they were from every tribe of the Israelites. From

the tribe of Judah twelve thousand were sealed, from the tribe of Reuben twelve thousand, from the tribe of Gad twelve thousand, from the tribe of Asher twelve thousand, from the tribe of Napthali 6  
 twelve thousand, from the tribe of Manasseh twelve thousand, from 7  
 the tribe of Simeon twelve thousand, from the tribe of Levi twelve thousand, from the tribe of Issachar twelve thousand, from the tribe 8  
 of Zebulon twelve thousand, from the tribe of Joseph twelve thousand, from the tribe of Benjamin twelve thousand were sealed. After 9  
 this, in my vision, I saw a vast throng which no man could number, of men from every nation and of all tribes, and peoples, and languages. They stood in front of the throne and in front of the Lamb, robed in white, holding palm branches in their hands. And they are 10  
 crying in a loud voice — ‘ Salvation be ascribed to our God who is seated on his throne and to the Lamb.’ And all the angels were 11  
 standing round the throne and the Councillors and the four Creatures, and they prostrated themselves on their faces in front of the throne and worshipped God, saying — ‘Amen. Blessing and praise, 12  
 and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might be ascribed to our God for ever and ever. Amen.’ Then one of the 13  
 Councillors turned to me and said ‘Who are these who are robed in white? and whence did they come?’ ‘My Lord,’ I answered, ‘it 14  
 is you who know.’ ‘These,’ he said, ‘are they who come through the Great Persecution; they washed their robes white in the blood of the Lamb. And therefore it is that they are before the throne of God, and 15  
 are serving him day and night in his Temple; and he who is seated on the throne will shelter them. Never again shall they be hungry, 16  
 never again shall they be thirsty, nor shall the sun smite upon them, nor any scorching heat; for the Lamb that stands in the space before 17  
 the throne will be their shepherd, and will lead them to life-giving springs of water; and God will wipe away all tears from their eyes.’ 8  
 As soon as the Lamb had broken the seventh seal, there was silence in Heaven for, it might be, half-an-hour. Then I saw the seven 2  
 angels who stand before God, and seven trumpets were given to them. Next, another angel came and stood at the altar with a golden censer 3

## Revelation 9

in his hand; and a great quantity of incense was given to him, to mingle with the prayers of all Christ's People upon the golden altar before the throne. The smoke of the incense ascended, with the prayers of Christ's People, from the hand of the angel before God. Then the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire from the altar, and threw it down upon the earth; and there followed 'peals of thunder, cries, flashes of lightning,' and an earthquake. Then the seven angels holding the seven trumpets prepared to blow their blasts. The first blew; and there came hail and fire mixed with blood, and it fell upon the earth. A third part of the earth was burnt up, and a third of the trees, and every blade of grass. Then the second angel blew; and what appeared to be a great mountain, burning, was hurled into the sea. A third of the sea became blood, and a third part of all created things that are in the sea — that is, of all living things — died, and a third of the ships was destroyed. Then the third angel blew; and there fell from the heavens a great star, burning like a torch. It fell upon a third of the rivers and upon the springs. (The star is called 'Wormwood.') A third of the water became bitter as wormwood, and so bitter was the water that many died from drinking it. Then the fourth angel blew; and a third of the sun and a third of the moon and a third of the stars were blasted, so that a third of them was eclipsed, and for a third part of the day there was no light, and at night it was the same. And, in my vision, I heard an eagle flying in mid-heaven and crying in a loud voice — 'Woe, woe, woe for all who live on the earth, at the other trumpet-blasts of the three angels who have yet to blow.' Then the fifth angel blew; and I saw a Star that had fallen upon the earth from the heavens, and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. He opened the bottomless pit, and from the pit rose a smoke like the smoke of a great furnace. The sun and the air grew dark because of the smoke from the pit. Out of the smoke locusts descended upon the earth, and they received the same power as that possessed by scorpions. They were told not to harm the grass, or any plant, or any tree, but only those who have not 'the seal of God upon their foreheads.' Yet they were not allowed to kill them, but it was ordered that those men should be tortured for five months. Their

torture was like the torture caused by a scorpion when it stings a man. In those days men 'will seek Death and will not find it'; They will long to die, but Death flees from them. In appearance the locusts were like horses equipped for battle. On their heads there were what appeared to be crowns that shone like gold, their faces resembled human faces, and they had hair like the hair of a woman, their teeth were like lions' teeth, and they had what seemed to be iron breastplates, while the noise of their wings was like the noise of chariots drawn by many horses, galloping into battle. They have tails like scorpions, and stings, and in their tails lies their power to harm men for five months. They have as their king the Angel of the bottomless pit, whose name, in Hebrew, is 'Abaddon,' while, in Greek, his name is 'Apollyon' (the Destroyer). The first Woe has passed; and still there are two Woes to follow! Then the sixth angel blew; and I heard a voice proceeding from the corners of the golden altar that stood before God. It spoke to the sixth angel — the angel with the trumpet — and said 'Let loose the four angels that are in chains at the great river Euphrates.' Then the four angels, that were held in readiness for that hour and day and month and year, were let loose, to destroy a third of mankind. The number of the hosts of horsemen was ten thousand times ten thousand, twice told; I heard their number. And this is what the horses and their riders appeared to be like in my vision: — They had breastplates of fire, blood-red and sulphurous, and the heads of the horses were like lions' heads, while out of their mouths issue fire, and smoke, and sulphur. Through these three Curses a third of mankind perished — because of the fire, and the smoke, and the sulphur that issued from their mouths; for the power of the horses lies in their mouths and in their tails. For their tails are like snakes, with heads, and it is with them that they do harm. But those who were left of mankind, who had not perished through these Curses, did not repent and turn away from what their own hands had made; they would not abandon the worship of 'demons, and of idols made of gold or silver or brass or stone or wood, which can neither see, nor hear, nor walk'; and they did not

## Revelation 10

repent of their murders, or their sorceries, or their licentiousness, or  
10 their thefts.

Then I saw another mighty angel, descending from Heaven. His  
robe was a cloud; over his head was the rainbow; his face was like  
2 the sun, and his feet like pillars of fire; in his hand he held a little  
book open. He set his right foot on the sea, and his left on the land;  
3 and he cried in a loud voice like the roaring of a lion. At his cry the  
4 seven peals of thunder spoke, each with its own voice. And, when  
they spoke, I was about to write; but I heard a voice from Heaven  
say — ‘Keep secret what the seven peals of thunder said, and do not  
5 write it down.’ Then the angel, whom I had seen standing on the sea  
6 and on the land, ‘raised his right hand to the heavens, and swore by  
him who lives for ever and ever, who created the heavens and all  
7 that is in them, and the earth and all that is in it, and the sea and  
all that is in it,’ that time should cease to be. Moreover at the time  
when the seventh angel shall speak, when he is ready to blow his  
blast, then the hidden purposes of God, of which he told the good  
8 news to his servants, the Prophets, are at once fulfilled. Then came  
the voice which I had heard from Heaven. It spoke to me again, and  
said — ‘Go and take the book that is open in the hand of the angel  
9 who stands on the sea and on the land.’ So I went to the angel and  
asked him to give me the little book. And he said ‘Take it, and eat  
it. It will be bitter to your stomach, but in your mouth it will be as  
10 sweet as honey.’ I took the little book out of the angel’s hand ‘and  
ate it, and, while in my mouth, it was like the sweetest honey’; but,  
11 when I had eaten it, it was bitter to my stomach. And I was told — ‘  
You must prophesy again about men of many peoples, and nations,  
11 and languages, and about many kings.’

Then I was given a measure like a rod, and a voice said to me —  
‘Go and measure the Temple of God and the altar, and count the  
2 worshiper there. But omit the court outside the Temple, and do not  
measure that, for it has been given up to the nations; and the holy  
3 City will be under their heel for forty-two months. Then I will give  
permission to my Two Witnesses, and for those twelve hundred  
and sixty days they will continue teaching, clothed in sackcloth.’

These men are represented by 'the two olive trees and the two 4  
lamps that stand before the Lord of the earth.' When any one 5  
wishes to harm them, 'fire comes from their mouths and consumes  
their enemies'; and whoever wishes to harm them will, in this way,  
inevitably perish. These men have the power to close the heavens, 6  
that 'no rain may fall' during the time that they are teaching; and  
they have power 'to turn the streams into blood, and to smite the  
land with any Curse,' whenever they will. As soon as they have 7  
completed their testimony, 'the wild Beast that ascends from the  
bottomless pit will make war upon them and conquer' and kill 8  
them. Their dead bodies will lie in the streets of the great City, 8  
which is mystically spoken of as 'Sodom' and 'Egypt,' where their  
Master was crucified. Men of all peoples, and tribes, and 9  
languages, and nations look at their dead bodies for three days and  
a half, and do not allow them to be laid in a grave. Those who live 10  
on the earth rejoice over them and are merry, and they will send  
presents to one another, because these two Prophets brought  
torments upon those who live on the earth. After three days and a 11  
half 'the life-giving breath of God entered these men, and they  
stood up upon their feet,' and a great terror took possession of  
those who were watching them. The two men heard a loud voice 12  
from Heaven which said to them — 'Come up here,' and they went  
up to Heaven in the cloud, while their enemies watched them. At 13  
that very time a great earthquake occurred. A tenth part of the city  
fell, and seven thousand people perished in the earthquake. Those  
who escaped were much terrified, and praised the God of Heaven.  
The second Woe has passed; and there is a third Woe soon to 14  
follow! Then the seventh angel blew; and loud voices were heard 15  
in Heaven saying — 'The Kingdom of the World has become the  
Kingdom of our Lord and of his Christ, and he will reign for ever  
and ever.' At this the twenty-four Councillors, who were seated on 16  
their thrones before God, prostrated themselves on their faces and  
worshiped Him, saying — 'We thank thee, O Lord, our God, the 17  
Almighty, who art and who wast, that thou hast assumed thy great  
power and reigned. The nations were enraged, and thy Wrath fell 18

## Revelation 12

upon them; the time came for the dead to be judged, and for thee to give the reward to thy servants the Prophets, and to the People of Christ, and to those who reverence thy Name — the high and the low alike — and to destroy those who are destroying the earth.'

- 19 Then the Temple of God in Heaven was opened, and the Ark containing his Covenant was seen in his Temple; and there followed 'flashes of lightning, cries, peals of thunder,' an  
12 earthquake, and 'a great storm of hail.'

Then a great portent was seen in the heavens — a woman whose robe was the sun, and who had the moon under her feet, and on her  
2 head a crown of twelve stars. She was with child; and 'she is cry-  
3 ing out in the pain and agony of childbirth.' Another portent also was seen in the heavens There was a great red Dragon, with seven  
4 heads and ten horns, and on his heads were seven diadems. His tail draws after it a third of the stars in the heavens, and it hurled them down on the earth. The Dragon is standing in front of the woman who is about to give birth to the child, so that he may de-  
5 vour it as soon as it is born. The woman gave birth to a son, a male child, who is destined to rule all the nations with an iron rod; and  
6 her child was at once caught up to God upon his throne. But the woman fled into the wilderness, where there is a place prepared for her by God, to be tended there for twelve hundred and sixty  
7 days. Then a battle took place in the heavens. Michael and his angels fought with the Dragon. But though the Dragon, with his an-  
8 gels, fought, he did not prevail; and there was no place left for them  
9 any longer in the heavens. Then the great Dragon, the primeval Serpent, known as the 'Devil' and 'Satan,' who deceives all the world, was hurled down to the earth, and his angels were hurled down  
10 with him. And I heard a loud voice in Heaven which said — 'Now has begun the day of the Salvation, and Power, and Dominion of our God, and the Rule of his Christ; for the Accuser of our Brothers has been hurled down, he who has been accusing them before our  
11 God day and night. Their victory was due to the Blood of the Lamb, and to the Message to which they bore their testimony. In their love  
12 of life they shrank not from death. Therefore, be glad, O Heaven,



and all who live in Heaven! Alas for the earth and for the sea, for the Devil has gone down to you in great fury, knowing that he has but little time.' when the Dragon saw that he was hurled down to the earth, he pursued the woman who had given birth to the male child. But to the woman were given the two wings of the great eagle, so that she might fly to her place in the wilderness, where she is being tended for 'one year, and for two years, and for half a year' in safety from the Serpent. Then the Serpent poured water from its mouth after the woman, like a river, so that it might sweep her away. But Earth came to her help, and opened her mouth and drank up the river which the Dragon had poured out of its mouth. The Dragon was enraged at the woman, and went to fight with the rest of her offspring — those who lay to heart the commands of God and bear their testimony to Jesus; and he took his stand on the sea-shore. Then I saw, 'rising out of the sea, a wild Beast with ten horns' and seven heads. On its horns were ten diadems, and on its heads were blasphemous names. The Beast that I saw was like a leopard; but its feet were like a bear's, and its mouth like the mouth of a lion. The Dragon gave it his power and his throne, and wide dominion. One of its heads seemed to me to have been mortally wounded, but its deadly wound had been healed. The whole earth followed the Beast, wondering; and men worshiped the Dragon, because he had given his dominion to the Beast; while, as they worshiped the Beast, they said — 'Who can compare with the Beast? and who can fight with it?' The Beast was given 'a mouth that spoke proudly' and blasphemously, and it was empowered to work its will for forty-two months. It opened its mouth only to blaspheme God, to blaspheme his Name and his Tabernacle — those who dwell in his Tabernacle in Heaven. It had been permitted to fight with Christ's People and to conquer them, and it had received power over men of every tribe, and people, and language, and nation. All who are living on earth will worship it — all whose names have not been written in the Lamb's Book of Life, the Lamb that has been sacrificed from the foundation of the

## Revelation 14

19 world. Let him who has ears hear. 'Whoever is destined for captivity goes into captivity.' Whoever shall kill with the sword must inevitably be killed with the sword. (Here there is need for endurance and faith on the part of Christ's People.) Then I saw, rising out of the earth, another wild Beast. It had two horns like those of a lamb, and its voice was like a dragon's. It exercises all the authority of the first Beast under its very eyes; and it makes the earth and all who are living on it worship that first Beast, whose mortal wound was healed. It performs great marvels, even causing fire to fall from the heavens to the earth, before men's eyes; and in consequence of the marvels which it was allowed to perform under the eyes of the Beast, it is able to deceive all who are living on the earth. It bids those who live on the earth to make a statue in honour of the Beast, who, despite the wound from the sword, yet lived. It was permitted to breathe life into the image of the Beast, so that the image of the Beast might speak; and it was also permitted to cause all who refused to worship the image of the Beast to be put to death. High and low, rich and poor, freemen and slaves — it causes a brand to be put on the right hand or on the forehead of every one of them, so that no one is able to buy or sell, except those that bear this brand — either the name of the Beast or the number indicated by the letters of his name. (Here there is need for discernment.) Let him who has the ability compute the number of the Beast; for the number indicates a man's name. Its number is six hundred and sixty-six.

Then, in my vision, I saw the Lamb standing on Mount Zion. With him were a hundred and forty-four thousand men, with his name and the name of his Father written on their foreheads. And I heard a sound from Heaven, 'like the sound of many waters,' and like the sound of a loud peal of thunder; the sound that I heard was like the music of harpers playing on their harps. They are singing what seems to be a new song, before the throne, and before the four Creatures and the Councillors; and no one was able to learn that song except the hundred and forty-four thousand who had been redeemed from earth. These are the men who never defiled themselves in their intercourse with women; they are as pure as virgins. These are the

men who follow the Lamb wherever he goes. They were redeemed  
as the first-fruits of mankind for God and for the Lamb. 'No lie was  
ever heard upon their lips.' They are beyond reach of blame. Then  
I saw another angel, flying in mid-heaven. He had the Good News,  
decreed from eternity, to announce to those who dwell on the earth  
— to men of every nation, and tribe, and language, and people; and  
he cried in a loud voice — 'Reverence God, and give him praise (for  
the hour of his Judgment has come) and worship him who made  
the heaven and the earth and the sea and all springs of water.' Then  
a second angel followed, crying — 'She has fallen! She has fallen —  
Babylon the Great, who has made all the nations drink the madden-  
ing wine of her licentiousness!' Then a third angel followed them,  
crying in a loud voice — 'Whoever worships the Beast and its im-  
age, and receives its brand on his forehead or on his hand, that man  
shall drink the maddening wine of God that has been poured un-  
mixed into the cup of his Wrath, and he shall be tortured with fire  
and sulphur before the eyes of the holy angels and before the eyes  
of the Lamb. The smoke from their torture rises for ever and ever,  
and they have no rest day nor night — those who worship the Beast  
and its image, and all who are branded with its name.' (Here there  
is need for endurance on the part of Christ's People — those who  
lay to heart the commands of God and the Faith of Jesus.) Then I  
heard a voice from Heaven saying 'Write — "Blessed are the dead  
who from this hour die in union with the Lord." "Yes," answers the  
Spirit, "that they may rest from their toil. Their good deeds go with  
them."' Then, in my vision, I saw a white cloud, and on the cloud  
there was sitting one 'like a man.' On his head he had a crown of  
gold, and in his hand a sharp sickle. Then another angel came out  
from the Temple, crying in a loud voice to him who was sitting on  
the cloud — 'Take your sickle and reap, for the time to reap has  
come; the Harvest of Earth is ready.' He who was sitting on the cloud  
brought his sickle down upon the earth, and the Harvest of Earth  
was reaped. Then another angel came out of the Temple in Heaven;  
he, also, had a sharp sickle. Then another angel came out of the al-  
tar; he had power over fire, and he called in a loud voice to the angel

## Revelation 15

that had the sharp sickle — ‘Take your sharp sickle, and gather the  
19 bunches from the Vine of Earth, for its grapes are ripe.’ The angel  
brought his sickle down on the earth and gathered the fruit of the  
Vine of Earth, and threw it into the great winepress of the Wrath  
20 of God. The ‘grapes were trodden in the press’ outside the city; and  
blood came out of the press, rising as high as the bridles of the horses  
15 for a distance of two hundred miles.

Then I saw another portent in the heavens — a great and marvelous  
portent — seven angels with the seven last Curses; because with  
2 them the Wrath of God is ended. Then I saw what appeared to be  
a sea of glass mixed with fire; and, standing by this sea of glass,  
holding the harps of God, I saw those who had come victorious out  
of the conflict with the Beast and its image and the number that  
3 formed its name. They are singing the song of Moses, the Servant  
of God, and the song of the Lamb — ‘Great and marvelous are thy  
deeds, O Lord, our God, the Almighty. Righteous and true are thy  
4 ways, Eternal King. Who will not reverence and praise thy Name, O  
Lord? Thou alone art holy! All nations will come and worship be-  
5 fore thee, for thy judgments have become manifest.’ After this I saw  
that the inmost shrine of the Tabernacle of Revelation in Heaven was  
6 opened, and out of it came the seven angels with the seven Curses.  
They were adorned with precious stones, pure and bright, and had  
7 golden girdles round their breasts. One of the four Creatures gave  
the seven angels seven golden bowls, filled with the Wrath of God  
8 who lives for ever and ever. ‘The Temple was filled with smoke from  
the Glory’ and Majesty of God; and no one could enter the Temple,  
16 until the seven Curses inflicted by the seven angels were at an end.

Then I heard a loud voice, which came from the Temple, saying to  
the seven angels — ‘Go and empty the seven bowls of the Wrath  
2 of God upon the earth.’ The first angel went and emptied his bowl  
upon the earth; and it turned to loathsome and painful sores upon  
all who bore the brand of the Beast and who worshiped its image.  
3 Then the second angel emptied his bowl upon the sea; and it turned  
to blood like the blood of a corpse, and every living thing died —  
4 everything in the sea. Then the third angel emptied his bowl upon

the rivers and springs of water; and it turned to blood. And I heard 5  
 the Angel of the Waters saying — ‘Righteous art thou, thou who art  
 and who wast, the Holy One, in inflicting this judgment; for men 6  
 shed the blood of Christ’s People and of the Prophets, and thou hast  
 given them blood to drink. It is what they deserve.’ And I heard 7  
 the response from the altar — ‘Yes, O Lord, our God, the Almighty,  
 true and righteous are they judgments.’ Then the fourth angel emp- 8  
 tied his bowl upon the sun; and he was permitted to scorch men  
 with fire; and men were scorched by the intense heat. They blas- 9  
 phemed the Name of God who controlled these Curses, yet they  
 did not repent and give him praise. Then the fifth angel emptied his 10  
 bowl upon the throne of the Beast; and darkness fell upon its King-  
 dom. Men gnawed their tongues for pain, and blasphemed the God 11  
 of Heaven, because of their pains and because of their sores; yet they  
 did not repent of what they had done. Then the sixth angel emptied 12  
 his bowl upon the great river Euphrates; and the water in the river  
 was dried up, so that the road for the Kings of the East might be  
 made ready. And I saw three foul spirits, like frogs, come from the 13  
 mouth of the Dragon and from the mouth of the Beast and from the  
 mouth of the false Prophet. They are the spirits of demons, and per- 14  
 form marvels; they go to kings all over the world, to collect them for  
 the battle on the Great Day of Almighty God. (‘I am coming like a 15  
 thief! Happy will he be who is on the watch, and keeps his cloth-  
 ing at hand, so that he will not have to walk about unclothed and  
 let men see his nakedness.’) And the spirits collected the kings at 16  
 the place called in Hebrew ‘Har-Magedon.’ Then the seventh Angel 17  
 emptied his bowl upon the air. (A loud voice came from the throne in  
 the Temple; it said ‘All is over.’) There followed ‘flashes of lightning, 18  
 cries, and peals of thunder’; and there was a great earthquake, such  
 as had not occurred since man began to be upon the earth — none so  
 great; and the great City was torn in three, and the cities of the nation 19  
 fell, and God remembered Babylon the Great, and gave her the  
 maddening wine-cup of his Wrath; and every island vanished, and 20  
 the mountains disappeared. Great hailstones, a pound in weight, 21

## Revelation 17

are falling upon men from the heavens. And men blasphemed God  
17 because of the Curse of the hail, for it was a very terrible Curse.  
Then one of the seven angels who held the seven bowls came and  
spoke to me. 'Come here,' he said, 'and I will show you the  
sentence passed upon that Great Harlot who is seated at the  
2 meeting of many waters, and with whom all the kings of the earth  
have had licentious intercourse; while all who live upon the earth  
3 have been make drunk by the wine of her licentiousness.' And he  
bore me away in a trance to a lonely place, and I saw a woman  
seated upon a scarlet Beast, which was covered with blasphemous  
4 names; it had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was clothed  
in purple and scarlet, and glittering with gold ornaments, precious  
stones, and pearls. In her hand she held a gold cup, full of  
idolatrous abominations, and the unclean fruits of her  
5 licentiousness; while on her forehead there was written this mystic  
name — 'BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS  
AND OF ALL IDOLATROUS ABOMINATIONS UPON EARTH.'  
6 And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of Christ's People and  
with the blood of the martyrs for Jesus. When I saw her, I was  
7 amazed beyond measure; but the angel said to me — 'Why were  
you amazed? I will tell you the mystic meaning of the vision of this  
woman, and of the Beast, with the seven heads and ten horns, that  
8 carries her. The Beast that you saw was, but is not, and is about to  
rise out of the bottomless pit, and is on its way to destruction.  
Those who are living on earth will be amazed — those whose  
names have not been written in the Book of Life from the  
foundation of the world — when they see that the Beast was, but is  
9 not, and yet will come.' (Here there is need for the discerning  
mind.) The seven heads are seven mountains upon which the  
10 woman is seated. They are also seven kings; of whom five have  
fallen and one remains, while one is not yet come. When he comes,  
11 he must stay for a little while. So must the Beast that was, but is  
not. He counts as an eighth king , although he is one of the seven,  
12 and is on his way to destruction. The ten horns that you saw are  
ten kings. who have not yet received their kingdoms, but for an

hour they receive the authority of kings, together with the Beast. These kings are of one mind in surrendering their power and authority to the Beast. They will fight with the Lamb, but the Lamb will conquer them, for he is Lord of lords and King of kings; so, too, will those with him who have received the Call and are chosen and faithful. And the angel said to me — ‘The waters that you saw, where the Harlot is seated, are throngs of people and men of all nations and languages. The ten horns that you saw, and the Beast — they will hate the Harlot, and cause her to become deserted and strip her bare; they will eat her very flesh and utterly consume her with fire. For God has put it into their minds to carry out his purpose, in carrying out their common purpose and surrendering their kingdoms to the Beast, until God’s decrees shall be executed. As for the woman whom you saw, she is the great city that holds sway over all the kings of the earth.’

After this I saw another angel, descending from Heaven, invested with great authority; and the earth was illuminated by his splendor. With a mighty voice he cried — ‘She has fallen! She has fallen — Babylon the Great! She has become an abode of demons, a stronghold of every wicked spirit, a stronghold of every foul and hateful bird. For, after drinking the maddening wine of her licentiousness, all the nations have fallen; while all the kings of the earth have had licentious intercourse with her, and the merchants of the earth have grown rich through the excess of her luxury.’ Then I heard another voice from Heaven saying — ‘Come out of her, my People, that you may not participate in her sins, and that you may not suffer from the Curses inflicted upon her. For her sins are heaped up to the heavens, and God has not forgotten her misdeeds. Pay her back the treatment with which she has treated you; yes, repay twice over what her actions deserve; in the cup which she mixed for you, mix for her as much again; for her self-glorification and her luxury, give her now an equal measure of torture and misery. In her heart she says ‘I sit here a queen; no widow am I; I shall never know misery.’ Therefore in one day shall these Curses befall her — death, misery, and famine, and she shall be utterly consumed by fire; for mighty is the Lord God

## Revelation 18

9 who condemned her. All the kings of the earth who had licentious  
intercourse with her and shared her luxury will weep and lament  
10 over her, when they see the smoke from the burning city, while they  
stand at a distance, horrified at her torture, and cry — ‘Alas! Alas!  
Great City! O mighty City of Babylon! In a single hour your judg-  
11 ment fell. And the merchants of the earth weep and wail over her,  
12 because no longer does any one buy their cargoes — their cargoes  
of gold, or silver, or precious stones, or pearls, or fine linen, or purple  
robes, or silk, or scarlet cloth; nor their many scented woods; nor  
their many articles of ivory; nor their many articles of choicest wood,  
13 or brass, or iron, or marble; nor their cinnamon, or spice, or incense,  
or perfumes. or frankincense, or wine, or oil, or fine flour, or wheat,  
or cattle, or sheep; nor their horses, or chariots, or slaves; nor the  
14 bodies and souls of men. The fruit that your soul craved is no longer  
within your reach, and all dainties and luxuries are lost to you, never  
15 to be found again.’ The merchants who sold these things, and grew  
rich by her, will stand at a distance weeping and wailing, horrified at  
16 her torture, and crying — ‘Alas! Alas! Great City! O City clothed in  
fine linen, and purple, and scarlet cloth! O City adorned with gold  
17 ornaments, and precious stones, and pearls! In a single hour your  
vast wealth vanished.’ Every ship’s captain and all who sail to any  
port, and sailors, and all who get their living from the sea, stood  
18 at a distance, and seeing the smoke from the burning city, cried —  
19 ‘What city can compare with the Great City?’ They threw dust on  
their heads, and, as they wept and wailed, they cried — ‘Alas! Alas!  
Great City! All who have ships on the sea grew rich through her  
20 magnificence. In a single hour it has vanished.’ Rejoice over her, O  
Heaven, and People of Christ, and Apostles, and Prophets, for God  
21 has avenged you on her! Then a mighty angel took up a stone like a  
great millstone, and threw it into the sea, crying — ‘So shall Baby-  
lon, the Great City, be violently overthrown, never more to be seen.  
22 No more shall the music of harpers, or minstrels, or flute players,  
or trumpeters be heard in you, no more shall any worker, skilled in  
any art, be found in you; no more shall the sound of a mill be heard  
23 in you; no more shall the light of a lamp shine in you; no more shall



the voices of bridegroom and bride be heard in you. Your merchants were the great men of the earth, for all the nations were deceived by your magical charms. Yes, and in her was to be found the blood of the Prophets and of Christ's People, and of all who have been put to death upon the earth.' 24 19

After this, I heard what seemed to be a great shout from a vast throng in Heaven, crying — 'Hallelujah! To our God belong Salvation, and Glory, and Power, for true and righteous are his judgments. 2 For he has passed judgment upon the Great Harlot who was corrupting the earth by her licentiousness, and he has taken vengeance upon her for the blood of his servants.' Again they cried — 'Hallelu- 3 jah!' And the smoke from her ruins rises for ever and ever. Then the 4 twenty-four Councillors and the Four Creatures prostrated themselves and worshiped God who was seated upon the throne, crying — 'Amen, Hallelujah!'; and from the throne there came a voice 5 which said — 'Praise our God all you who serve him, You who reverence him, both high and low.' Then I heard 'what seemed to be 6 the shout of a vast throng, like the sound of many waters,' and like the sound of loud peals of thunder, crying — 'Hallelujah! For the Lord is King, our God, the Almighty. Let us rejoice and exalt; and 7 we will pay him honour, for the hour for the Marriage of the Lamb has come, and his Bride has made herself ready. And to her it has 8 been granted to robe herself in fine linen, white and pure, for that linen is the good deeds of the People of Christ.' Then a voice said to 9 me 'Write — "Blessed are those who have been summoned to the marriage feast of the Lamb."' And the voice said — 'These words of God are true.' I prostrated myself at the feet of him who spoke to 10 worship him, but he said to me - - 'Forbear; I am your fellow-servant, and the fellow-servant of your Brothers who bear their testimony to Jesus. Worship God. For to bear testimony to Jesus needs the inspiration of the Prophets.' Then I saw that Heaven lay open. There 11 appears a white horse; its rider is called 'Faithful' and 'True'; righteously does he judge and make war. His eyes are flaming fires; on his 12 head there are many diadems, and he bears a name, written, which

## Revelation 20

13 no one knows but himself; he has been clothed in a garment sprinkled with blood; and the name by which he is called is 'The Word of  
14 God.' The armies of Heaven followed him, mounted on white horses  
15 and clothed in fine linen, white and pure. From his mouth comes a sharp sword, with which 'to smite the nations; and he will rule them with an iron rod.' He 'treads the grapes in the press' of the maddening wine of the Wrath of Almighty God; and on his robe and on his thigh he has this name written — 'KING OF KINGS AND LORD  
16 OF LORDS.' Then I saw an angel standing on the sun. He cried in a loud voice to all the birds that fly in mid-heaven — 'Gather and come to the great feast of God, to eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of commanders, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses and their riders, and the flesh of all freemen and slaves, and of high  
17 and low.' Then I saw the Beast and the kings of the earth and their armies, gathered together to fight with him who sat on the horse  
18 and with his army. The Beast was captured, and with him was taken the false Prophet, who performed the marvels before the eyes of the Beast, with which he deceived those who had received the brand of the Beast and those who worshiped his image. Alive, they were  
19 thrown, both of them, into the fiery lake 'of burning sulphur.' The rest were killed by the sword which came out of the mouth of him  
20 who rode upon the horse; and all the birds fed upon their flesh.

Then I saw an angel coming down from Heaven, with the key of the  
2 bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He seized the Dragon, the primeval Serpent (who is the 'Devil' or 'Satan'), and bound him  
3 in chains for a thousand years. He flung him into the bottomless pit and locked it, and set his seal upon it; that he should not deceive the nations any more, until the thousand years were ended. After  
4 that he must be let loose for a while. Then I saw thrones, and to those who took their seats upon them authority was given to act as judges. And I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded because of the testimony to Jesus and because of the Message of God, for they had refused to worship the Beast or its image, and had not received the brand on their foreheads and on their hands. They were restored to life, and they reigned with the Christ for a

thousand years. (The rest of the dead were not restored to life till the  
thousand years were ended.) This is the First Resurrection. Blessed  
and holy will he be who shares in that First Resurrection. The sec-  
ond Death has no power over them; but they will be priests of God,  
and the Christ, and they will reign with him for the thousand years.  
When the thousand years are ended, Satan will be let loose from  
his prison, and he will come out to deceive the nations that live in  
‘the four corners of the earth — Gog and Magog.’ He will come to  
gather them together for battle; and their number will be as great  
as the sand on the sea-shore. They went up over the breadth of the  
whole earth, and surrounded the camp of Christ’s People and the  
beloved city. Then fire fell from the heavens and consumed them;  
and the Devil, their deceiver, was hurled into the lake of fire and  
sulphur, where the Beast and the false Prophet already were, and  
they will be tortured day and night for ever and ever. Then I saw a  
great white throne, and him who was seated on it. ‘The earth and  
the heavens fled from his presence; no place was left for them.’ And  
I saw the dead, high and low, standing before the throne; and books  
were opened. Then another book was opened, the Book of Life; and  
the dead were judged, according to their actions, by what was writ-  
ten in the books. The sea gave up its dead, and Death and the Lord  
of the Place of Death gave up their dead; and they were judged, one  
by one, each according to his actions. Then Death and the Lord of  
the Place of Death were hurled into the lake of fire. This is the Sec-  
ond Death — the lake of fire; and all whose names ‘were not found  
written in the Book of Life’ were hurled into the lake of fire.  
Then I saw new heavens and a new earth. The former heavens and  
the former earth had passed away; and the sea has ceased to be.  
And I saw the Holy City, Jerusalem, descending new out of Heaven  
from God, like a bride adorned in readiness for her husband. And I  
heard a loud voice from the throne, which said — ‘See! the Taberna-  
cle of God is set up among men. God will dwell among them, and  
they will be his Peoples, and God himself will be among them, and  
he will wipe away all tears from their eyes. There will be no more  
death, nor will there be any more grief or crying or pain. The old

## Revelation 21

5 order has passed away.' And he who was seated on the throne said  
— 'See, I make all things new!' And he said — 'Write this, for these  
6 words may be trusted and are true.' And he said to me — 'They  
are fulfilled. I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the  
End. To him who thirsts I will give of the spring of the Water of Life,  
7 freely. He who conquers shall enter into possession of these things,  
8 and I will be his God, and he shall be my Son. But as for cowards,  
unbelievers, the degraded, murderers, the impure, sorcerers, idol-  
aters, and all liars — their place will be in the burning lake of fire  
9 and sulphur. That is the Second Death.' Then one of the seven angels  
who had the seven bowls, and were laden with the seven last  
Curses, came and spoke to me. 'Come here,' he said, 'and I will show  
10 you the Bride, the Wife of the Lamb.' He carried me away in a trance  
to a great high mountain, and showed me Jerusalem, the Holy City,  
descending out of Heaven from God, filled with the glory of God.  
11 Its brilliance was like that of some very precious stone, like a jasper,  
12 transparent as crystal. It had a great high wall, in which were twelve  
gates; and at these gates there were twelve angels, and there were  
names inscribed on the gates, the names of the twelve tribes of the Is-  
13 raelites. 'There were three gates on the east, three gates on the north,  
14 three gates on the south, and three gates on the west.' The wall of  
the City had twelve foundation stones, on which were the twelve  
15 names of the twelve Apostles of the Lamb. And the angel who was  
speaking to me had as a measure a gold rod, with which to measure  
16 the City and its gates and its wall. The City is square; the length and  
the breadth are the same. The angel measured with his rod; it was  
twelve hundred miles; its length, and breadth, and height are equal.  
17 Then he measured the wall; it was two hundred and eighty-eight  
18 feet, as men measure, that is as the angel measured. The material  
of the wall of the City was jasper, and the City was built of pure  
19 gold, which shone like clear glass. The foundations of the wall of  
the City were ornamented with every kind of precious stone. The  
first foundation stone was a jasper; the second a sapphire; the third  
20 a chalcedony; the fourth an emerald; the fifth a sardonyx; the sixth  
a carnelian; the seventh a chrysolite; the eighth a beryl; the ninth

a topaz; the tenth a chrysoprase; the eleventh a hyacinth; and the twelfth an amethyst. The twelve gates were made of twelve pearls, 21  
 each gate of one pearl. The street of the City was of pure gold, transparent as glass. And I saw no Temple there, for the Lord, our God, 22  
 the Almighty, and the Lamb are its Temple. The City has no need of 23  
 'the sun or the moon to shine upon it, for the Glory of God illuminated it,' and its Lamp was the Lamb. 'The nations walk by the light 24  
 of it; and the kings of the earth bring their glory into it. Its gates will 25  
 never be shut by day,' and there will be no night there. And men will 26  
 bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. 'Never shall any 27  
 unhallowed thing enter it,' nor he whose life is shameful and false, but only 'those whose names have been written in the Lamb's Book of Life.' 22

And the angel showed me 'a river of the Water of Life,' as clear as crystal, issuing from the throne of God and of the Lamb, in the middle of the street of the City. On each side of the river was a Tree of Life which bore twelve kinds of fruit, yielding its fruit each month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. 'Every 3  
 thing that is accursed will cease to be.' The throne of God and of the Lamb will be within it, and his servants will worship him; they 4  
 will see his face, and his name will be on their foreheads. Night will 5  
 cease to be. They have no need of the light of a lamp, nor have they the light of the sun; for the 'Lord God will be their light, and they will reign for ever and ever.' Then the angel said to me — 'These 6  
 words may be trusted and are true. The Lord, the God that inspires the Prophets, sent his angel to show his servants what must quickly take place; and he said "I will come quickly." Blessed will he be who 7  
 lays to heart the words of the prophecy contained in this book.' It 8  
 was I, John, who heard and saw these things; and, when I heard and saw them, I prostrated myself in worship at the feet of the angel that showed them to me. But he said to me — 'Forbear; I am 9  
 your fellow-servant, and the fellow-servant of your Brothers, the Prophets, and of all who lay to heart the words in this book. Worship God.' Then the angel said to me — 'Do not keep secret the words of 10  
 the prophecy contained in this book; for The Time is near. Let the 11

wrong-doer continue to do wrong; the filthy-minded man continue to be filthy; the righteous man continue to act righteously; and the  
12 holy-minded man continue to be holy.' ('I will come quickly. I bring my rewards with me, to give to each man what his actions deserve.  
13 I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End.') Blessed will they be who wash their robes, that  
14 they may have the right to approach the Tree of Life, and may enter the City by the gates. Outside will be the filthy, the sorcerers,  
15 the impure, the murderers, the idolaters, and all who love the false and live it.' 'I, Jesus, sent my angel to bear testimony to you about  
16 these things before the Churches. I am the Scion and the Offspring of David, the bright Star of the Morning.' 'Come,' say the Spirit and  
17 the Bride; and let him who hears say 'Come.' Let him who thirsts come; let him who will take the Water of Life freely. I declare to all  
18 who hear the words of the prophecy contained in this book — 'If anyone adds to it, God will add to his troubles the Curses described  
19 in this book; and if any one takes away any of the words in the book containing this prophecy, God will take away his share in the Tree of  
20 Life, and in the Holy City — as described in this book.' He whose testimony this is says — 'Assuredly I will come quickly.' 'Amen, come, Lord Jesus.' May the blessing of the Lord Jesus Christ, be with his  
21 People.